

Martial God Asura - Chapter 901 – 1000

Flattening the Misty Peak

MGA: Chapter 901 - Flattening the Misty Peak

“I didn’t expect they would also come. This means I’m not their sole target... Their goal is likely the Misty Peak.” Chu Feng furrowed his brows. Suddenly, he felt that this situation was not as simple as it appeared.

That young man really was too terrifying. Not only was his strength powerful, his clothing made others uneasy—the talismans all over his body, and the long string of beads over his neck. His appearance looked the exactly like the two young men who had saved Murong Xun. However, his strength was far above those two.

If those two had come from the Holy Land of Martialism, this person definitely came from there as well.

It was one thing if this was only a battle between those from the Eastern Sea Region. However, if the people from the Holy Land of Martialism interfered, then their present circumstances were far from reassuring.

“Chu Feng! As I thought, you’re here!”

Just at that moment, Murong Xun discovered Chu Feng and the others. He was in a frenzy, like a cat that ate rat feces. His fierce appearance made it seem as if he wanted to eat Chu Feng’s flesh and drink his blood.

“So this infamous brat is Chu Feng! It truly is best to see for myself than to listen to rumours. In these days, you’ve truly made quite the commotion in the Eastern Sea Region!

“I had thought you were some impressive young man, but in the end, you were merely a coward who hides within the Misty Peak,” sneered the chief of the Inferno Divine Bird clan.

“Chu Feng, I’m sure you know why we have come here today. If you’re a man, then come out right now! I can ask Archipelago Master Murong to leave you an undefiled corpse.”

At the same time, the chief from the Boulder Mutation Beast clan also spoke. His voice was like thunder as it resounded through the air.

“Chief Panshi[1], you really view this Chu Feng too highly. If you ask me, this brat’s nerves were all broken upon the sight of so many people! He’s already performing a miracle by standing there with some sort of stability! You want him to walk to his own death? Hehe, that’s simply impossible,” said the chief of the Blood-Scale Monstrous Fish clan with an odd and mocking smile.

“Chu Feng, I am the master of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, Murong Niekong! As long as you hand over my son’s Silver Dragon Spear, then kneel and beg for forgiveness, for all the evil actions you’ve done to my Immortal Execution Archipelago, I can cast the blame solely on yourself. I won’t harm your friends, nor will I blame the Misty Peak for taking you in.”

Finally, the master of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, Murong Niekong, spoke. However, he had a very nasty attitude. His words meant there was no doubt Chu Feng was dead today. He even wanted Chu Feng to kneel and beg for forgiveness before he would release his friends. Otherwise, he would kill them all.

“Murong Niekong, that’s quite the tone you have here! Where do you think this is? This is not your Immortal Execution Archipelago. This is the Misty Peak! After coming to this place, you think you can do whatever you want to?” However, no one expected Chun Wu to shout at a famous and powerful person such as Murong Niekong with such a harsh tone.

At that instant, everyone from the Misty Peak couldn’t help inhaling deeply. They were not lightly frightened, Xia Yu and Dong Xue especially. They quickly sent her mental messages, telling her not to speak out of turn.

“Which brat did this one come from? You dare to speak to me like this? Do you not know who I am?” Indeed, a hint of displeasure flashed into Murong Niekong’s eyes after being retorted.

“I am the disciple of Lady Piaomiao, Chun Wu. No matter who you are, I will not show you any politeness if you come looking for trouble at the Misty Peak!” Chun Wu was very unyielding. Even though she knew they had powerful strength, she was no inferior in terms of outward bearing.

Actually, when she spoke, Chun Wu was very afraid. Her current fearless appearance was something she forced out entirely, because it would most definitely be nonsense to say she wasn't afraid of such a formation of people.

However, to still dare to retort while fearing them was not something an ordinary person could do.

From that, one could tell even though they were all Lady Piaomiao's disciples, Chun Wu was indeed stronger than Xia Yu, Qiu Zhu, and Dong Xue. At least, in terms of courage, she was superior.

"So you're a disciple of Lady Piaomiao. No wonder the arrogance. However, you are still young, and thus lack experience. For Lady Piaomiao's sake, I won't fault you.

"However, that Chu Feng is a person whose hands has murdered countless lives and whose back is burdened with countless sins. It will only taint your unblemished land to allow a person like him to stay in the Misty Peak. Quickly send him out. I can then ignore anything that has happened."

After knowing Chun Wu's identity, the master of the Immortal Execution Archipelago actually put away his furious complexion, and instead smiled lightly.

He planned to put Misty Peak at a higher position, while he at a lower one. He was giving her face.

But there was another meaning behind those words, and it was very clear as well: he had already given Lady Piaomiao face now. If she were to return it, then she should tell Chu Feng to go out.

If not, that meant she rejected his offer. And if that were the case, then no kindness would be shown today.

So, at that instant, everyone within the Misty peak understood what Murong Niekong intended. They all involuntarily cast their gazes towards Chu Feng.

Other than those extremely close to Chu Feng, Dong Xue, Xia Yu, and some guardians of the Misty Peak all brought forth some expectation in their eyes—they wanted to push Chu Feng out.

They did not want to die because of an outsider like Chu Feng.

“What if we don’t?” However, at that moment, Chun Wu resolutely spoke. Moreover, there was something else behind her words—they would not send Chu Feng out.

“Hahaha, if you don’t, then I won’t mind flattening your Misty Peak,” Murong Niekong said with a smile.

“What a joke! What do you take the Misty Peak as? You think a ragtag bunch like you can flatten the Misty Peak?” Chun Wu mocked.

“Ragtag bunch? Hoho. I will let an ignorant girl like you know whether or not we’re a ragtag bunch.”

At that instant, Murong Niekong made an odd smile. Then, he slowly raised his arms, then abruptly dropped them quickly. He yelled, “Flatten the Misty Peak!”

After he spoke, it rose the spirits of the army of millions, invoking incomparable excitement. They all rose their arms and shouted:

“FLATTEN THE MISTY PEAK!

“FLATTEN THE MISTY PEAK!

“FLATTEN THE MISTY PEAK!”

The unison cry of tens of millions of cultivation experts was even more deafening than thunder. It shook the world itself, making it as if it were about to collapse.

1. Panshi = boulder

Martial God Asura - Chapter 902 - King of All Kings

MGA: Chapter 902 - King of All Kings

The shout from several tens of millions was far more deafening than thunder. Even the air could not withstand the penetrating strength of such a noise as it endlessly trembled.

The army was in high spirits, as if their flames of desire for battle were completely ignited. They looked as if they were utterly prepared to initiate a battle—one that could stomp over anything.

When facing their unstoppable might, the people within the Misty Peak tightly frowned. They felt very uneasy. There were even many who couldn't help backing away, their eyes filled with fear.

Within their shouts, they could feel their unhesitating resolution to fight. This time, they had truly come prepared. So, those from the Misty Peak were terrified.

They even started to suspect whether their Misty Peak's defensive formation would truly hold up if this army of tens of millions were to start advancing.

What if all of them attacked at the same time? With Lady Piaomiao's power, could she truly withstand that?

If the formation couldn't hold up, and if Lady Piaomiao were defeated, then wouldn't all of them die as well?

"Flatten the Misty Peak? You?!"

However, just at that moment, a voice filled with weight rang out. After that voice resounded, the trembling air started to violently rock. There were even cracks in the fabrics of space, as if it were about to collapse.

At the same time, the sea beneath surged. An enormous wave arose, and it could simply touch the sky.

A shock wave that could even flip the universe upside down broke out from that shout, bursting outwards from the Misty Peak.

In an instant, the army standing upright in the air could not stop such violent shaking. All of them rolled and fell, and there were even many who lost the ability to fly. They were akin to rain as they rained down from the sky, falling into the huge surging waves.

At that very moment, of the army of tens of millions, only Martial Kings could stand stably. Even the powerful Murong Xun tumbled in the air. They were all in quite a bruised state, and they did not look like an orderly army at all.

Everyone from the Misty Peak rejoiced because they all knew Lady Piaomiao had come.

As expected, when they turned their heads around, two people, from the depths of the Misty Peak, were walking slowly towards the entrance.

Of course, those two were Qiushui Fuyan and Lady Piaomiao.

whoosh After Lady Piaomiao appeared, Murong Niekong waved his big sleeve and released a burst of powerful aura.

That aura of a Martial King was very strong, and it had the power to calm everything. In the areas it passed, all the shaking subsided, and in the end, they were all suppressed.

But even so, no one dared to underestimate Lady Piaomiao. Instead, all of their faces were grave. With just a furious shout, she brought disorder throughout their entire army. Thus, they knew that Lady Piaomiao's strength was no mere rumour. She was indeed the strongest person in the Eastern Sea Region.

"Lady Piaomiao, that was quite magnificent. This junior's borders have been widened today." After calming the disturbance, Murong Niekong slightly smiled, then put away his prior arrogance and quite humbly greeted Lady Piaomiao.

"Murong Niekong, you can discard this facade. Were you the one who said you were going to flatten my Misty Peak?" Lady Piaomiao coldly asked, her gaze fierce.

"I was indeed the one who said that, but there was a reason.

"That Chu Feng has killed countless members of my Immortal Execution Archipelago. He's also taken away my son's Royal Armament, taken away my son's fiancée, and even killed the granddaughter of my archipelago's First Immortal, Ya Fei.

"The animosity my Immortal Execution Archipelago has with this child is irreconcilable. Lady, you truly shouldn't protect him," Murong Niekong said.

“Hoh... I protect whoever I want to. No one can tell me otherwise. However, all of you, listen up. I will remember those who have come to invade my Misty Peak.

“Inferno Divine Bird clan, Boulder Mutation Beast clan, Blood-Scale Monstrous Fish clan. You three clans are truly quite impressive! It’s one thing to ally with the Immortal Execution Archipelago to oppress others, but now you dare to oppress me! I will clean this debt with all of you in the future.”

Lady Piaomiao’s complexion was calm, but it was as if there were two sharp blades of icy air in her eyes. With a mere glance it made those who saw them feel bone-piercing iciness.

“This...”

Lady Piaomiao was truly powerful. After she spoke, the people from the Three Great Monstrous Clans panicked. Even their chiefs tightly furrowed their brows and some uneasiness started glittering in their eyes. From such a reaction, even though they were a peak force that ruled over a part of this world, they still feared a superpower character such as Lady Piaomiao.

However, despite the fear, they did not retreat. As such, it could be seen that they did not come here for any righteous deed. They had truly made their decision.

“Haha, as expected of the one I respect. This is truly quite a terrifying might.

“However, Lady Piaomiao, although you are strong, do not underestimate us young ones. I spoke politely to you in respect that you’re a senior. But do not take advantage of your seniority and reject the face I offer. Don’t think we don’t have the ability to flatten your Misty Peak.

“I’ll say a few slightly unpleasant-sounding words: if we did not have this ability, we would not have come here today!” At that instant, Murong Niekong put away his smiles and revealed the demeanor of a king.

“Don’t think of just having a battle of words. If you think you have this ability, then go ahead. Try.” Lady Piaomiao’s gaze suddenly flickered and her indifferent expression instantly turned icy cold.

boom

At the same time, her clothes started rapidly fluttering. An extremely boundless aura burst from her body.

When that aura emerged, space itself outside the Misty Peak collapsed. The areas touched upon by such aura turned pitch-black.

“This aura... She’s a rank six Martial King!”

After feeling that incomparably fierce aura, everyone’s expression changed greatly.

They could clearly feel Lady Piaomiao’s current realm of cultivation. The famous and powerful person who had lived for nearly a thousand years was a rank six Martial King. Her cultivation was even above the Immortal Execution Archipelago’s master.

At that instant, a commotion arose within the army of the Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Three Great Monstrous Clans. Fear visible by the naked eye appeared on many people’s faces.

In contrast to them though, the people from the Misty Peak had elated expressions. Even though they knew Lady Piaomiao was strong, they didn’t expect her to be *this* strong.

If a rank five Martial King was already the peak of the Eastern Sea Region’s experts, then a rank six Martial King was above all experts—a king of all kings.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 903 - Lady Piaomiao's Junior

MGA: Chapter 903 - Lady Piaomiao's Junior

“I truly didn’t expect Lady Piaomiao’s strength to have reached such a level! This is truly worthy of celebration!”

Seeing the horrifying aura surging in the air, the people within the Misty Peak all felt ecstatic, especially so for Dong Xue, Xia Yu, and the others whose faces had been brimming with fear. At that moment, they were the ones who smiled the most happily, because they themselves did not expect their master to be this powerful.

A rank six Martial King—that was definitely the peak power in the Eastern Sea Region. Numbers could not bring them an advantage when facing a rank six Martial King.

So, they felt that not only was the Misty Peak guarded, the army of tens of millions who were invading had a disaster heading their way.

A rank six Martial King definitely had the strength to massacre them.

boom However, just as they felt the outcome to be determined, an explosion erupted in the sky. Following that explosion, another boundless aura emerged, surging over.

That aura was very strong—it was actually able to fight Lady Piaomiao's without any signs of inferiority. In the end, it repelled Lady Piaomiao's aura.

The aura of a rank six Martial King being repelled by another person. There was only one explanation for that—the person the aura belonged to was also a rank six Martial King.

“This... How is this possible? There's another rank six Martial King?” Xia Yu and Dong Xue who were full of smiles before now turned ashen.

They were not the only ones who had such a reaction. Almost everyone felt greatly surprised. If Lady Piaomiao's cultivation reaching rank six Martial King was something they could accept, then they had absolutely no clue who else could reach that realm within the Eastern Sea Region.

“As I thought, you've hidden an expert. Since you're here, don't hide yourself anymore. Come out. Let me know who is concealed within this army.”

Although Lady Piaomiao also felt surprised, there weren't many changes in her expression. She remained collected, and had spoken with a powerful voice.

“I didn't expect you to still be this oppressing, even though we haven't seen each for so many years!” Just at that moment, a raspy, aged, and “smiling” voice rang out in the sky. Looking over to its origin, they saw the air in front of Murong Xun ripple, and an old man then appeared out of nowhere.

That old man wore a golden robe, and there was even radiance that shone from it. He was quite gorgeously dressed up, and it was even nobler than the clothes of the Immortal Execution Archipelago's master, Murong Niekong.

However, that old man was really too old. His head was bare—there were merely a few strands of white hair. They swayed with the wind, and it was quite an ugly appearance, but he allowed the white hair to remain on his head, unwilling to remove them.

Then, when one's gaze lowered onto his face, they would see he was truly all skin and bones. No, to be more precise, his skin had *left* the bones. There were wrinkles all over his face, his skin lacking the slightest bit of elasticity. His skin was loose, and simply looked as if it would fall off his face at any second.

At that moment, the old man was smiling—grinning, actually. Those with sharp eyes could see there wasn't even a single tooth in his mouth. From that, they could really tell he was a person about to die.

At that moment, as he stood in the air, the first feeling he gave others was represented by five words: on the verge of collapse.

He was truly on the verge of collapse, because his body, from the surface, looked too weak. It was even a miracle he was able to stand in the air, and some even felt his entire being would crumble by a huge gale.

However, when that old man appeared at this time, no one dared to be careless because clearly, he was the rank six Martial King who drove off Lady Piaomiao's aura.

After that old man appeared, no matter the Three Great Monstrous Clans, or the people from the Misty Peak, they were all taken aback because in their eyes, there was a word that appeared: foreign.

They had no clue who that old man was. Not a single person recognized him. Yet, how could a person with such strength be not known?

"We greet Ancestor!" Just as guesses were thrown around as to who that old man was, the Immortal Execution Archipelago's army, with Murong Niekong's lead, orderly half-knelt on the ground, and greeted the old man.

“Ancestor? When did an ancestor appear in the Immortal Execution Archipelago? Who is this person?”

At that instant, other than the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago, nearly everyone else had faces full of shock—even the ones from the Three Great Monstrous Clans. They couldn’t recall when there had ever been an ancestor-level person in the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

Before today, they had never heard about a person like him in the Immortal Execution Archipelago. They had never seen this ancestor!

“Murong Mingtian, it’s you?” Lady Piaomiao, however, slightly furrowed her brows, in contrast to the crowd’s bewilderedness. Her eyes lit up; she clearly knew who he was.

“Senior, I didn’t think you would still recognize me even though I look like this now. My heart truly feels warm.

“But sadly, time flows too quickly. In a blink, several hundred years have passed. Senior, your elegance has gone, and as for me, I am also a person about to die. How sorrowful. How pitiful,” Murong Mingtian said with a faint smile.

“What? *Senior*? She’s calling Lady Piaomiao senior? What exactly is happening?”

“Where did this Murong Mingtian come from? Why have I never heard of him?”

“Yeah! I know all the generations of experts from the Immortal Execution Archipelago, but I have never heard of this person called Murong Mingtian, nor have I never seen him. How did he become the ancestor of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, and how does he have such terrifying strength?

“Not only that, I have also never heard she has a junior! Several hundred years ago, she had inherited the position of the Misty Peak’s guardian. If she truly has a junior, doesn’t it mean he too has lived for nearly a thousand years?” After hearing how Murong Mingtian called Lady Piaomiao, everyone felt even more puzzled.

“Hoh, I see. In the end, it was you who made this Immortal Execution Archipelago.

“No wonder it rose so quickly in power after the Burning Heaven Church relocated. It must have been you who’s always been controlling in the dark, right?”

“But that does make sense. If it were you who covertly removed those inimical forces, it would have proved no difficulty. However, I didn’t expect you to hide yourself so deeply.” Lady Piaomiao smiled. She seemed to have understood everything.

However, Chu Feng discovered despite the serenity on the surface, Lady Piaomiao’s eyes were glittering with strong killing intent. Although she had concealed it quite well, Chu Feng still caught sight of it. One could thus tell she had a great hatred for that person.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 904 - Madness

MGA: Chapter 904 - Madness

“Senior, you are truly smart. However, it seems to be a bit too late discovering that now.” Murong Mingtian’s face was one of smugness.

“Hoh, actually, when the Immortal Execution Archipelago first appeared, I had my doubts. However, I was certain you had already died, so I didn’t make an investigation. I didn’t expect that you were alive, and have even lived this long,” Lady Piaomiao said.

“Haha, the reason I’m able to live this long is all because of my own ability. Really, so what if you had doubts? From what I know of you, without any evidence, you wouldn’t have attacked a force that was just created.

“My plans were also meticulously thought through as well. No one would have been able to discover any relation between me and the Immortal Execution Archipelago. Besides, so what if you discovered there was? At most, you would have just destroyed the Immortal Execution Archipelago and killed my heirs.

“However, as long as you didn’t find me, I could just change my appearance and rise again like the sun from the eastern mountains. If I want to create a power, who can stop me?” Murong Mingtian appeared extremely proud, and his tone was very overbearing.

“Haha, heir? Master had already cut off that place with a seal. Where would the heir come from?” After hearing the word “heir”, Lady Piaomiao suddenly started laughing—it was a very mocking laugh.

As she laughed, she even looked at Murong Niekong and sneered, “Murong Niekong, oh Murong Niekong, you wouldn’t truly think this Murong Mingtian is your Murong family’s ancestor, right?”

“I don’t mind telling you that he’s just a useless person who can’t even copulate! How could he possibly bring you up?”

“Shut up! Do not insult my ancestor!” After hearing Lady Piaomiao’s words, Murong Niekong, Murong Xun, and the other people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago were furious.

“She’s correct. It has indeed been cut off by a seal by my master back in the day, so I prevents me from ever recreating it. Right now, I do indeed lack the ability to reproduce. That’s not something I won’t admit. It happened, so it happened. I don’t feel that it’s any sort of shame.”

However, unexpectedly, Murong Mingtian did not feel any indignity at Lady Piaomiao’s words. Instead, he quite frankly admitted them.

“Ancestor, you...” At that moment, Murong Niekong and the others all felt shock. Clearly, they could not accept this fact.

“Even though you are not my own offspring, you are the successors I’ve raised. In my heart, you are my sons. Everyone in the Immortal Execution Archipelago is my successor. You are all my sons and daughters!” Murong Mingtian said sanguinely.

“Ancestor! Ancestor! Ancestor! Ancestor! Ancestor!!” At that instant, everyone from the Immortal Execution Archipelago cheered loudly together. Some even shed tears in passion.

“Senior, do you feel no shame by humiliating me with this? Have you forgotten this happened all because of you?” Suddenly, Murong Mingtian looked at Lady Piaomiao furiously.

Murong Mingtian’s words spread his rage towards the members of the Immortal Execution Archipelago. They loudly yelled:

“Kill Lady Piaomiao, flatten the Misty Peak, avenge our ancestor!”

“Kill Lady Piaomiao, flatten the Misty Peak, avenge our ancestor!”

The word “avenge” resounded endlessly. The true goal of the Immortal Execution Archipelago was now shown.

Even though Lady Piaomiao and Murong Mingtian hadn’t talked about much, everyone drew some information from their conversation.

It seemed that this person called Murong Mingtian was truly Lady Piaomiao’s junior. He was the same as her—a disciple of the previous guardian of the Misty Peak. And, for some reason, his “root of life” was severed by the previous guardian, and he thus lost the ability to reproduce.

That person retained a heart of hatred, and after leaving the Misty Peak, he established the Immortal Execution Archipelago. Although everyone knew the creator of the Immortal Execution Archipelago was Murong Longcheng, it was clear this Murong Mingtian was its true creator.

The previous masters of the Immortal Execution Archipelago were no more than puppets. They had always listened to this person’s orders, and it was likely Murong Niekong, whose name spread throughout the Eastern Sea Region, was also a puppet.

Murong Mingtian had controlled the Immortal Execution Archipelago so many years in the dark, and expanded it from a nameless little force into the overlord of the Eastern Sea Region. Moreover, for several hundred years, no one discovered his existence. From that, one could see how impressive he was.

That was especially evident from his words before: he didn’t deny the fact he lost his thing, and instead admitted it truthfully.

On the surface, that appeared like a very idiotic action, but he had successfully inflamed the anger of the Immortal Execution Archipelago as they faced the Misty Peak. That was truly something quite impressive.

Even though there were a few things the crowd could not confirm, and there were still some inside stories unknown, they still understood a truth.

The Immortal Execution Archipelago had gathered so many experts at this place not just for a simple action as killing Chu Feng. Their true goal was, in reality, to take revenge on the Misty Peak.

“As I thought, it’s him. He’s the person who harmed my master. I didn’t think this old thing was still alive.” At that instant, Chun Wu came to a realization. She gritted her teeth with a face of fury.

“Senior Chun Wu, who is that person? Can you tell me?” Chu Feng asked with mental messaging after pulling her to the side.

“Junior Chu Feng, this person is definitely the most inhuman bastard in the world. Back in the day, he and Master entered the Misty Peak together. He has always drooled over the position of the Misty Peak’s guardian, and even thought he was the only person who could continue this position.

“However, when my ancestor’s life neared the end, she suddenly announced to the Misty Peak that only a female could inherit the position of guardian. That made Murong Mingtian furious, and he revealed his animalistic side.

“He actually put poison into my ancestor’s and other elders’ belongings. My ancestor had powerful cultivation, so after being poisoned, she only passed out temporarily. However, since the others didn’t have as great as a cultivation, they died.

“Luckily, my master was testing a cure that day, and since she hadn’t used it, not much harm was dealt to my master.

“At that time, Murong Mingtian thought he had succeeded. So, he took my ancestor’s Spirit Formation key, entered the Misty Peak’s forbidden land, and took away a Forbidden Mysterious Technique my ancestor believed was a taboo to cultivate.

“Afterwards, Murong Mingtian, who had gone mad, even prepared to release the sealed demon. Luckily, my master stopped him and only then was a crisis averted.

“However, since there was still poison in my master’s body, her cultivation was restricted and she wasn’t able to defeat Murong Mingtian. Because of that, he actually...” After saying all that, Chun Wu started to sob. Tears rolled down her cheek—she actually started to cry.

“Senior Chun Wu, what did he do?” Chu Feng asked after wiping away Chun Wu’s tears. He knew Murong Mingtian must have done something heartless to Lady Piaomiao.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 905 - Immortal Sword Formation

MGA: Chapter 905 - Immortal Sword Formation

“Actually, my master was originally very beautiful. We had seen a drawing of her young self, and she was truly pretty back then, even more than Senior Qiushui right now.

“However, that mad Murong Mingtian destroyed my master’s complexion. Not only that, he even used my ancestor’s Forbidden Medicine so my master could never restore her appearance.

“In reality, my master’s face is fake. Her true countenance has already destroyed.” Chun Wu silently wept.

At that instant, Chu Feng tightly clenched his fists. An indescribable rage spread from his heart. He seemed to know why Lady Piaomiao only gave herself an ordinary appearance even though she was so powerful.

Perhaps her mentality was changed due to the destruction of her beauty, and felt rather than having some exquisite complexion, it was better to have a more ordinary one.

“Originally, Murong Mingtian even wanted to destroy my master’s cultivation, but luckily, my ancestor awakened.

“Seeing so many disciples killed, and even my master’s beautiful complexion had been touched by such a venomous scheme, she went into a rage. She ruthlessly tormented Murong Mingtian, of it included using a powerful seal to cut that part off from Murong Mingtian, and dealt a permanent damage to his physical body.

“However, Murong Mingtian, with some sort of special method, escaped. He was heavily injured, so both my master and ancestor felt he was doomed and could not survive. So, they didn’t bother searching for his whereabouts.

“However, unexpectedly, he not only survived, he even created the Immortal Execution Archipelago and had lived for this long.

“Typically speaking, even after becoming a rank six Martial King, he shouldn’t be able to live this long. The reason he is to, however, must be because he’s relying on something he got from the Misty Peak.

“And now, this bastard even dares to bring so many people to attack the place that raised him! I have never seen such a despicable person like him.” Chun Wu’s body was trembling from anger, and from that, it could be seen how furious she was.

Chu Feng, who finally knew what had happened, felt the rage surging throughout his body as well. He involuntarily cast his gaze towards Murong Mingtian, his eyes full of strong bloodlust.

Putting aside what he did to Lady Piaomiao, since he was the true ruler of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, Chu Feng knew that the one who bound Zi Ling with the Heaven Gripping Pellet was him.

He had truly committed an enormity. He could not be forgiven.

“Shut up!

“Who let you flatten the Misty Peak? This is the place that raised me! Are you going to flatten the place that raised me?” However, who would have expected Murong Mingtian to suddenly berate the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

Of course, the Immortal Execution Archipelago quickly shut their mouths, and no one dared to say even half a word. It could be seen how much deterrence this unseen ancestor had in the hearts of the army.

“Some Immortal Execution Archipelago this is. Immortal Execution... Immortal Execution... These two words have quite the meaning! It looks like you’ve planned for this day when you made this name.[1. Full title of Lady Piaomiao is *Immortal Lady*.]

“Coming here to capture Chu Feng is merely an excuse, and the true reason you came here is to take revenge on the Misty Peak, right?” Lady Piaomiao asked.

“Senior, why must you make it sound so unpleasant? There are some conflicts between you and me, but I have none with the Misty Peak! Like I said, this is the place that raised me. I’ve come here today to express my gratitude,” Murong Mingtian said, lacking any shame on his face.

“Expressing gratitude requires so many people?” Lady Piaomiao also mocking smiled.

“If I don’t bring so many people, I’m afraid you won’t let me in, senior!” Murong Mingtian said.

“Hoh, if I let you in, I’m afraid I’ll have to leave. To me, you aren’t here to express your gratitude, but instead, your life has neared the end. You want to borrow the power of the peak to prolong your life,” Lady Piaomiao said with cold words.

“Heh, my senior is truly understanding. Since you’re so clear on that, why the extra question? If you put away the defensive formation and let us in, I’ll just ignore everything that had happened.

“If you force me to break through the formation, then at that time, you can’t blame me for a massacre,” Murong Mingtian said.

“Break through the formation? That’ll depend whether you have the strength or not.” Lady Piaomiao’s face turned cold, and she closed her eyes. Then, her hands rapidly changed position, then she shouted, “Immortal Sword Formation, activate!”

whoosh whoosh whoosh whoosh whoosh whoosh

Countless huge swords shining with golden radiance shot out from the defensive formation. Every single sword was over a dozen meters long, and all contained extremely powerful strength.

At that very instant, by rough estimations, there were several tens of millions of golden swords. As they spun, they were like an army that guarded a city. Not even water could pass through the seal of swords regardless of direction. It exuded a powerful aura, making it seem as though nothing could break through it.

“I have heard of this Immortal Sword Formation from Master, but I’d never had the chance to see it. I’ve seen something new today.” Murong Mingtian

frowned slightly at the formation of millions of swirling swords, because he had heard how powerful it was.

“Ancestor, this Immortal Sword Formation is very strong. If we forcibly make an attack, I’m afraid we won’t succeed,” Murong Niekong couldn’t help saying. At that very moment, everyone felt the strength of that Immortal Sword Formation.

He felt that the power of the Immortal Sword Formation seemed to have far surpassed a typical rank six Martial King. If they forced an attack, it would truly be difficult.

“I haven’t been a rank six Martial King for just a few days. The reason I hadn’t come to this Misty Peak wasn’t because I feared Lady Piaomiao, but because I fear this Immortal Sword Formation.

“This formation’s strength is dependent on the guardian’s strength. Although Lady Piaomiao is as strong as me, since she’s controlling this Immortal Sword Formation, I am truly no match for her,” Murong Mingtian said.

“Ancestor, what should we do? We’ve put painstaking effort into allying with the Three Great Monstrous Clans and came here, taking the risk that the Crippling Night Demon Sect may attack our headquarters. We can’t just return with nothing, right?” Murong Niekong said worriedly.

Their dispatch of army this time could truly be said to be all they had. Only a few experts were left behind to guard the headquarters. If the Crippling Night Demon Sect took this chance to invade, their base would likely not hold.

“Ever since that Crippling Night Demon Sect’s sect head died, they warrant no fear. Right now, we’ve allied with the Three Great Monstrous Clans. Is it not an easy task to kill them all? The Eastern Sea Region no longer allows for the Crippling Night Demon Sect to exist!

“As for the headquarters, if it cannot be kept, then it can be abandoned. This Misty Peak is something from the Ancient Era. It is the holiest place in the Eastern Sea Region. As long as we take it down, this will be the Immortal Execution Archipelago’s headquarters,” Murong Mingtian said.

“However, this Immortal Sword Formation is so powerful! How do we break through it?” Murong Niekong felt confused.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 906 - Formation of Multitudinous Talismanic Soldiers

MGA: Chapter 906 - Formation of Multitudinous Talismanic Soldiers

“Indeed, I cannot break through this Immortal Sword Formation. However, this friend from the Holy Land of Martialism does have a plan.

“Am I right, my friend Jiang Qisha?” Murong Mingtian smiled as he turned around, casting his gaze towards the handsome young man whose body was covered with talismans.

“Murong Mingtian, remember what you guaranteed me. If you dare to go back on your word, I will let you know what true destruction is.” Jiang Qisha indifferently looked at Murong Mingtian. There was not the slightest bit of respect in his eyes, and instead, there was a hint of disdain.

After speaking, disregarding the crowd’s expressions, he went straight past Murong Mingtian, towards the very front of the army.

At that instant, Murong Niekong’s and the others’ faces were not all that well. There was actually someone who dared to speak to his ancestor like that, and, as the younger generation, it was truly unbearable to see such disrespect.

However, with Murong Mingtian’s indication, no one dared to say anything. After all, they knew very well the origin of this young man called Jiang Qisha. Putting aside his strength, his status alone brought forth fear from the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

Chu Feng furrowed his brows upon seeing Jiang Qisha’s preparations to break through the formation. His greatest fear was the interference from those of the Holy Land of Martialism. Now, it seemed that his fear came true.

“Fuyan, this is the person you said came from the Holy Land of Martialism, right?” Lady Piaomiao asked Qiushui Fuyan, who was behind her. Clearly, she too had noticed that this Jiang Qisha was not simple at all.

“His clothes are indeed the same as the person I saw back then, but he is even stronger than those two. I truly don’t know how many people have come from the Holy Land of Martialism.” Qiushui Fuyan also frowned. Her greatest

fear was also an alliance between the people from Holy Land of Martialism and the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

“I’m not afraid of Murong Mingtian, nor am I afraid of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, but I have to be on guard against this person.

“The Misty Peak originates from the Ancient Era. As the guardian of this place, although I do not have a total grasp on everything, I do know there are treasures that others do not know hidden here.

“If the person from the Holy Land of Martialism interferes, I’m afraid I won’t be able to hold this place.” Lady Piaomiao’s face was serious. Her fierce gaze was locked tightly onto that Jiang Qisha.

At that moment, he was standing at the forefront of the army. He held a one-meter-long old book. It was very thick, and no one knew what was recorded within. Jiang Qisha was reading through it with no hurry, ignoring the gazes of the crowd. He truly put no one in his eyes.

“Lady Piaomiao, that...” Qiushui Fuyan also started getting nervous. In the moment of anxiousness, she grabbed Lady Piaomiao’s hand.

“Don’t worry. I’m just worried about the people from the Holy Land of Martialism. After all, that’s an unfathomable land. There are many experts there, and if some have truly come here, then we can’t really deal with them.

“However, if it’s just this little one who wants to break through my Misty Peak’s Immortal Sword Formation, then he’s truly overestimating himself.

“Moreover, even if this formation is truly broken through, I won’t stubbornly defend to the end. After all, I still have all you with me. If I can’t hold this place, then I will do everything I can to slaughter a path out of this place.” Lady Piaomiao’s words were spoken very calmly. One could tell she was already prepared.

However, they could also tell she was not absolutely confident she could stop Murong Mingtian and the others.

whoosh whoosh whoosh

Just at that moment, Jiang Qisha closed his eyes, and his flipping speed through the book suddenly sped up. The pages on the book were run through

as if there were a gale, and at the same time, a very peculiar aura spread from that ancient book.

hmm The book shone with brilliance, as if it were day. It was so blinding the people nearby could not even open their eyes.

“Release!” Quickly after, Jiang Qisha shouted, and after a boom, the book in his hand transformed into an enormous door over a thousand meters tall.

This was truly an enormous door. It touched the clouds, and dipped into the sea. As it stood upright in the air, it was like a ladder that connected the heaven and the earth.

Its shape was very odd as well—it was the same as Jiang Qisha’s clothing. Strange talismans were stuck all over it, giving others an extremely eerie feeling.

“Everyone, with the exception of Martial Kings, channel the power of your life’s root into this door,” Jiang Qisha said.

But after he spoke, the tens of millions of people all looked at each other, not a single one following his order. The power of one’s life’s root was no joke. That did not only affect cultivation, it affected Source Energy as well. If not done well, there was a possibility of death. Who would so easily channel such power into something else? Especially so for such an odd-looking formation.

“Everyone, I’ve brought you here not truly to put your life on the line against the Misty Peak.

“You’ve seen the Immortal Sword Formation as well. If we force an attack, it’s likely we won’t succeed regardless of our numbers. In the end, it would be no more than a suicidal action.

“But, while knowing this, I’ve called you here today. Naturally, it’s because I need you. At this moment, it is time that I require your power.

“So, everyone, don’t hesitate and put forth the power of your life’s root. Don’t worry, I, Murong Mingtian, swear with my honour that this formation only requires your power to activate. It will not affect your cultivation, nor take your life,” Murong Mingtian said.

“We listen to Ancestor’s order!” The Immortal Execution Archipelago first responded, then without any more hesitation, all of them channeled their power into the odd door.

whoosh whoosh whoosh Quickly after, the army from the Three Great Monstrous Clans also, with the indication of the three chiefs, channeled their own power.

Layers upon layers of formless but strong power started merging into the door filled with runes. When such a thing occurred, the countless talismans stuck on the door started shining with faint radiance. Moreover, they shone brighter and brighter, and the runes on the talismans even started to squirm, as if they had received life.

Jiang Qisha’s closed eyes burst open when the talismans on the door started to tremble intensely. He shouted, “Formation of Multitudinous Talismanic Soldiers, activate!”

aooo— After his words, a peculiar howl exploded within the door. Quickly after, a figure shot out.

That figure was over three meters tall. It was in the shape of both a human and beast. It held a spear, and its aura was very powerful—it was a peak Martial Lord.

aooooo— Quickly after, several more howls rang out. The runes on the huge door unceasingly changed, and tens of thousands of figures continually shot out. No matter shape or strength, it was the exact same as the monster before.

In the end, when the door returned to tranquility, nearly everyone who saw the scene before their eyes couldn’t help deeply inhaling. At that very instant, the number of powerful monsters standing before the door reached several tens of millions.

Several tens of millions of peak Martial Lords. That number was truly terrifying!

Martial God Asura - Chapter 907 - Forced to Ask for Assistance

MGA: Chapter 907 - Forced to Ask for Assistance

Tens of millions of monsters with strength of peak Martial Lords stood straight in the air. That number was the exact same as the number of people in the Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Three Great Monstrous Clans; however, their strength in total was more uniform and powerful.

Moreover, every single one of them seemed as if they had true life. No matter appearance or their inside, it did not seem like they were made by a formation. It truly appeared as if they were living beings that had their own intelligence.

“In this world, there’s a formation like this? It’s able to create such lifelike entities...” Even Chu Feng, who was very skilled in Spirit Formations, frowned. He didn’t expect Jiang Qisha to be able to create such a masterful formation.

Although Jiang Qisha had used the power of tens of millions, it was truly quite horrifying for him to summon tens of millions of powerful monsters with cultivation of peak Martial Lords.

“Hoh, I’ve finally seen a technique from the Holy Land of Martialism. However, you underestimate me too much if you want to break through my formation with merely this.”

The corner of Lady Piaomiao’s mouth curled up slightly, then her eyes lit up as the golden swords of the Immortal Sword Formation, as if they received an order, stopped spinning around the peak and instead, pointed their tips in all directions. They looked as if they would massacre any invaders.

However, Jiang Qisha disdainfully smiled at the change occurring to the Immortal Sword Formation. He pointed his hand at the Misty Peak, then shouted, “Kill—”

aoo— After his words, the tens of millions of monsters pounded their chests and stamped their feet as they let out a world-shaking roar. Like inverted meteors, they densely flew straight towards the Misty Peak.

At that moment, many people within the Misty Peak were terrified. Other than Lady Piaomiao, Chu Feng, and the others, a large portion of people backed away in fright. They were afraid the monsters would break through the formation and instantly kill them.

whoosh whoosh whoosh whoosh However, the Immortal Sword Formation was obviously not something useless. When the army of monsters reached a certain range, the countless huge golden swords shot towards them with light-like speed and a might that could crush anything.

boom boom boom boom

Explosions rang out, and shock waves were endlessly created. It didn't matter how powerful the monsters were; they were unable to withstand the attacks from the huge golden swords. As long as they were struck, they would shatter immediately. There was no chance for them.

However, the monsters were not simple either. As long as they weren't struck by the golden sword, it didn't matter how horrifying the shock waves were. None would harm them, and like unstoppable arrows, they shot straight past the golden swords, into the defensive formation.

boom, boom, boom, boom...

Although the golden swords were powerful, their numbers were limited. Moreover, the monsters were very quick, and they also had intelligence, leading to their guile.

So, the golden swords simply could not destroy them all. The monsters started to unendingly pass through the Immortal Sword Formation, and after doing so, they did not blindly advance. Instead, with some sort of self-destruction technique, they diminished the power of the defensive formation.

Although their cultivations were only of peak Martial Lords, their self-destruction power was very terrifying, to the point every time they blew up, the entire defensive formation slightly trembled. That strength was even comparable to the strongest attack from a Martial King.

And with the increasing number of monsters that passed through the defensive line of the Immortal Sword Formation, the trembles began increasing in frequency. The entire defensive formation was in a very perilous spot.

"He does possess a bit of skill—he knows he cannot destroy the Immortal Sword Formation, so he directly attacks the defensive formation. It seems that I've underestimated him." Lady Piaomiao knitted her brows. She knew that person was no simple character.

“Lady Piaomiao, there are special talismans on those monsters, and the reason their self-destruction strength is so powerful is due to the talismans.

“Although the strongest attack from a Martial King cannot threaten this formation, since there are so many attacks unendingly occurring, the power of this defensive formation doesn’t matter anymore! It can’t completely resist their attacks,” Qiushui Fuyan said worriedly.

“Fuyan, you’re right. Their formation is very powerful and it has truly surpassed my imagination. I won’t be able to hold them off if this continues. We can now only plan for the worst.

“Right now, bring Chu Feng to the Altar of Exorcism. Try to make contact with the mysterious existence in the Martial Marking Immortal Realm. See if it’s willing to help us escape this disaster for Chu Feng’s sake.

“If it’s willing to, then even the people from the Holy Land of Martialism will die here today. If not, then we can only leave,” Lady Piaomiao said.

“However, as the guardian of this place, wouldn’t it be better for you to go?” Qiushui Fuyan expressed confusion.

“If I could have, then I would have already. In the eyes of outsiders, I am the guardian of the Misty Peak and they feel that I’ve gotten great things from this place.

“However, I myself know very well that the so-called guardian of the Misty Peak is merely a watchdog that cleans up trash for that mysterious existence.

“It does not care who guards this place as long as there *is* a guard. However, Chu Feng is different. Chu Feng seems to have received its approval, so perhaps he can come into contact with it.

“Bring Chu Feng there. As long as the mysterious existence helps us, that will be good. However, don’t stay there for too long. If there’s a response, then great. If not, then don’t force it and quickly return.” As she spoke, Lady Piaomiao’s tone was rather helpless.

“I understand.” Qiushui Fuyan didn’t continue asking. She turned around, grabbed Chu Feng, and flew deep into the Misty Peak.

whoosh whoosh whoosh whoosh Just when Qiushui Fuyan brought Chu Feng away, the army of the Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Three Great Monstrous Clans once again channeled their power into the runic door.

With another activation from Jiang Qisha, the door once again shone with brilliance. Millions upon millions of horrifying monsters appeared again. They were the exact same as the ones before, and they started to continuously advance towards the Misty Peak.

At that instant, everyone from the Misty Peak were terrified. They could tell if that continued, the defensive formation would be destroyed—destroyed when their enemy hadn't even spent a single soldier. This time, they had truly entered a horrendous situation.

In reality, it was not only Xia Yu, Dong Xue, and the others who thought that. Even the guardian of the Misty Peak, Lady Piaomiao, frowned. However, she could do nothing. She could only use everything she had to hold up the defensive formation.

As she did so, she hoped Chu Feng could make contact with the mysterious existence in this place and borrow its power. If he were able to, then it could eradicate everyone outside the Misty Peak.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 908 - Opening up a Path of Blood

MGA: Chapter 908 - Opening up a Path of Blood

Another round of attacks smashed into the defensive formation, and the shock it received was even more intense than before.

Even though Chu Feng and Qiushui Fuyan had come deep into the Misty Peak, they were still able to see the pressure the defensive formation withstood, as well as the endlessly exploding shock waves.

“Chu Feng, you should know what to do, right?” Seeing the already cracked formation, Qiushui Fuyan cast her gaze towards the altar on the peak.

“Sister Fuyan, I will do my best.” Chu Feng nodded, then walked towards the so-called Altar of Exorcism.

The altar looked very odd on the surface—it was like a sinister monster’s skull, and its huge mouth was the entrance.

After Chu Feng entered, he discovered that the inside was even odder. What was burning within were black flames, but those black flames were able to emit faint light. It made the large palace a bit gloomy, and also a bit eerie.

But in reality, due to Chu Feng’s current cultivation, even if there were no flames he could still see everything inside clearly. He could see that the altar was very large, but very empty. The only important thing was its center.

In the center of the altar, there was a tall stage where a mirror stood. It was oval-shaped, and a dozen or so meters tall. It was also nearly ten meters wide, and looked like a vertical eye staring at himself.

Chu Feng knew the mirror was the thing he needed to use to make contact with the mysterious existence. So, Chu Feng went up to the mirror, half-knelt on the ground, and deeply bowed.

“You came here to ask me for help, right?” But before Chu Feng even spoke, an aged voice—one that seemed it had been through eons of immense changes—came from the mirror. That voice was the exact same as the mysterious existence’s back then in the Martial Marking Immortal Realm.

Even though it was only a voice, Chu Feng’s heart still couldn’t help lightly trembling. That person was really too powerful. Just by hearing the voice alone let him know how horrifying of an existence it was.

“Senior, since you know about everything that’s happening outside, why aren’t you driving them away? Instead, you’re allowing these people to disturb your peace?” Chu Feng asked, feigning confusion.

When they were heading over to this altar, Qiushui Fuyan had told him a few things. The Misty Peak was originally a Sealing Formation. As for the master of this place, no one knew who it was. Lady Piaomiao had suspected that the sealed mysterious existence was, in reality, the true master of the Misty Peak.

So, Chu Feng knew the mysterious existence he saw within the Martial Marking Immortal Realm, though seemed like a monster whose strength was immense, might not have been sealed here for a simple reason. No one knew the truth, but what they did know was that this mysterious existence had the ability to save them.

Chu Feng's mission was to do everything he could to get this mysterious existence to help.

"Why should I do anything? That girl is the guardian of this place. If she doesn't have the ability to guard, then so what if the person is switched?" The mysterious voice rang out again, lacking any sort of empathy.

"But Senior, Lady Piaomiao [Immortal Lady Piaomiao] has guarded this place for so many years. Even if she hasn't done great deeds, she has still put hard work into it. Can you bear letting her die from battle because she's guarding this place?" Chu Feng asked.

"Immortal Lady? *She's* worthy of this appellation of 'immortal'? Do you think she's gotten any few amount of benefits from this place? If she hadn't cultivated on the Misty Peak, with the aptitude she has, how could she possess her current cultivation, and how could she have lived up to today?

"She's guarding this place not to guard me, but to guard herself. If she can't fight them off, then it can't be blamed on any person.

"However, for you, I will point you a path of life."

hmm Suddenly, a ripple appeared on the mirror. A body of light the size of a fingernail bore out from it, and floated up to Chu Feng.

Giving it a detailed examination, Chu Feng discovered it was a rune, but absolutely not a simple one. The energy contained within seemed to be able to change a few things.

"Take this. Go nine thousand miles away from the Misty Peak, and at that time, this will shine with light. Crush it, then a formation will appear. It will seal everyone behind you within the Misty Peak. Within twenty hours, it will deactivate.

"This time should be sufficient for your escape. But the precondition is that you can break through this surrounding attack and put all of them behind." That voice started to gradually fade away before it completely disappeared.

Chu Feng knew the mysterious existence had left. No matter how he pleaded, it would be useless.

That existence came from the Ancient Era, and lived for several tens of thousands of years. It had likely seen all sorts of things, and it couldn't be convinced just by a few words.

So, Chu Feng didn't bother with it anymore. He stood up, and after bowing, he walked straight out of the altar.

"Chu Feng, how is it? Were you able to make contact with the mysterious existence?" Qiushui Fuyan was waiting outside. She quickly went up after seeing Chu Feng exit.

"Sister Fuyan, I'll make this short. The mysterious existence replied, but it's unwilling to help. However, it is not ignoring us either, and gave us a chance to escape.

"It's this." As Chu Feng spoke, he took out the mysterious rune, and told her its usage.

"It's hard to imagine it actually responded to you. This is truly unbelievable." After hearing what had happened, Qiushui Fuyan's face was full of shock. However, she did not dally and after simply sealing that place, she brought Chu Feng back to the entrance.

boom boom boom boom boom boom

After arriving at the entrance, the attacks coming from Jiang Qisha's formation became fiercer and fiercer. Chu Feng could clearly see, as those monsters blew up, glass-like cracks appearing on the defensive formation. It was truly in immediate danger, and it would shatter at any moment.

"Fuyan, Chu Feng, how did it go?" Lady Piaomiao quickly asked.

At that moment, she was a bit pale. Clearly, she had exhausted quite some power by holding up both the defensive formation and the Immortal Sword Formation.

"Lady Piaomiao, I'll give this to you." Chu Feng quickly gave the rune to Lady Piaomiao, then gave her a simple explanation on how to use it to escape.

Chu Feng could tell the Misty Peak could not be defended. Right now, if they wanted to survive, the only way was to break through the surrounding attack.

“Chu Feng, since it gave this to you, then you use it.” However, after knowing what had happened, Lady Piaomiao did not put away the rune and instead gave it back to Chu Feng.

Quickly after, she extended her finger and drew a circle on the ground. Only then did she cast her gaze towards the crowd behind her, and shouted, “Chu Feng, Fuyan, Chun Wu, Xia Yu, Qiu Zhu, Dong Xue, Zi Ling, Su Rou, Su Mei, Yan Ruyu, Jiang Wushang, and Zhang Tianyi! All of you stand inside the circle. Today, we will slaughter our way through, and open up a path of blood.”

Martial God Asura - Chapter 909 - Lady Piaomiao Showing Her Might

MGA: Chapter 909 - Lady Piaomiao Showing Her Might

Chu Feng and the others didn't dare to hesitate as they quickly stepped into that circle.

After they all entered, Lady Piaomiao rapidly made hand gestures, then with the wave of her big sleeve, a Spirit Formation with countless runes appeared, enveloping them all.

hmm However, when the Spirit Formation was finished, the runes within the formation quickly swirled like light. As they did, the Spirit Formation materialized and became a sack filled with runes.

whoosh After it became a sack, Lady Piaomiao then made an astonishing action: she took out her Cosmos Sack, and as the runes glowed and swirled, the Spirit Formation that held Chu Feng and the others was put into her Cosmos Sack.

When they witnessed that scene, not to mention bystanders, even Chu Feng and the others were shocked. Living beings could not be put into a Cosmos Sack, yet Chu Feng and the others were clearly all living organisms. That shouldn't be possible.

The reason it could was obviously because of Lady Piaomiao's Spirit Formation.

Most importantly, after they entered the Cosmos Sack, they could even clearly see everything through it. One had to admit that Lady Piaomiao's technique really was powerful. Even Chu Feng admired it quite a bit.

“Lady Piaomiao, save us! Lady Piaomiao, save us!”

After seeing Chu Feng and the others taken into the Cosmos Sack, the elders who were responsible for guarding the Misty Peak panicked. Many of them quickly ran up to Lady Piaomiao, then knelt and kowtowed.

They could tell that she didn’t prepare to bring them away. However, without Lady Piaomiao protecting them, as her subordinates, they were dead once the army broke through the defensive formation.

“At first, when you came to the Misty Peak, you had sworn to live and die with the Misty Peak’s existence. Today, the Misty Peak will perish. Are you now planning to abandon your oaths?” Lady Piaomiao coldly questioned.

“Lady Piaomiao, spare us! Lady Piaomiao, spare us! We don’t want to die just like this! We still want to follow you! Please bring us with you!”

After hearing Lady Piaomiao’s words, a small portion of them stopped begging and stood up, returning to their original positions. However, there was still a large portion of people who were still kowtowing and begging, hoping they would have a chance of survival.

From that, it could be seen when faced with death, these elders who had lived for many years could throw away dignity for life.

whoosh When she saw that, Lady Piaomiao swung her finger and drew a circle on the ground.

“Thank you, Lady Piaomiao! Thank you, Lady Piaomiao!” The ones begging quickly climbed up and ran into that circle.

boom But who would have thought before they were able to, Lady Piaomiao waved her big sleeve and blew back all of them. They coughed up blood, and they were pale. Lady Piaomiao had heavily injured them.

“Only in the crucial moment of peril will true loyalty show itself. You cowardly ones are unworthy to continue following me. Remain here and perish.”

Lady Piaomiao waved her sleeve again, and actually brought those who did not or stopped begging into the circle, then cast another formation, taking those people into the Cosmos Sack as well.

After doing all that, Lady Piaomiao abruptly turned around, cast her fierce gaze at the army of millions outside the Misty Peak, and shouted, “No matter who it is, those who dare to invade my Misty Peak will die by my hands!”

boom rumble rumble rumble

After she spoke, the Immortal Sword Formation and defensive formation were instantly deactivated, and at that instant, Lady Piaomiao shot out like light.

However, she did not only escape. Instead, she waved her sleeve and released a boundless Martial power.

wu ya ya ya ya—

When the Martial power was sent out, it became countless peculiar birds. They were very beautiful, but had very odd appearances. Moreover, they were extremely ferocious. They were like millions of arrows—as they let out ear-piercing cries, they flew everywhere and even cut into space itself, causing black curves in air to appear.

Even the powerful talismanic monsters were unable to stop the flying birds’ attack as they were all pierced through. The birds were even more powerful than the golden swords from the Immortal Sword Formation.

“This might... It’s a Mortal Taboo martial skill. Lady Piaomiao can actually cast it so casually despite its difficulty?” At that moment, Chu Feng, who was in the Cosmos Sack, had a face of amazement. He was stunned by Lady Piaomiao’s technique.

boom, boom, boom, boom, boom...

However, the talismanic monsters were clearly no pushovers. After the Immortal Sword Formation and defensive formation were deactivated, all of them flew towards Lady Piaomiao and surrounded her. However, before they went up close, they suddenly exploded. They wanted to blur Lady Piaomiao’s vision by the violent energy shock waves, thus creating an opening which could be exploited to bring her a fatal strike.

“That brat’s this powerful? So this is the power of the Holy Land of Martialism?”

Seeing the horrifying shock waves brought by the monsters' continual explosions, the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Three Great Monstrous Clans had shocked faces. They could feel the horrifying shock waves generated by the countless explosions. Not to mention a Martial Lord, even a typical Martial King would die within.

wu ya ya ya ya ya

However, in spite of all that, amidst the shock waves that covered the entire sky, ear-piercing cries of birds rang out once again. At the same time, the countless strange birds, with a terrifying might, flew towards the army. They had passed through the surrounding attacks of the talismanic monsters, and had prepared to engage in a counterattack.

“Everyone, be careful! Lady Piaomiao is preparing to attack!”

The chiefs of the Three Great Monstrous Clans and Murong Niekong all tightly furrowed their brows. They gave a warning to the surrounding crowd nearly at the same time while their faces were filled with graveness. Not a single one of them dared to underestimate their enemy.

They knew very well who they were up against—Lady Piaomiao, one of the strongest persons in the entire Eastern Sea Region.

*wu ya ya ya ya**

However, they had still underestimated Lady Piaomiao's technique. When the army had made all preparations, the bird cries once again rang out. Nearly everyone was stupefied when they looked.

They saw the dense body of birds stack atop one another like a cloud. The amount was simply inestimable.

Furthermore, at that very instant, they were rapidly spreading, surrounding them all. With an unbelievable speed, they flew towards the army.

“Lay a Spirit Formation, stop the attacks!” Under Murong Niekong's command, the experts from the alliance of powers attacked at the same time to defend against Lady Piaomiao's Mortal Taboo martial skill.

wu ya ya ya ya

However, the strange birds were really too fast. They were not only large in numbers, their flying direction was very cunning as well. Even though the many Martial Kings had sent out their own counterattacks, they were unable to stop them all.

pu pu pu pu pu pu

In the end, the birds were still able to break through their defenses and entered their ranks. Along with their entry was the endless appearance of blood, and the continuous shrieks of pain. A massacre had accompanied their arrival, and in just a blink, several tens of thousands of people had died within the army of tens of millions.

One after the other, spirited lives had become corpses lacking of awareness. They all fell from the sky.

And these—these were the consequences of invading the Misty Peak.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 910 - White Silk Royal Armament

MGA: Chapter 910 - White Silk Royal Armament

At that moment, the bird cries rang out incessantly, and they were akin to the overture of death. Hearing that sound alone sent chills down everyone's spines.

Those birds pierced through the army, and endlessly through the chests of the army. They brought away with them not only large amounts of blood, but also their lives.

"Dammit! This Taboo martial skill is too powerful. We cannot stop it. Ancestor, what should we do?" At that moment, Murong Niekong tightly furrowed his brows. Although he, as a rank five Martial King, was powerful, he stood no chance against Lady Piaomiao.

In reality, not to mention him, even if were Murong Mingtian he could only stop a large portion of the birds—but not all. So, that was why the entire army was submerged in chaos.

"When capturing bandits, capture the leader first. As the head of a sect, you don't even understand such basic logic," Jiang Qisha suddenly said.

At that moment, in his hands was the closed thick ancient book—the one before that opened the enormous doors. He had put away the formation already, and was looking at Murong Mingtian and the others with a smile.

“Jiang Qisha, you intentionally let her escape, right?” Murong Mingtian’s eyes glittered, a hint of suspicion emerging.

His Formation of Multitudinous Talismanic Soldiers could even dodge the Immortal Sword Formation’s swords and thus attack the defensive formation. Even if it could not stop Lady Piaomiao’s attacks, it shouldn’t have been broken through so quickly. As such, Murong Mingtian knew it was intentional—Jiang Qisha intentionally released Lady Piaomiao.

“I am only responsible for breaking open this formation. I never said I would help you deal with that old granny.” Jiang Qisha smiled and didn’t even deny his suspicions. Instead, he very calmly put away the ancient book.

“Hoh, don’t think we’re helpless without you.” Murong Mingtian coldly smiled, then leapt forth and rose into the air. He flew in Lady Piaomiao’s direction.

Murong Mingtian had made his move. He, as a rank six Martial King, had an aura no weaker than Lady Piaomiao. He flipped his palm, and a three-foot azure blade appeared within his hands.

The azure sword looked very normal, but when it appeared, the atmosphere started fluctuating. An overlord’s pressure descended from the sky, and even Murong Mingtian’s fighting strength increased by several times—that was a Royal Armament.

“Illusory Sword Technique!”

boom

When the Royal Armament was brought out, Murong Mingtian immediately started attacking. As he pointed his sword at Lady Piaomiao, a white light shot out. It became an extremely enormous and powerful sword of light. It jabbed towards Lady Piaomiao—it too was also a Mortal Taboo martial skill.

Although they were both Mortal Taboo martial skills, Murong Mingtian’s was clearly even stronger than Lady Piaomiao’s.

First of all, the one he cast focused only on a single point, which meant the Mortal Taboo martial skill's power was concentrated and strengthened. Furthermore, and the most important part, the power of his Royal Armament had merged with his Taboo martial skill.

Royal Armaments had always been made for Martial Kings. Only in their hands could their true destructive power be shown in their entirety. Typically speaking, when a Martial King had a Royal Armament, they could destroy everything within a region. The martial skill itself didn't matter much when compared to the power acquired from the Royal Armament.

However, after Murong Mingtian took out his Royal Armament, he cast a Mortal Taboo martial skill on top of it. That power was naturally devastating, and it far surpassed Lady Piaomiao's own Taboo martial skill.

"Murong Mingtian, you were disloyal to your master, killed your ancestors, betrayed the place that raised you, and today, you even dare to bring an army to attack the Misty Peak! You have done all possible sinful and unrighteous things. Today, I will avenge my seniors and juniors, and kill you, who has gone completely mad."

Upon seeing Murong Mingtian's attack, Lady Piaomiao was not afraid in the slightest. She waved her sleeve, and white silk shot out from her sleeve.

When it appeared, it rapidly enlarged. Like a python covering and coiling around the sky itself, it surrounded Murong Mingtian's Mortal Taboo martial skill.

That made the crowd shocked, but the most shocking scene still hadn't come yet. The white silk suddenly shrank, and after a boom, it shattered the materialized Illusory Sword Technique.

"How is this possible? The Mortal Illusory Sword Technique cast by Ancestor is a peak martial skill! This level of an attack can cut through everything! How could it be shattered so easily?" Murong Xun felt very confused.

"That is not just simple white silk—it's a Royal Armament. However, Lady Piaomiao intentionally concealed its Royal Armament aura. In reality though, her power has already been increased," Murong Niekong explained.

“But, even if it is a Royal Armament, it shouldn’t destroy his Illusory Sword Technique so easily! After all, it was created by him using the power from the Royal Armament!” Murong Xun still felt it to be inconceivable.

“This...” Murong Niekong was also taken aback. He didn’t know how to explain.

“An idiotic question.” Just at that moment, the young man Jiang Qisha from the Holy Land of Martialism lightly smiled. His smile was even brimming with ridicule.

“What are you saying?” Murong Xun asked a bit displeasedly.

“Both hold in their hands a Royal Armament, yet she’s able to destroy your ancestor’s attack with the Royal Armament’s power alone. Do you not know what that means?

“That means the old granny’s strength is superior to your ancestor’s! It seems that this time, he’s in danger because he’s simply inferior to that old granny,” Jiang Qisha said.

“Nonsense! My ancestor has cultivated for nearly a thousand years. His strength is powerful, and even a rank seven Martial King may not defeat him! How could he not defeat Lady Piaomiao?!” Murong Xun was enraged. He simply could not accept others talking about his ancestor in such a manner.

“Do not speak to me with that tone. Has your ancestor not told you that?” At that moment, although Jiang Qisha’s expression was unchanged, there was a hint of killing intent that flashed within his gaze.

ta ta ta After seeing that, Murong Xun’s complexion changed greatly. He took several steps back, and nearly tripped and fell from the sky

“Xun’er, do not be impolite.” Murong Niekong quickly helped Murong Xun up, then pretended to strictly berate, “Quickly apologize to Lord Jiang Qisha.”

The crowd was taken aback by his action. They were confused as to why the great master of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, a rank five Martial King, feared Jiang Qisha in such a way.

Murong Xun, who was furious before, stopped moving. After standing himself stably, he quickly clasped his fists and bowed, saying very respectfully, "This little one has been disrespectful. I ask for your forgiveness, milord."

He did not dare to refuse to apologize, because in the instant he met Jiang Qisha's gaze, he saw a single word: death.

He was too terrifying. He was simply the most terrifying existence he had met up until now. Even Murong Xun, who was arrogant and wild, didn't dare to put up any haughty airs. Even though Jiang Qisha was younger than him, Murong Xun had no choice but to admit the young man who came from the Holy Land of Martialism was really too horrifying.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 911 - Tearing down the Bridge after Crossing the River

MGA: Chapter 911 - Tearing down the Bridge after Crossing the River

boom boom boom boom

In the sky, Murong Mingtian was in a battle with Lady Piaomiao.

Two rank six Martial Kings, both wielding Royal Armaments, were exchanging attacks back and forth. There was no end to their usage of powerful martial skills and fierce attacks. Their might was too ferocious; even the alliance of armies couldn't help backing away, afraid of being swept into the violent shock waves and losing their lives.

Even though the Immortal Execution Archipelago's army avoided Lady Piaomiao's slaughter because of Murong Mingtian, at that very moment, they were tightly furrowing their brows.

The battle between two rank six Martial Kings was frightening and devastating. No matter speed, or power, a typical person was no match for either. Many people watching couldn't even see their attacks clearly. They could only see the violent shock waves exploding, and spreading throughout the sky.

However, they were no fools. After a brief exchange of blows, they discovered, as Jiang Qisha said, Murong Mingtian really was no match for Lady Piaomiao.

Even in the instant they started fighting, Lady Piaomiao was the one who took the advantage and continued suppressing Murong Mingtian. Moreover, the level of suppression became clearer and clearer. He now looked as if he would be defeated soon.

Everyone felt trepidation when they saw this. Murong Mingtian, in their eyes, was the only existence who could fight off Lady Piaomiao. If something were to happen to him, one could imagine what situation they would be faced with—they could recall Lady Piaomiao's horrifying strange birds.

Such a powerful person like Lady Piaomiao could not be defeated by numbers alone. It wouldn't matter how many people they had. In front of Lady Piaomiao, they were no more than ants. If she wanted to kill them, she would, and it would require no effort.

Fear permeated everyone's hearts. Uneasiness splattered across their faces. Lady Piaomiao's power had surpassed their imagination.

Before, when the Crippling Night Demon Sect still ruled the Eastern Sea Region, when the might of the sect head stunned the world, there was nearly no one who could defeat the head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

However, back then, someone had said Lady Piaomiao was the sole person who was roughly equal to the sect head. Many people didn't believe that, but now, today, they do.

boom

boom

boom

Just at that moment, the endless explosions rang out again. At the same time, layers upon layers of uncontrollable shock waves burst out. Although, because of distance, the shock waves were harmless, the hurricanes that arose because of the shock waves were fiercely striking.

With a surging might, the huge wave of gale dashing through the air pounced at the army.

"This isn't good." Murong Niekong and the chiefs of the Three Great Monstrous Clans had a great change in expression. They were aware of how

bad things were. They quickly laid Spirit Formations and defensive martial skill to stop the gales.

“Ahhhh—” However, the gales were simply too quick. Before they even finished constructing their defenses, they had arrived.

No one, with the exception of Martial Kings, could stop the fierceness of the hurricanes. The army of tens of millions were like little fishes struck by a huge wave. Amidst bursts of shouts, they were rolling and staggering due to the wind, and they thus scattered about.

In just an instant, all the experts gathered by the Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Three Great Monstrous Clans were in absolute chaos.

“Heavens, this...”

However, when Murong Niekong and the others cast their gazes back at the battlefield between Murong Mingtian and Lady Piaomiao, panic emerged on their already uneasy complexions.

At that moment, the berserk shock waves had dispersed, and in the distant sky, they could see two people fighting it out.

The white silk within Lady Piaomiao’s sleeve covered the immense sky. It looked as if it were formed by the vast sea of clouds, yet also looked like a white dragon that flew within the sky. Not only was it ferocious, its might was terrifying.

On the other hand, although Murong Mingtian, with the three-foot azure sword in hand, had undiminished might, there were traces of red on his golden robe. There were even frightening wounds on his aged face and his hand which held the Royal Armament. He had actually been injured.

“Lord Jiang Qisha, please lend my ancestor a hand!” Murong Niekong cast his pleading gaze towards Jiang Qisha upon seeing the disheartening circumstances.

The chiefs from the Three Great Monstrous Clans felt confused at Murong Niekong’s words, but from his sincere attitude, they were able to see a bit of his plan.

In the Eastern Sea Region, Chu Feng's fighting strength had already thrown away common sense. He was titled as a genius, and could even fight those above his level and defeat those three ranks above himself.

Since there was such a monster within the Eastern Sea Region, then in such a mystical land as the Holy Land of Martialism, perhaps there were many similar people to Chu Feng. Perhaps this Jiang Qisha was a genius like him as well.

Their suspicions were further confirmed when they recalled the formation he laid earlier. He didn't even need them, Martial Kings, to do anything. Using only the power of Martial Lords, he broke through the indestructible defensive formation. Recalling all that, they were more certain that this young man called Jiang Qisha was extraordinary as well.

So, perhaps, he could truly become the crucial existence to save them.

"What benefit is there to save your ancestor?" Jiang Qisha did not do anything after hearing Murong Niekong's words. Instead, he asked him a question with a smile. Within his smile, there was deep meaning—he truly wanted some sort of gain.

"What are you saying? We are in an alliance! It is completely reasonable for you to help out, and you want some benefit? Could it be... after borrowing our power to destroy this defensive formation, you feel that there is no use to us anymore, and want to dispose of us?!" The Fifth Immortal of the Immortal Execution Archipelago could finally take it no more. He could not tolerate Jiang Qisha's arrogant attitude.

"Shut up." Murong Niekong quickly yelled at the Fifth Immortal, afraid he would offend Jiang Qisha.

"It's nothing. He's very correct. Right now, I do feel that none of you retain any value. If I want to dispose of you, what can you do to me?" However, what no one expected was Jiang Qisha to admit the Fifth Immortal's words.

Moreover, as he spoke, he swept his squinted gaze over the crowd. A hint of chilliness glinted in his eyes.

At that instant, no one could remain calm anymore. They couldn't help but back away and kept a certain distance from Jiang Qisha. They even hiddenly used Martial power to put themselves in the optimal fighting condition.

At that moment, not only did Murong Niekong have a distorted expression, the chiefs from the Three Great Monstrous Clans were the same. Their eyes glittered unceasingly. There was fury, yet also fear.

At that moment, he had already stated his words so clearly. No matter who it was, they would not be able to remain collected, especially when Jiang Qisha origin was so special, and his background and strength were powerful. If he had finished using them, and truly killed them all to take all the benefit for himself, then a disaster was truly heading their way.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 912 - My Master Comes from the Cursed Soil Sect

MGA: Chapter 912 - My Master Comes from the Cursed Soil Sect

Although livid, when considering the present circumstances, Murong Niekong endured the fury, organized his emotions, and said, “Lord Jiang Qisha, my ancestor has come from this Misty Peak. He knows the inside very well.

“Rather than a blind search, why not allow my ancestor to help you search instead? Although Lady Piaomiao is the master of this place, she will absolutely not help you. I’m sure you know the advantages and disadvantages very well.”

“Haha, look at you! I was just joking. Since we’re in an alliance, how can I ignore him when he’s in trouble?” After hearing his words, Jiang Qisha laughed. He looked as if everything before was merely a joke.

But at that very instant, Murong Niekong and the others, though calm on the surface, had fluctuating hearts. They knew this young man was too cunning and dangerous. They truly shouldn't have allied with him. But sadly, they could do nothing now because they were already forced to go along with the momentum he set.

boom rumble rumble

Just at that moment, another deafening explosion rang out. There was yet another confrontation in the distance between Murong Mingtian and Lady Piaomiao. Moreover, the might it created this time was even fiercer than before.

“My friend Jiang Qisha, are you willing to lend me a hand?” Murong Mingtian couldn’t help but speak as well. He truly had no choice.

Right now, his injuries were even more serious. Even his aura started to slip. His face was pale, there was blood all over his body, perspiration drenched his body, he was gasping for air, and even the hand which held the Royal Armament was trembling slightly.

On the other hand, Lady Piaomiao was not merely unwounded, she looked invincible. Her clothes fluttered, and the white silk was akin to an incomparably enormous white draconic serpent. As it flew in the air, it looked as if it could break anything.

“Murong Mingtian, when all’s said and done, you’re still a man who’s cultivated for several hundred years. Yet, you can’t even beat an old granny? Isn’t this a bit too embarrassing?”

Jiang Qisha slowly walked over in the air, allowing shock wave after shock wave to endlessly sweep past his body—they were unable to stop his advance.

“Lady Piaomiao, although that Jiang Qisha is only a rank four Martial King, his fighting strength is absolutely not as simple as a mere rank four Martial King. Don’t fight him; it is best to take this chance to escape,” Chu Feng quickly reminded. From the start, he had felt the true threat wasn’t the Immortal Execution Archipelago, but Jiang Qisha who came from the Holy Land of Martialism.

“I don’t care where he comes from, nor what strength he has. Since he’s dared to invade my Misty Peak, I will not forgive him.”

However, Lady Piaomiao simply ignored Chu Feng’s words. She, who was in a rage, didn’t plan to leave immediately. Instead, she wanted to initiate a fierce attack. She ignored the slowly forwarding Jiang Qisha, and as she controlled the white silk Royal Armament, she once again threw it towards Murong Mingtian, aiming to take his life.

“Old granny, are you ignoring me?” Jiang Qisha lightly smiled, then stepped forward. With the flash of light, he disappeared instantly, and when he reappeared, he was in front of Lady Piaomiao.

“Old granny, let me test your strength.”

When Lady Piaomiao reacted to his appearance, Jiang Qisha, with faintly squinting eyes, had already powerfully sent his palm towards Lady Piaomiao's face amidst a fierce howling of wind.

whoosh Lady Piaomiao dodged to the left, and with an agile body and extremely quick speed, she perfectly dodged Jiang Qisha's attack.

But, unexpectedly, Jiang Qisha flipped his wrist, then a powerful gale created by King-level Martial power shot out from his palm, towards Lady Piaomiao's face again.

whoosh That palm-gale was not to be underestimated, so Lady Piaomiao could only evade again.

However, Jiang Qisha held out his other hand. Clenching tightly, as the air around it rippled, he punched out. Its pressure instantly enveloped everything. The seemingly ordinary punch was actually a powerful martial skill. Its area of attack was vast; it covered all of Lady Piaomiao's escape.

hmm Since she could not dodge that punch, she willed a golden Spirit Formation to appear as she retreated backwards. It covered her front to block the attack.

boom However, she had still underestimated Jiang Qisha. The might of his punch not only broke Lady Piaomiao's Spirit Formation, it even shattered it.

"Dammit!"

At that moment, Lady Piaomiao tightly knitted her brows. She felt that continuously dodging wasn't the solution. So, she lightly flicked her robe, and from the white silk that curled in the air, she instantly released the aura of the Royal Armament. With an oppressing and destructive might, it attacked back at Jiang Qisha.

But even so, Jiang Qisha's smile did not diminish. He didn't put much attention on the Royal Armament's attack. As he dealt with it, he continued attacking Lady Piaomiao. His attacks were fierce, and they were simply continuous and completely surprising. Even Lady Piaomiao herself felt enormous pressure.

"Powerful. This Jiang Qisha has truly suppressed Lady Piaomiao, and he doesn't even need to use a Royal Armament?"

“Suppressing a rank six as a rank four. This one is indeed a genius. So is this a monster from the Holy Land of Martialism? No wonder he was so arrogant.”

The people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Three Great Monstrous Clans all couldn't help but deeply inhale. Martial Kings and Martial Lords were different. The difference between ranks in Martial Kings was much more obvious than the latter. Strength that could suppress an opponent two ranks above was absolutely no weaker than Chu Feng's, who could suppress those three ranks above—perhaps it was even stronger.

However, after truly seeing Jiang Qisha's power, Murong Niekong and the others tightly furrowed their brows. Their expressions were grave, because his strength and cunningness, to them, might not be good.

“Lady Piaomiao, he is too strong. Don't fight him anymore, and first leave this place. It is never late to take revenge.” Qiushui Fuyan couldn't help persuading Lady Piaomiao as well. Judging by what was happening, anyone could tell Jiang Qisha had kept some of strength unrevealed. However, Lady Piaomiao clearly hadn't kept much hidden. The one stronger and the one weaker was already known. If they continued, Lady Piaomiao would only enter a greater disadvantage.

“Brat, where did you come from? Do you dare to report your background?” Lady Piaomiao furiously asked, evidently bitter.

“Old granny, since you've asked, listen up. Today, I'll tell you. Prick up your ears. I've come from the Holy Land of Martialism's 'Cursed Soil Sect'.

“If you want revenge, you are welcome any time. However, with the aptitude you have, even if you cultivate for several tens of thousands of years, to my Cursed Soil Sect, you will be no more than garbage. You won't even pass my gates.” Jiang Qisha curled up his lips, his smile full of ridicule. He completely looked down on Lady Piaomiao.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 913 - The Powerful Jiang Qisha

MGA: Chapter 913 - The Powerful Jiang Qisha

“Hmph. Arrogant. You better watch out.” Lady Piaomiao coldly snorted, then waved her other sleeve. Amidst a burst of ear-piercing cries, countless birds shot out from her sleeve, then surrounded and attacked Jiang Qisha.

This was the Mortal Taboo martial skill she used to slaughter the Immortal Execution Archipelago’s army earlier. However, this time, the densely packed mass of birds focused on one point, and surrounded only one person.

The might they exuded was truly terrifying. With merely a glimpse, the observers felt their scalp itch and chills go down their spines.

After Lady Piaomiao used that powerful Mortal Taboo martial skill, she did not continue attacking with the opportunity that emerged. Instead, she turned around, and used an extremely quick bodily martial skill. She became a strand of light and flew into the distance. Her plan was to leave this land.

“Don’t worry, I will let you go and give you a chance to take revenge. However, since I’ve made my move, naturally I won’t allow all of you to leave. Leave a few things behind first.”

However, Jiang Qisha merely smiled coldly at the birds. He flipped his palm, and a talisman appeared in his hand. He flicked his arm, and threw it out.

After that talisman left his hand, it rapidly swirled and started to change. In the end, it became an enormous black hole that stood vertical in the air. That black hole looked odd, and felt even stranger. It was truly like a hole that stretched out to infinity, and from it was the birth of boundless suction power.

wu ya ya ya ya

Regardless of the number of birds, they could not fight against the horrifying suction power. In the end, amidst ear-piercing cries, they were all drawn into the black hole.

“This brat...”

Even Lady Piaomiao’s complexion changed greatly. With astonishment, she discovered even her speed had significantly slowed after the emergence of the black hole. If her martial skill wasn’t powerful, then in this moment, she definitely would have been sucked in already.

“Senior, don’t leave so quickly, let’s have a longer chat!” At the same time, Murong Mingtian flew over with an odd smile on his face. He wanted to take that chance to deal with her.

“You want to stop me? It’s won’t be that easy.” Lady Piaomiao’s eyes glittered, then she waved her sleeve. The Royal Armament left her sleeve, and became a white dragon.

That white dragon had horns and claws, and even had sparkling white scales. With its enormous body and powerful aura, it flew in the air, and it was just like a real dragon.

aoo— The white dragon formed by white silk was very fierce. When it opened its mouth, it could even swallow the clouds. Its claws could rip through space itself, and as if it had intelligence, it fought Murong Mingtian, and stopped him.

aoo— Lady Piaomiao waved her sleeve again, and another stream of white silk flew out. It too became a white dragon that attacked Jiang Qisha.

“Heh, interesting. I didn’t think in a place like this there would be a person who could create a pair of Royal Armaments.

“But sadly, something of this degree cannot stop me.” Jiang Qisha’s expression remained unchanging as he faced the fierce white dragon. He turned his wrist, and several talismans appeared.

whoosh whoosh whoosh He flicked his arm, and the talismans were akin to arrows as they shot out in all directions, howling as they swished through the air. At the same time, golden Spirit Formation power flowed out from his body, and connected with all the talismans.

“Formation!” After finishing, Jiang Qisha lightly shouted. A blinding light flashed past, and the connected talismans became a materialized big net that enveloped the white dragon.

Afterwards, the net rapidly shrank. It became the size of the original talismans, and like a bun of talisman, it landed into Jiang Qisha’s hand.

Although the bun was shaking left and right, intensely struggling, the white dragon made by a Royal Armament had clearly lost any opportunity to fight Jiang Qisha. It was captured.

For two exact same Royal Armaments, one had easily stopped Murong Mingtian, while Jiang Qisha effortlessly subdued the other one. The difference of those two was enormous, and also sufficient to prove Jiang Qisha's strength.

"Dammit. How does this brat possess such revolting techniques." Lady Piaomiao's expression turned for the worse when her Royal Armament was suppressed. However, she did not turn around and instead continued quickly flying forward.

However, Jiang Qisha clearly did not prepare to let Lady Piaomiao go. He threw out two talismans and stuck them underneath his shoe. He travelled dozens of miles in a step, and as he dashed with large strides, he was beginning to catch up to Lady Piaomiao with unbelievable speed.

"Cursed Soil Sect... So this is someone from the Holy Land of Martialism?"

Seeing Jiang Qisha, who did not give up and kept on using techniques he had never seen before, Chu Feng's eyes flickered unstably. It was the first time he saw the methods of someone from the Holy Land of Martialism. One could say Jiang Qisha's performance did not disappoint him, and instead even made him a bit surprised.

Chu Feng could tell the techniques Jiang Qisha grasped was reliant on the special talismans. He used those to strengthen himself, and no matter offense, or defense, or even speed, they all greatly rose due to the talismans.

Chu Feng even felt if it were a relative comparison of fighting strength, Jiang Qisha might even be stronger than him. Moreover, Jiang Qisha came from the Holy Land of Martialism, but that was all. It did not mean he was the strongest genius within the Holy Land of Martialism.

And if that were the case—that he wasn't the strongest genius in the Holy Land of Martialism—what would the strongest be like? And how powerful were the experts of that land?

Perhaps... Martial Emperors, that were like legends in this world, were alive and of no shortage there?

Chu Feng couldn't help but recall the words Jiang Qisha said to Lady Piaomiao before. Perhaps he was right: Even if Lady Piaomiao were to cultivate for several tens of thousands of years, perhaps she might not even

be able to barge into his sect. It was like how the strongest in the continent of the Nine Provinces could not do much in the Eastern Sea Region.

The strength of Jiang Qisha made Chu Feng uneasy, because right now, he could very possibly block their road of life.

But at the same time, Jiang Qisha's strength made Chu Feng excited. He looked even more forward to entering the Holy Land of Martialism. As they say, you become stronger when you meet the strong. Only the land abundant in experts was the true holy land for great change.

"Old granny! Today, I'll let you off. However, leave them behind."

While Chu Feng was in a daze, a voice suddenly rang out. Raising his head, he discovered Jiang Qisha had already caught up. Moreover, a talisman had left his hand. Like lightning, it landed onto Lady Piaomiao's Cosmos Sack.

boom

When the talisman struck its target, the Cosmos Sack actually exploded. It did not just forcibly break open the Cosmos Sack, even the formation containing Chu Feng and the others instantly broke.

In an instant, Chu Feng and the others all appeared in the air. They left Lady Piaomiao's protection, and stood before Jiang Qisha.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 914 - Lady Piaomiao's Resolution

MGA: Chapter 914 - Lady Piaomiao's Resolution

"Dammit!"

Lady Piaomiao's expression changed greatly when Jiang Qisha broke her formation, releasing Chu Feng and the others from her Cosmos Sack. She struck out with her palm, and sent a fierce attack at Jiang Qisha. She swirled the air with her other sleeve, aiming to regather and protect Chu Feng and the others.

"Hehe, you can leave today—I won't force you behind. However, none of these should even think of leaving."

Jiang Qisha coldly smiled. He lightly waved his arm, and King-level Martial power surged forth, easily breaking Lady Piaomiao's attack. At the same time, he lightly opened the other hand, and several talismans shot out.

When they appeared, they started converging into a single area, becoming an enormous black hole. Its appearance immediately brought out a boundless suction power. Wind drawing them into that hole made Chu Feng and the others look like kites with their string severed as they were forced by the power to fly towards the black hole.

"Dammit!" Chu Feng knew the current situation was nothing good. With a thought, he released several golden Spirit Formation chains, binding Zi Ling, Su Rou, Zhang Tianyi, and the others, connecting them with himself.

However, it was useless as the suction power was too strong. Even Chu Feng himself could not escape, so it was a meaningless action to bind himself with Zi Ling and the others.

Right now, not to mention Chu Feng, even Qiushui Fuyan, a rank two Martial King, could not resist the boundless suction power and was also being drawn into the black hole.

"Ahh—"

All sorts of screams rang out; someone had already entered the black hole, and had disappeared. Not even a hint of aura remained, as if they completely vanished.

Horror. Uneasiness. Those emotions permeated everyone's heart and face, because they knew very well what being sucked into the black hole meant—it meant death.

"Dammit!" At the instant, Chu Feng gritted his teeth, his heart full of both fury and hatred.

He was furious because Jiang Qisha, who came from the Holy Land of Martialism, forced them to this state. He felt hatred—hatred at his own inferiority. He could not even put up an iota of resistance, and could only watch as the ones closest to him, like himself, were being drawn into the black hole.

“Eggy, what should I do? Tell me what to do!” When all options were exhausted, Chu Feng asked Eggy for help.

“Chu Feng, don’t panic. From what I see, that black hole is only a Spirit Formation entrance. It seems more like a cage. He is only capturing, not killing,” Eggy reminded. But, in reality, this queen did not have much confidence either.

bzz lalalala… Just at that moment, the sound of chains rang out, and at the same time, golden radiance shone in all directions. Like a golden serpent, they wrapped around Chu Feng and the others, stopping them from being drawn into the black hole.

“Lady Piaomiao?” When they turned their heads around, the crowd rejoiced because they could see that the golden chain, engraved with complicated runes and markings, came from Lady Piaomiao. She had saved them.

However, at that moment, her complexion was very poor. One could see she was under great pressure due to the black hole.

hmm

“Ahh—”

Suddenly, the crowd cried out. They felt the suction power instantly increase, and even Lady Piaomiao couldn’t help taking a step forward. It didn’t seem that she would be able to hold on for long.

When they looked back, they saw Jiang Qisha standing on the spot, and gazing at them with a light smile. Although he did nothing to Lady Piaomiao directly, he was throwing one talisman after the other into the black hole.

Every time he threw one in, the black hole would enlarge by a bit. At the same time, the suction power would also double.

“Old granny, if you leave now you can still make it. If you don’t leave, however, beware my change of heart,” Jiang Qisha said indifferently. His tone contained strong confidence, as if keeping or release Lady Piaomiao was merely dependent on a whim.

whoosh chachacha

“Ahh—”

As expected, in front of the ever increasing black hole, the chains could not last. Many people started letting out painful cries.

“Lady Piaomiao, this won’t do. Even if you can prevent us from entering the black hole, the powerful suction power will not diminish because of that. If this continues, even if we don’t enter the black hole, our bodies will break by the suction power,” Qiushui Fuyan said.

She was correct. The suction power was too horrifying. If one resisted, they would face the powerful strength of the suction power. It was really too strong of a power, and likely many people here could not withstand the force. In the end, their bodies would be crushed and they would die.

“Lady Piaomiao, leave us! Go!” Chu Feng also spoke. His words came from the bottom of his heart.

After everything that had happened, he had a transparent understanding of the current situation. Jiang Qisha was too powerful, and his strength was definitely not as simple as what was shown. Lady Piaomiao was truly no match for him, and if the present circumstances continued, it would only bring Lady Piaomiao down with them. Rather than letting Jiang Qisha capture all them alive, why not just let Lady Piaomiao safely leave?

“No. I cannot leave any of you behind.” Lady Piaomiao gnashed her teeth, and at the same time, a hint of resolution flashed into her eyes.

Suddenly, an explosion rang out. A white light appeared within her body. In that instant, Lady Piaomiao’s aura increased significantly.

“Lady Piaomiao, you...” Qiushui Fuyan’s complexion changed greatly when she saw that.

“Master, don’t...” At the same time, Chun Wu and the others screamed.

“This feeling?” It was not only they who knew something was off. Even Chu Feng felt it. The power Lady Piaomiao released was too powerful. This was an abnormal situation.

Through sensitive detection power and the observation strength of the Heaven's eyes, Chu Feng discovered the power Lady Piaomiao acquired demanded an even greater price than using Forbidden Medicine.

She was actually using a special Mysterious Technique to set ablaze her own life and cultivation. She was using her life and cultivation to save everyone.

"Master, leave us behind! Go!"

"Lady Piaomiao, you cannot do this for us!"

Chun Wu and the others cried. Even Qiushui Fuyan's eyes went red. They clearly knew what it meant when Lady Piaomiao used this technique.

However, Lady Piaomiao completely ignored them. She muttered to herself, "Several hundreds of years of painstaking cultivation, all just to protect my dearest ones.

"The moment has come; I burn my body. If a man blocks, I kill that man. If a god blocks, I kill that god!"

After speaking, the white light burst. Like a sun, it lit up the world, instantly engulfing everything in its reach. Even the great army far away could see it in absolute clarity.

Not to mention the tens of millions of experts from the Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Three Great Monstrous Clans, even Murong Mingtian who was still fighting the white dragon tightly furrowed his brows. His complexion changed greatly, and he cried out, "She's actually cultivated that Mysterious Technique?"

Martial God Asura - Chapter 915 - Fighting to the Death

MGA: Chapter 915 - Fighting to the Death

Lady Piaomiao's body was like the sun. The dazzling brilliance had nearly engulfed everything.

Those who were enveloped by the radiance could feel the power of the strongest person in the entire Eastern Sea Region.

Looking at the land shone upon by the brimming white light, the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago were uneasy. They didn't dare to approach her, and they even backed away because they were all very afraid.

If Lady Piaomiao fought Jiang Qisha and won, that did not mean Jiang Qisha's sole defeat. It also meant all of their defeat.

hmm

However, just at that moment, a speck of black appeared on the side of the white light. Moreover, the black speck was rapidly enlarging, and in the end, it stood up against the white light.

"Jiang Qisha?"

Those from the Immortal Execution Archipelago rejoiced because they could tell that the black speck was from the black hole. At that moment, there was an essential change in the black hole's volume. The suction power it released simply reached the extremities of horror.

In front of the suction power, even the faraway clouds could not resist and were sucked in continuously. Even the white light itself was being sucked in.

Within a short moment, over half of the radiance emitted by Lady Piaomiao faded away, and other than some light still surrounding her body, there was only some that surrounded Chu Feng and the others via the Spirit Formation chain.

The white light was protecting them. Otherwise, they would have been torn apart by the horrifying suction power. However, at that very instant, the white light was very weak, and it was becoming weaker and weaker. It seemed it would disappear along with the rest.

"You..." Lady Piaomiao's complexion was very unsightly. Right now, she was using a Forbidden Mysterious Technique to burn her life! Yet, even so, it still seemed insufficient against Jiang Qisha. This was the first time in her life that she tasted this feeling—powerlessness.

"Like I said, you can leave, but you should not even think of taking a single one of them.

“Don’t think I don’t mean my words. I, Jiang Qisha, am not a person who likes to speak lies.” He stood in the air, and looked at Lady Piaomiao with a light smile. His gaze seemed as if he were looking at an ignorant person.

Moreover, he even swept his gaze over Chu Feng, as though telling him what a *real* genius was.

Lady Piaomiao, however, put away her furious expression when Jiang Qisha gazed with such disdain. She wore a hint of a smile, and said, “You said I can’t even take a single person, but let me show you how I will bring them away.”

After speaking, Lady Piaomiao let out an even brighter radiance. Her aura once again soared.

whoosh

She leapt forward. As her clothes fluttered, she rushed in Jiang Qisha’s direction with a boundless might.

“Heh, you want to put your life on the line and initiate counterattack? Let me see what strength you have.”

The smile on Jiang Qisha’s face did not diminish and instead increased, despite seeing the fiercely approaching Lady Piaomiao. He didn’t dodge, and instead, just stood on the spot, awaiting the arrival of her attack.

bam

bam

But when Lady Piaomiao passed by Chu Feng, her expression suddenly changed. Who would have expected her to hold out her hand, then grab Chu Feng? Then, as she rushed back, she held out another hand and grabbed Qiushui Fuyan.

After doing that, she didn’t even turn her head around and released all of the Spirit Formation chains, allowing Zi Ling and the others to be sucked into the black hole. Ignoring them completely, she fled into the distance.

“Hmph. You’re playing a trick like this? You underestimate me too much.”

A chilly glint appeared in Jiang Qisha's eyes for a flash. He waved his big sleeve, and the black hole rapidly shrank. It became a talisman that landed into his hand. Then, he leapt forward and advanced with large strides, chasing after Lady Piaomiao.

whoosh, whoosh, whoosh... Jiang Qisha was extremely quick, and that horrifying speed was not even his limit. It was still rapidly accelerating.

However, Lady Piaomiao did not show any inferiority. The change within her body became stronger and stronger, and her face became thinner and thinner—however, her power also became fiercer and fiercer. At that moment, she had infinitely neared rank seven Martial King, and was even about to enter that realm.

“Chu Feng, is the distance still not enough?” Qiushui Fuyan loudly asked seeing Jiang Qisha persisting on his chase, and was even cutting the distance between them.

“It's not enough. There's still a bit more.” Chu Feng held the rune in his hand, his face also filled with graveness. He knew what this meant.

“It matters not. Today, I will bring you both safely away.” The resolution in Lady Piaomiao's eyes became even stronger. She once again let out her boundless aura, and with a flash, she disappeared instantly. She was truly quick—so quick she flashed past the sky, and observers would simply not even see her shadow.

“Even if you burn yourself into ashes, you will not bring them away!”

Jiang Qisha's gaze turned icy. His movement changed as he used a special bodily martial skill. Every step he took left an afterimage of a talisman. He was not even the slightest bit slower than Lady Piaomiao, who had burst forth.

“Dammit!” At that moment, Qiushui Fuyan was in desperation. Not only were her eyes red, tears had streamed down her face because she could feel Lady Piaomiao's life rapidly flowing away. If this continued, it would likely lead to Lady Piaomiao's death.

“Senior Qiushui.” However, just at that moment, Chu Feng's voice suddenly rang out. She turned her head, and Qiushui Fuyan couldn't help being taken back. She asked in confusion, “Chu Feng, what are you doing?”

At that instant, Chu Feng was holding out the rune to Qiushui Fuyan.

"I cannot just leave Zi Ling and the others behind," Chu Feng said with a bit of shame.

"Have you become an idiot? Even if they are captured, it does not mean necessarily mean death to them. However, if you are captured, there is no doubt you *will* die.

"In fact, only if you successfully escape will Zi Ling and the others be safe. You are the person most feared by the Immortal Execution Archipelago. They are afraid you will take revenge on them after you develop in strength. Killing Zi Ling and the others mean they are cutting off their own lives.

"However, if they leave Zi Ling alive, they can threaten you," Qiushui Fuyan said with a bit of irritation.

"But..."

"There is no 'but'! Right now, in order to save us two, Lady Piaomiao is burning her life! Even if we can safely escape this time, she will not have long to live. Do you have the heart to betray her kind intentions?" Qiushui Fuyan continued berating.

At that moment, Chu Feng tightly clenched one fist. There were unspeakable emotions in his heart. Afterwards, he raised his head, and looked at Lady Piaomiao. He discovered, at that moment, not only was she glowing in light, her complexion had aged quite significantly. She looked like a patient who was on the border of life and death—one that had already reached the end of their life.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 916 - A Mocking Laugh

MGA: Chapter 916 - A Mocking Laugh

Feeling Chu Feng's gaze, Lady Piaomiao turned her head over as well and said, "Chu Feng, my abilities are limited. I can only save you and Fuyan. If you want to go back, I won't stop you, but I'll leave you with some words.

"Only by staying alive can you exact revenge. Otherwise, everything else you do will be useless."

Chu Feng's eyes reddened. They moistened. But, he remained silent. He closed his eyes, allowing Lady Piaomiao to bring him away. He chose to leave.

Only when Lady Piaomiao flew far, when they could no longer see any traces of the Misty Peak, did the corner of Chu Feng's eye tremble slightly before the fall of a single tear.

At the same time, Chu Feng clenched his hand, which held the rune.

boom—

huuuu—

An explosion erupted when the rune was crushed. A powerful shock wave wreaked havoc, and they interfered the lives of every being. Even Lady Piaomiao, who flew speedily in the air, was shaken by that shock wave. She swayed left and right, and almost fell from the sky.

Turning their heads, no matter Chu Feng, Qiushui Fuyan, or Lady Piaomiao, all of their pupils shrank. Their eyes widened, and their faces were full of shock.

At that very instant, only two words could describe the scene behind them: absolute chaos.

Above: black clouds rolled about, thunders rang out in bursts, as if the sky itself had been torn.

Below: the waves were surging, and the waves were roaring, as if there was some evil beast soon to be spawned.

Most importantly, as such change occurred to the sky above and the sea beneath, a visible barrier appeared. It sealed off everything in the direction of the Misty Peak, and separated Chu Feng and the others on the other side.

That barrier was like a wave. It was colourless, auraless, and if one gave it a careful detection, they would discover it was unmovable as well.

"It succeeded! Chu Feng, you've succeeded! We've succeeded!" Qiushui Fuyan was ecstatic. She was so excited she could nearly jump. She knew this was the thing the mysterious existence gave them. This was a technique of

the mysterious existence. With this barrier, Jiang Qisha's strength didn't matter anymore. He was no longer able to catch up to them.

"What is this?" Just at that moment, Jiang Qisha had been quickly rushing over. His first appearance was in the distant horizon, and after his second step, he had arrived before them.

However, Jiang Qisha clearly noticed the barrier already. He kept some distance; he stood in the air, and with a fierce gaze, looked at the barrier that stopped his advance.

"Chu Feng, Qiushui, let's go," Lady Piaomiao said after seeing Jiang Qisha.

"Ah." However, just after she finished speaking, her body tilted and she lost her ability to fly, beginning to fall from the sky.

"Lady Piaomiao!" Alarmed, Qiushui Fuyan quickly held her up.

At that instant, the light surrounding Lady Piaomiao's body started disappearing. As it started fading away, Lady Piaomiao's complexion also started to change.

Not only was her face starting to fill with wrinkles, her skin dried and was full of darkened spots, as if there weren't even have an ounce of water or life in her. Even her visage changed—it became one full of scars. Those scars were extremely terrifying, and every single one was a horrid sight to behold.

Chu Feng's heart beat quicker upon seeing her change in state. An unspeakable fury surged forth. He knew this was Lady Piaomiao's true appearance after living for nearly a thousand years. The scars on her face were the evidence left behind by Murong Mingtian's criminal actions.

"*Cough cough cough...* Go. Fuyan, quickly take Chu Feng away from this place," Lady Piaomiao said with a weak voice. In spite of her present state, she was still concerned with Qiushui Fuyan's and Chu Feng's safety.

"Chu Feng, let's go." With one hand supporting Lady Piaomiao, Qiushui Fuyan used the other to pull Chu Feng, and continued flying forward.

"Don't even think of leaving!" A chilly glint flashed in Jiang Qisha's eyes as he raised his hand and threw out a talisman.

The talisman rapidly changed as he flew in the air. As radiance swirled around it, it became a sharp blade dozens of meters long. It slashed through the air, and its might was terrifying. If struck, not to mention Qiushui Fuyan, it would mean an instant death for even Lady Piaomiao.

whoosh

However, when the sharp blade came into contact with the barrier, there was no explosion. As if engulfed by water, it was sucked in.

“This...”

At that instant, even Jiang Qisha’s expression couldn’t help changing. His face, filled with fury before, paled immediately. The chilly glint in his eyes not only disappeared, it was replaced by deep fear.

He couldn’t help but back away. Quickly after, he carefully examined the barrier blocking his way in front of him. After a good while, the fear in his eyes faded away, and instead, his eyes surged with an indescribable excitement. He said, with a smile, “Misty Peak? Some Misty Peak this is... I didn’t think there would be a treasure like this in such a worthless land.”

“How is it? They escaped?” After a moment, someone came flying over—it was Murong Mingtian. He looked at the scene before his eyes, and stared at the squirming barrier. He frowned.

“With this thing in the way, would you be able to catch up?” Jiang Qisha cast his gaze at Murong Mingtian.

“I...” Murong Mingtian felt rather speechless. He was no fool, so he could instantly tell how powerful that barrier was. And especially as a person who had cultivated in the Misty Peak, he knew even more what the world-sealing barrier represented.

“You told me before that this Misty Peak is something from the Ancient Era. Now, I believe your words. Let’s go. Let me see the things left behind in this place,” Jiang Qisha said.

“Should we wait a bit longer? This thing shouldn’t stay here forever,” Murong Mingtian said as he pointed at the barrier.

“Even if it disappears, they are already long gone. However, that old granny used a forbidden technique. Her cultivation will not be retained. Without her here, that woman and brat are two pieces of garbage. What do you need to fear?” Jiang Qisha said.

“Actually... the one I’m truly worried about isn’t Lady Piaomiao, nor Qiushui Fuyan. It’s that boy called Chu Feng. You just don’t know, but that brat is a monster, and his origin is unknown. I have always suspected whether he is also a person that came from the Holy Land of Martialism, like you,” Murong Mingtian said.

“What? Came from the Holy Land of Martialism? Him?”

“Haha, hahaha, hahahaha...”

After hearing those words, Jiang Qisha burst with laughter. Moreover, he laughed very loudly, and very mockingly. Only after a good while did he say, “You think that Chu Feng is qualified to have come from the Holy Land of Martialism?”

Martial God Asura - Chapter 917 - No Escape

MGA: Chapter 917 - No Escape

“Are you certain he isn’t from the Holy Land of Martialism? It’s such a big place, yet you are absolutely certain he isn’t from the Holy Land of Martialism?” Murong Mingtian asked in a probing manner.

“I can guarantee to you that he is not from the Holy Land of Martialism. However, you better not ask me why, because you should not inquire about things I don’t wish to speak of.” A chilly glint emerged into Jiang Qisha’s eyes—he was warning Murong Mingtian.

“Very well, I won’t ask. But this time, it is truly all thanks to you that I could regain this Misty Peak. I will engrave this favour into my heart.” Murong Mingtian laughed as he felt the poor atmosphere and very obsequiously changed the topic.

“Don’t worry. This Misty Peak is yours... but the things inside are not.” Jiang Qisha smiled smugly.

Murong Mingtian's expression changed slightly and a hint of displeasure emerged. However, the displeasure faded in a flash and he continued obsequiously nodding his head.

The smile on Jiang Qisha face became even wider. He said, "Also, you don't need to worry about that Chu Feng, because he will not escape."

"Could it be that you...?" Murong Mingtian seemed to have thought of something.

"I still have three juniors who aren't here. That's because they are staying outside. Although their strength is inferior to mine, since Lady Piaomiao has lost her strength, the rank two Martial King woman alone is no match for my juniors. Any one of them can kill her.

"Besides, didn't you send that old man called Zhan Jiuxiao in their direction as well? You should have anticipated if they were to escape, they would flee in the very same direction, right?" Jiang Qisha said as he pointed in Chu Feng's direction.

Murong Mingtian's complexion was truly a bit distorted now. He hadn't told anyone he left a backup like that, but Jiang Qisha knew. This was beyond his anticipation.

However, he could not refuse to answer Jiang Qisha's question. So, he could only explain with a smile, "Jiuxiao wasn't a part of this mission, but he wanted to come no matter what. Considering that Chu Feng killed his son, I brought him as well.

"But exactly because Chu Feng killed his son, I was afraid he would bear too great of a resentment and lose control of himself and thus attack him rashly. Since he is no match for Lady Piaomiao, he would only be sending his life away if he were to attack out of turn. I might not be able to save him either.

"So, I ordered him to wait outside. I originally planned to have him deal with Chu Feng after capturing him, but I didn't expect what I attempted to avoid occurred nonetheless. Chu Feng and the others truly broke through the surrounding forces and ran in Jiuxiao's direction. Perhaps this is unavoidable destiny. Perhaps the heavens want Jiuxiao to personally avenge his own son."

"Haha, you yourself know exactly what happened.

“However, I’m not concerned with that right now. I’m concerned with the Misty Peak’s treasure.

“You said if I help you break through the Misty Peak’s defensive formation, you would bring me to the entrance towards the treasure. Right now, it’s time to keep your word.” As Jiang Qisha spoke, he went towards the Misty Peak.

Murong Mingtian didn’t stay behind. However, before he moved, a hint of an imperceivable sinister expression flashed past his eyes.

At the very same moment, Qiushui Fuyan was supporting Lady Piaomiao and Chu Feng, fleeing in the distance. Although the barrier could stop Jiang Qisha and the others, she knew very well that its time was limited. She had to leave the area within that time period.

However, Qiushui Fuyan did not blindly flee in a random direction. She clearly knew where to go, as she had always went straight and did not make any turns.

Chu Feng’s emotions were very complicated at that instant. He felt as if there were a large boulder pressing on his chest. It was extremely heavy, and could nearly crush his chest flat.

His lovers and his brothers were in the hands of his enemy. Who knew what sort of torture they were about to face. Who knew if they were still alive now.

Yet, at present, he was escaping, and he was even escaping with the help of another person. Not to mention protecting his lovers and brothers, he didn’t even have the ability to escape on his own.

He felt hatred. Extreme hatred. Not towards others, but towards himself. He hated how weak he was.

“Chu Feng, it’s not the time to blame yourself. There are some things in life that must be faced. Without experiencing sufficient setbacks, how can one truly grow? None of the single peak expert in this world have been swimmingly going through life. Which one hasn’t experienced unendurable sufferings that ordinary people could not bear, all in order to become a supreme individual?” Eggy consoled, knowing what Chu Feng felt.

Chu Feng did not reply. He understood that, but at a time like this, his emotions were not something that could be calmed with some reasoning.

“Chu Feng, if you want to throw away your life, I can accompany you. Who cares if they come from the Holy Land of Martialism or wherever. Go there, and release the other World Spirit sealed in the gate and destroy everything. If they don’t want you to live well, then none of them should even think of living either,” Eggy said again.

“No. Someone left that World Spirit inside me because they want me to tame it. They want me to borrow its power, not to destroy myself with it. If I truly use it and destroy everything, then I will have disappointed that person’s intentions.” Chu Feng shook his head.

“If you know that, then great. Get yourself together. No matter if it’s Zi Ling, Su Rou, Su Mei, Zhang Tianyi, or Jiang Wushang, they wouldn’t want to see you in this state. They feel honoured for you. They feel pride for you. They are waiting for you to save them. You cannot lose your spirit and lose your intent to fight,” Eggy said.

“Eggy, thank you. You don’t need to worry about me. I won’t destroy my future. The reason I chose to escape with Lady Piaomiao and Qiushui Fuyan is so I can one day slaughter my way back,” Chu Feng replied.

“This is the Chu Feng I know. No matter which world it is, those who wish to accomplish great things should not bother with the minor things. Not only must you be cruel to enemies, you must be cruel to yourself—that includes the ones close to you.” Eggy heaved a sigh of relief. She was truly worried Chu Feng would be unable to jump over this hurdle of Zi Ling and the others being captured, which would have affected his future.

As for Chu Feng, he could naturally feel Eggy’s good intentions. That girl truly thought for him in every area. He had to admit that Eggy’s concern made Chu Feng feel a trace of warmth amidst extreme chaos and depression.

“Crap.” But suddenly, Chu Feng’s pupils shrank. He quickly sent a mental message to Qiushui Fuyan, saying, “Senior Qiushui, quickly turn around! There’s a rank three Martial King in front blocking our way!”

“What?” Qiushui Fuyan felt rather surprised. In order to avoid any unexpected situations, she too had cast her Spirit power to maximum distance in order to observe her surroundings. However, she did not discover any anomalies.

But even so, she listened to Chu Feng’s instructions. She quickly turned around and flew in another direction.

BOOM— However, just as Qiushui Fuyan turned around, a boundless might erupted from afar. The aura of a rank three Martial King came suppressing forth.

At the same time, a voice filled with resentment and rage exploded like thunder.

“CHU FENG, YOU WILL NOT ESCAPE TODAY!”

Martial God Asura - Chapter 918 - Who Is It?

MGA: Chapter 918 - Who Is It?

A boundless aura swept over from one side, and it formed a surrounding dome. Even Qiushui Fuyan could not withstand such an aura and her path was instantly sealed off.

“It’s a rank three Martial King?” Qiushui Fuyan tightly furrowed her brows, panic emerging into her eyes. She could feel the strength of their opponent from his aura—rank three Martial King. That was not an existence she could deal with.

When Qiushui Fuyan looked at Lady Piaomiao, she discovered Lady Piaomiao was now unconscious, and her aura was becoming weaker and weaker. Her survival itself was uncertain, so Qiushui Fuyan simply could not hope for her to help.

“I’ve been too careless! I didn’t think Murong Mingtian would expect us to escape this way. He definitely also knows there’s a Teleportation Array in this direction.

“Ahh... Does this mean even the heavens wishes for our demise?”

Qiushui Fuyan no longer attempted to escape, because she had no strength to escape. She knew she simply *could not* escape. Helplessness and despair filled her beautiful face.

As for Chu Feng, at that moment, he could only stand by Qiushui Fuyan’s side. Even she felt enormous pressure, so naturally, the pressure he felt was even greater.

“Chu Feng, do you know who I am?”

Finally, within the surging might, an old man's body appeared. He had black hair, and his visage was brimming with fury. A pair of livid eyes were fiercely glaring at Chu Feng. That gaze made him seem as if he wanted to drink his blood and eat his flesh.

After seeing that person, Chu Feng frowned slightly because no matter his cultivation or his face, they pointed him towards one person. So, Chu Feng said very calmly, "You are Zhan Feng's father, the Second Immortal of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, Zhan Jiuxiao."

"Since you know who I am, swiftly kneel!" Zhan Jiuxiao furiously roared.

"Kneel? If I kneel, will you let us go?" Chu Feng returned with a question and a sneer.

"Let you go? Even if you kowtow a million times, it will not bring my son back to life! I will never forgive you! I will skin you alive, tear out your tendons, otherwise the hatred in my heart cannot be pacified!" Zhan Jiuxiao said as he gritted his teeth.

"What? Zhan Feng died?" Chu Feng felt rather surprised.

Back then, in the Depraved Valley, Chu Feng had indeed crippled Zhan Feng, but he didn't kill him. Moreover, from what he knew, he was brought back as quick as possible to the Immortal Execution Archipelago by their experts. He should have left the Depraved Valley already, and he shouldn't have experienced the battle that subsequently came, and thus, he shouldn't have died.

"You crippled my son. He felt there was no honour in living, so he ended his own life and died within the family. This is all because of you. You killed him! Kneel!" Zhan Jiuxiao became even angrier as he spoke of Zhan Feng's death.

"Hoh. Zhan Feng was crippled because his skills were inadequate. He could not continue living, and so committed suicide. What the hell does that have to do with me?

"Besides, since you plan to torture me regardless if I kneel or not, why should I kneel?" Chu Feng coldly smiled. He looked at Zhan Jiuxiao as if he were looking at a fool.

“Kneel! You must kneel! You kneel not for me, but for my son!” Zhan Jiuxiao waved his sleeve. A one-foot wide three-foot long wooden tablet appeared in his hand.

It was a spirit tablet. On it there was a name—Zhan Feng, who Chu Feng crippled on the day at the Depraved Valley.

“He... is unqualified for my kneeling. You... are also unqualified,” Chu Feng said indifferently.

“There is no room for discussion.” But just at that moment, Zhan Jiuxiao coldly snorted. A boundless pressure then descended from the sky.

“Mm—” A painful expression emerged on Qiushui Fuyan’s face. She was bearing an enormous pressure.

“If you kneel, I’ll give them a quick death. If you don’t kneel, I’ll torture them until they die. Will you kneel or not?!” Zhan Jiuxiao furiously shouted.

Chu Feng hesitated, but after an instant of hesitation, his knees started bending slightly. He was going to kneel on his own accord.

Although he himself could endure torment, he could not allow Qiushui Fuyan and Lady Piaomiao to be tortured due to him. Thus, he had no choice but to kneel.

“Chu Feng, don’t kneel. Since we will die regardless, why receive such humiliation?”

“Torment? Hoh. I, Qiushui Fuyan, have gone through all sorts of pain. Will I fear his measly torture?” However, Qiushui Fuyan stopped him.

“You’re looking to die!” Zhan Jiuxiao was incensed at Qiushui Fuyan’s prevention. He willed his Martial power to become several half-moon shaped blades as gorgeous lights shone. The blades were no bigger than a finger, but had an unstoppable destructive power.

whoosh whoosh whoosh

At that moment, those blades had already been sent out. With swishing sounds through the air, they flew straight towards Qiushui Fuyan. Although the positions they were aimed at would not lead to fatal injuries, if struck, a

large chunk of flesh would most definitely be cut away. Zhan Jiuxiao was truly sinister—he wanted to cut off the flesh of a beauty like Qiushui Fuyan.

“Dammit.” Qiushui Fuyan wanted to counterattack, but she could do nothing about Zhan Jiuxiao’s pressure. It was like a formless rope as it tied around her, preventing any movement. She didn’t even have the strength to use her Martial power.

She, as a rank two Martial King, simply stood no chance against Zhan Jiuxiao, a rank three Martial King.

“Damn.”

A hint of chilliness flashed past Chu Feng’s eyes. He flipped his palm, and the Royal Armament Silver Dragon Spear appeared within his hand. At the same time, his body lit up with lightning. His aura rose to rank six Martial Lord from rank five Martial Lord.

Simultaneously, he used the Black Tortoise Armour Technique, and the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique appeared beneath his feet as well. With spear in hand, Chu Feng stood before Qiushui Fuyan. He wanted to block that attack for Qiushui Fuyan with everything he had.

“Chu Feng, dodge!” Qiushui Fuyan howled. She clearly understood the power within an attack from a rank three Martial King. Even if Chu Feng used every single technique he possessed, he would be unable to stop it.

“A mantis trying to stop a chariot. However, even if you want to die, it won’t be that easy.” Zhan Jiuxiao coldly snorted. His fingers moved slightly, and the several blades changed directions, avoiding Chu Feng’s fatal areas and instead towards his flesh.

If struck, there would be nothing resembling Chu Feng, but he would absolutely not die.

Chu Feng had closed his eyes. Actually, he knew very well he stood no chance against Zhan Jiuxiao’s attack. However, Zhan Jiuxiao wouldn’t kill him so easily, because he wouldn’t let him die so easily. He would only torture him—fiercely torture him. So, as long as he stood in front of Qiushui Fuyan, he could temporarily prevent her from harm.

bang bang bang bang bang bang

But just at that moment, the several blades exploded. The shock waves from the explosions vanished as well, and didn't harm Chu Feng in any way.

"Who?" Zhan Jiuxiao's expression changed greatly at such a change. He swept his furious gaze at his surroundings.

Chu Feng also opened his eyes, and looked together with Qiushui Fuyan. Chu Feng found this person, and he focused his gaze closely in the south.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 919 - Encountering Tantai Xue Again

MGA: Chapter 919 - Encountering Tantai Xue Again

Before Chu Feng's gaze, a certain space in the south started squirming. Very soon, the figure of a beautiful person slowly came into view, appearing in their line of sight.

It was a woman. She wore a white dress, but one could not see her face because on her head, she wore a veil.

"It's her?" Chu Feng couldn't help being taken aback, because he recognized her. She was the mysterious person who defeated the Third Immortal in the Burning Heaven Church, Tantai Xue.

Chu Feng felt very surprised. He didn't understand why Tantai Xue appeared in this place, and why she had saved him.

But at the same time, he secretly rejoiced. Although Tantai Xue's origin was mysterious, she was powerful. If it were her, perhaps she could fight off Zhan Jiuxiao.

"Who are you?" Zhan Jiuxiao frowned as he examined Tantai Xue gravely.

He discovered that the woman nearby was really not simple at all. Clearly, she was only a rank nine Martial Lord, but she had stopped his attacks without even making a sound. That was not something an ordinary person could do. At least, her act alone meant her strength was outstanding.

"You can view me as a passerby, but in reality, I am the one who will kill you." Tantai Xue spoke. Her words were indifferent, but their chilliness was oppressing.

“Kill me? A girl like you wants to kill me?” Zhan Jiuxiao was furious. Although he discovered this person was not simple at all, he did not believe she could defeat him. After all, no matter what one said, she was only a rank nine Martial Lord. He, on the other hand, was a rank three Martial King.

With fury striking his heart, Zhan Jiuxiao attacked immediately. Boundless Martial power concentrated in one area, and became a ferocious wild beast. That beast had a very peculiar appearance—it was the appearance of a mountainous fist. Though a fist, it still had four limbs and pointed teeth.

That was not a normal martial skill—it was a rank nine martial skill. Moreover, when cast by Zhan Jiuxiao, a rank three Martial King, he could truly be said to have utilized its power fully. The destructive strength it contained would easily destroy a region of land.

Not to mention Chu Feng, even Qiushui Fuyan couldn't help deeply gasping at that attack. She knew very well if that martial skill were sent towards Chu Feng and her, both of them would die. They would have no chance to survive. Even Lady Piaomiao, right now, would be eradicated.

However, Tantai Xue remained calm and indifferent. She didn't dodge, and instead, let out a disdainful sneer from her veil, “Actually, if I want to kill you, I don't even have to do it myself.”

hmm

After speaking, a ripple came from the inside of Tantai Xue's body. At the same time, a Spirit Formation gate appeared in front of her—it was a World Spirit Gate.

At the same time it emerged, a figure rushed out—a World Spirit. It was humanoid, but extremely enormous. Its appearance was akin to a flower—it was female. However, the demeanor she had made herself seem holy, like something that could not be desecrated.

From her beautiful appearance and sacred bearing—it was, without a doubt, a World Spirit from the Fairy Spirit World.

Although that Fairy World Spirit had a pretty countenance, she was very fiercely clad. On her body, she wore golden armour, and as she stood there, she held in her hands a golden bident. She looked like a majestic and undefeated female general.

When the destructive rank nine martial skill came over like a storm, she wave the golden bident in her hand. Not only did it pierce through the martial skill beast, it blew it up.

“What a powerful World Spirit!” Chu Feng and Qiushui Fuyan with both shocked at that. That World Spirit didn’t just come from the Fairy Spirit World, her aura was of a rank three Martial King.

Tantai Xue, as a rank nine Martial Lord, had a rank three Martial King World Spirit!

“How is this possible? You—How is this possible?!” Zhan Jiuxiao’s complexion changed greatly. He, also a World Spiritist, truly did not dare to believe Tantai Xue, a Martial Lord, could have a rank three Martial King World Spirit.

Most importantly, he felt an unfathomably powerful pressure from that World Spirit—her strength was actually above his own.

“Those who dare disrespect my master dies!” A chilly glint flashed in the World Spirit’s eyes. Bloodlust rose, and with the golden bident in hand, she attacked Zhan Jiuxiao.

He didn’t dare to hesitate. Flipping his wrist, a three-meter long blade appeared. It was red, and fiery runes were engraved all over it—it was a Royal Armament.

With Royal Armament in hand, Zhan Jiuxiao’s aura rose significantly. Then, with the wave of his blade, and a sound of flames whooshing in the air, a sea of fire emerged before him and surged towards the World Spirit.

boom However, the World Spirit was really too fierce. When she wielded the bident, she cut the raging flames apart. Moreover, in a blink, she arrived right in front of Zhan Jiuxiao.

“Dammit!” Zhan Jiuxiao could not remain collected when he saw the ineffectiveness of the Royal Armament’s attack. He turned around, and wanted to escape.

“Where do you think you’re going? Hand over your life.”

The flying World Spirit was unforgiving. When she made a step, the air around her squirmed and she disappeared.

When she reappeared, she was behind Zhan Jiuxiao. Moreover, the bident in her hands was merciless as it stabbed towards Zhan Jiuxiao. She was truly going to take his life.

“Spirit Destruction Talisman!”

boom

But out of the blue, a talisman soundlessly appeared above the World Spirit and in the instant it appeared, it exploded.

“Ahh!”

The explosion of the talisman sent out an odd shock wave. When it passed through the World Spirit’s body, she let out a cry, as if heavily injured, and was forced back. She only stabilized herself after several miles through the air.

Coincident with the World Spirit being struck back was the emergence of a person in the air. He stood beside Zhan Jiuxiao.

It was a young man. He wore a robe of talismans, and a string of beads on his neck. It was a rank one Martial King.

Chu Feng recognized that person—it was someone from the same sect as Jiang Qisha. Back then, in the Gale Plains, he was one of the two mysterious young men who saved Murong Xun and the Sixth Immortal.

“Haha, I had planned, by the order of Senior, to guard the outside and take care of some fishes that escaped the net, but I didn’t expect to receive such an unexpected harvest and caught you!” That person was very excited at that moment; however, he did not even take a glimpse at Chu Feng and Qiushui Fuyan. Instead, with bright eyes, he stared at Tantai Xue, as if he had discovered a treasure.

“Kuang Bainian, that’s quite the words you have there! Caught me? When have you caught me?”

Tantai Xue mocking smiled. From their words, Chu Feng could tell that they knew each other already. Otherwise, she wouldn’t have known his name.

“Witch, less rubbish! Quickly hand that thing over to me, and I’ll leave you with an undamaged corpse and give you a quick death.” A chilly glint flashed past Kuang Bainian’s eyes as he pointed at Tantai Xue and furiously shouted.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 920 - Confrontation of Monsters

MGA: Chapter 920 - Confrontation of Monsters

“And if I don’t?” Tantai Xue indifferently replied, her tone filled with disdain.

“If you don’t, I’ll let you know what it feels like to yearn for death.” Kuang Bainian’s complexion suddenly turned cold. He flipped his palm, and several hundred talisman left his hand.

After they shot out, the runes on the talismans began squirming and changing. The entire group of talismans shone with brilliance, and transformed into several hundreds of skeletal monsters.

Those monsters held two blades in their hands, and a talisman was stuck on each of their foreheads. The aura every single one exuded was even stronger than Kuang Bainian’s own—these were several hundred rank two Martial King skeletons.

“Heavens, this...” Zhan Jiuxiao couldn’t help deeply gasping at that scene.

Kuang Bainian was merely a rank one Martial King, yet he was able to summon so many rank two Martial King monsters in such a casual manner. One had to admit that this technique truly did make one sigh in admiration.

“As I thought, their strength is very exceptional. None of them are even relatively weaker than me. Moreover, the techniques they grasp are something no one in the Eastern Sea Region possess.

“It seems that You Mingdeng’s choice to avoid them was correct.” Chu Feng couldn’t help but recall the scene in the Gale Plains.

You Mingdeng, a grand Protector of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, a rank four Martial King cultivation expert, was scared by a rank one Martial King and a rank two Martial King, who were both from the Cursed Soil Sect.

You Tonghan and the others had felt very confused, but in hindsight, You Mingdeng must have detected an unfavourable situation which was why he avoided fighting.

You Mingdeng's decision was correct. The several people who came from the Cursed Soil Sect of the Holy Land of Martialism, despite their young age, had techniques so ridiculously powerful. Any one of them could shame the peak experts in the Eastern Sea Region.

The Holy Land of Martialism was indeed a place of brilliance.

"Now, how would you deal with this?" Amidst shock, Chu Feng cast his gaze towards the unperturbed Tantai Xue.

Her cultivation was much weaker than Kuang Bainian's. After all, he was still a rank one Martial King, yet Tantai Xue was still only a Martial Lord.

However, Chu Feng had seen the power of that girl. He knew she must also possess techniques others knew not of, and Chu Feng had also suspected she had come from the Holy Land of Martialism.

After their conversation, Chu Feng was now certain this mysterious but strong woman definitely wasn't a person from the Eastern Sea Region.

So, Chu Feng knew clearly that this was not a simple exchange of blows between two geniuses. It was the confrontation between two monsters from the Holy Land of Martialism.

ao— Just at that moment, the several hundred skeletons made by Kuang Bainian suddenly let out deafening and horrifying roars.

Quickly after, all of the skeletons leapt forward abruptly, and like an inverted meteor, as they swung the double blades in their hands, they flew towards Tantai Xue with a horrifying bearing.

"Who dares to touch my master?!" However, the rank three Martial King World Spirit rushed back.

She was like light as she dashed into the army of skeletons. The bident in her hand was akin to an unstoppable blade; she looked like a mighty and valiant general.

As the bident swept across the air, the skeletons that came into contact with it shattered. This rank three Martial King World Spirit alone instantly destroyed all of the skeletal monsters.

“Spirit Destruction Talisman!” Kuang Bainian frowned, seeing his technique destroyed. Lightly waving his arm, another talisman shot out. It was very strange, and extremely quick. However, it suddenly disappeared as it flew through the air.

whoosh The World Spirit’s eyes lit up upon seeing that and quickly dodged. Indeed, immediately after she dodged, the disappeared talisman exploded in her previous position.

hmm The explosion of the talisman brought forth another strange shock wave. It truly was an odd shock wave. It seemed to be of no threat to humans, but had an unexpected harm to World Spirits.

But the World Spirit preemptively evaded the shock wave this time and was uninjured.

“Such vile and crooked techniques! I shall bring forth retribution!”

The World Spirit already harboured resentment after being struck by the attack before. She didn’t expect Kuang Bainian would dare to use it again! That made her even more furious and irritated. She attacked Kuang Bainian as she wielded her bident.

“Hmph. You’ve got a bit of skill, but I’ve seen through it already. The reason you dare act so arrogant is just because you have a World Spirit like this! It is merely a rank three Martial King from the Fairy Spirit World. Do you truly think you can face me with this?”

Kuang Bainian roared with laughter when he saw the World Spirit’s attack. Then, he willed ten World Spirit Gates to appear in front of him.

When those ten gates appeared, ten figures stepped out—ten World Spirits from the Monster Spirit World. Moreover, all of them also had the aura of a rank three Martial King.

However, there was a difference in strength amongst World Spirits. Although the World Spirits from the Monster Spirit World were powerful, it was evident they were less fierce than those from the Fairy Spirit World. Even though

there were ten rank three Martial King World Spirits, it was still a level inferior to the single World Spirit from the Fairy Spirit World.

whoosh whoosh whoosh whoosh...

But Kuang Bainian seemed to have expected something like that. He flipped his palm, and ten talismans appeared, all of them shooting towards the ten World Spirits' bodies.

hmm...

When those talismans were stuck onto their bodies, radiance shone and a strange power merged with them. At that instant, the initially weak ten World Spirits, now with a peculiar light swirling around them, soared greatly in aura. Every single one of them was not weaker than the Fairy World Spirit.

aoo—

At that instant, the ten World Spirits' confidence was boosted greatly. After a roar, they fought the Fairy World Spirit. They had close coordination, and flawless offense and defense. When they struck, they were the ones who had the initiative as they suppressed the Fairy World Spirit.

"Hmph. You are simply committing suicide by comparing World Spirit techniques with me." At that moment, Kuang Bainian first coldly snorted, then laughed in madness. His laughter was very loud, and very arrogant.

"Powerful. Truly powerful. My friend Kuang Bainian, you've truly widened my horizons." Zhan Jiuxiao couldn't help praising when he saw a scene like that. He truly admired Kuang Bainian's techniques from the bottom of his heart.

Although he was only a rank one Martial King, and typically speaking, Zhan Jiuxiao would look down on him, any one of the ten World Spirits Kuang Bainian summoned could easily kill him. Zhan Jiuxiao had now truly seen Kuang Bainian's strength.

"Hmph. That's of course. When it's about control with World Spirits, who stands a chance against my Cursed Soil Sect?" Kuang Bainian's smile was even smugger after Zhan Jiuxiao's praise.

Tantai Xue was silent at that moment. With a thought, the space around Kuang Bainian and Zhan Jiuxiao began to squirm.

Then, there were a hundred World Spirit Gates that emerged all around them, surrounding them.

When the hundred World Spirit Gates materialized, a hundred figures walked out of the gates.

These were a hundred World Spirit from the Fairy Spirit World. There were both females and males. They too wore golden armour, held golden bidents, and every single one of them was over three meters tall as they exuded a holy aura that didn't belong to this world.

Most importantly, the cultivation of these hundred World Spirits were the exact same as the one before—they were all rank three Martial Kings.

"Kuang Bainian, what did you say just now? I couldn't hear it," Tantai Xue indifferently said.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 921 - Help You

MGA: Chapter 921 - Help You

"This... You..." Seeing the Fairy World Spirits simply flooding towards him, even the greatly arrogant Kuang Bainian now had a great change in expression. He was a bit overwhelmed.

A hundred World Spirits. Actually, at a realm like theirs, that number wasn't much. Even though they were only Gold-cloak World Spiritists, to summon a hundred World Spirits wasn't something difficult. After all, they were Martial Kings.

However, these hundred World Spirits were all rank three Martial Kings! Furthermore, the summoner was still only a rank nine Martial Lord! That, on the other hand, was admittedly rather difficult. If they hadn't personally witnessed such a sight, it'd be something no one would believe.

"Witch, don't think you can defeat me with something just like this. Comparing you and me, you are still far inferior!"

But even so, Kuang Bainian did not retreat. Instead, he furiously let out a shout. The talismans on his robe shone with brilliance, and at that instant, his aura was rapidly soaring.

“Is that so? Then take a careful gaze at who’s the inferior one.” Tantai Xue sneered, then said, “Capture him alive.”

“As you wish.” The hundred Fairy World Spirits responded in unison immediately following Tantai Xue’s command. Simultaneously, golden rays of light shot out from their bodies. Those hundred rays flew into the sky, and became an extraordinary formation that brimmed with golden radiance.

After the appearance of the formation, a boundless pressure came down from above. It was powerful, and both Zhan Jiuxiao and Kuang Bainian stood no chance against it. It was as if they were both tightly bound by a formless rope—thoroughly bound from inside to outside.

“Dammit!!” Kuang Bainian roared in extreme bitterness; however, he had already lost all strength to resist. Even the talismans that were brimming with light dimmed away, returning to their former dull appearance. His aura was now even weaker than before.

whoosh whoosh whoosh

Suddenly, countless strands of light burst out from the formation. They looked like golden whips as they flew down from above and thrashed Kuang Bainian and Zhan Jiuxiao.

bam bam bam bam

Once, twice, ten times, a hundred times, a thousand times. In just an instant, they were whipped several thousand times. Not only were their clothes ripped and destroyed, even their skin was stripped. They were truly mangled, but even so, the whips did not stop. They continued striking them both fiercely.

“Master—” Kuang Bainian’s ten Monster World Spirits were enraged. They turned around and flew over with the aim of saving him.

boom rumble rumble But before they even went close, ten golden bolts of lightning shot out from the boundless formation. They struck the ten World Spirits and crushed them.

Kuang Bainian was livid upon seeing his ten World Spirits instantly killed. He knew very well how much effort he spent to successfully make contracts with those ten World Spirits. “Witch, I am not finished with this! I will—”

bam However, before he finished speaking, a golden whip came flying over, striking his jaw.

whoosh whoosh whoosh After another outburst of fierce whipping, the golden strands of light slid down the formation, and became several chains. Layers upon layers, they tightly bound Kuang Bainian, making him look like a large golden rice dumpling.

“Retrieve.” After tying him up, the golden formation in the sky slowly descended. After enveloping Kuang Bainian, it rapidly shrank, and became a bundle the size of a fist.

One of the World Spirits then handed the bundle with Kuang Bainian sealed inside to Tantai Xue. Only then did they return to their World Spirit Gates and back into Tantai Xue’s body.

However, although those World Spirits easily subdued Kuang Bainian, Chu Feng could tell their complexions were not too well. Even though the formation they created in combination was powerful, it had likely exhausted quite a bit of their strength.

Holding the bundle with Kuang Bainian sealed, Tantai Xue threw it a few times into the air like a small sandbag, then said to Zhan Jiuxiao, “Do you want to live? If you do, hand your Royal Armament over.”

After speaking, not even giving Zhan Jiuxiao a chance to reply, she held out her hand, and amidst a suction force, drew over Zhan Jiuxiao’s golden blade into her hand, and then into her Cosmos Sack.

After putting away Zhan Jiuxiao’s Royal Armament, Tantai Xue said, “Go back and tell Jiang Qisha this: his little junior Kuang Bainian is now in my hands. If he wishes no harm dealt to his junior, tell him to treat his hostages well. If anything happens to those people, even if they lose a single hair, then his little junior will have quite the horrible end to his life.”

“This...” Zhan Jiuxiao hesitated. He seemed as if he was happy because he could survive from such a disaster, yet also bitter because he lost his Royal Armament.

“What the hell are you looking at? Scram!” Tantai Xue coldly shouted when Zhan Jiuxiao remained unmoving.

Only after feeling Tantai Xue's killing intent did Zhan Jiuxiao come to his senses—he was in no position to discuss anything.

So, he quickly turned around, dragging his mutilated body, and limping away towards the Misty Peak. As though afraid Tantai Xue would regret releasing him, he even used his most powerful bodily martial skill. His panicked appearance truly looked quite brutal, and quite pitiful as well.

"Let's go. I'll protect you as you leave this place," Tantai Xue said to Chu Feng after Zhan Jiuxiao was afar.

Before even letting Chu Feng reply, she went forward—Chu Feng and the others were planning to go the very same direction.

Qiushui Fuyan and Chu Feng looked at each other, but didn't say anything and just followed Tantai Xue.

Finally, Tantai Xue stopped above a sea.

Qiushui Fuyan couldn't help be taken aback. The surprise in her eyes became even stronger, because underneath this sea surface was a Teleportation Array. However, it was very hidden—there was a Concealment Formation guarding it. Normal people simply could not discover it, yet Tantai Xue clearly did.

"Why are you helping us?" Chu Feng went up and asked. He had to ask, because he wanted to be certain whether Tantai Xue was an ally or enemy.

"I'm not helping you. Jiang Qisha and the others came to this place only because of me. If it weren't for me, they would have never appeared here, nor would they have joined with the Immortal Execution Archipelago to deal with you.

"One could say it's because of carelessness that I brought a calamity with me. But no matter if it was intentional or not, in the end, this is related to me. I will help you deal with them."

Tantai Xue's tone was very calm, even cold, so cold it made people feel they were a thousand miles away. Although she said she would help Chu Feng, it gave him a very distant feeling.

“You alone will deal with them all?” Chu Feng was shocked. Although Tantai Xue was very strong, so strong she could easily subdue Kuang Bainian and drive away Zhan Jiuxiao, Jiang Qisha was not as simple to deal with as Kuang Bainian. After all, they were separated by three ranks. Besides, in terms of dealing with business, Jiang Qisha was far superior to Kuang Bainian, no matter the method itself or scheming. He was someone extremely difficult to deal with.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 922 - Cursed Soil Seven

MGA: Chapter 922 - Cursed Soil Seven

“Right now, yes, I cannot fight Jiang Qisha, but that may not be so after a few days,” Tantai Xue said very confidently.

Chu Feng’s heart was shaken. Although Tantai Xue’s strength was quite some distance from Jiang Qisha’s, he could tell from her tone that she was not joking. She likely had a fifty-fifty chance of assurance.

She was too powerful—so powerful she was unfathomable.

“Don’t worry, nothing will happen to your friends. Including me, there are five people who have come to the Eastern Sea Region. The other four are called Jiang Qisha, Wu Kunlun, Zhao Yuetian, and Kuang Bainian. All four of them are the disciples of the Cursed Soil Sect.

“In the Cursed Soil Sect, there are seven very special disciples. They are geniuses personally chosen by the patriarch of the Cursed Soil Sect as he travelled through the lands. They are titled the Cursed Soil Seven.

“They are the direct disciples of the patriarch. They hold very high positions, when any disciple in the Cursed Soil Sect—no matter strength or age—sees them, they must pay their respects. Even elders do the same and don’t dare to offend them.

“Everyone knows that the future patriarch of the Cursed Soil Sect will be from one of them. Even those who cannot become the patriarch can become Enforcement Elders who wield great authority. Since the day they entered the Cursed Soil Sect, their future was already fated to become unlimited. They were fated to control the future of the Cursed Soil Sect.

“Jiang Qisha, Wu Kunlun, Zhao Yuetian, and Kuang Bainian are four of the Cursed Soil Seven. So, you should know how important Jiang Qisha’s life is to the Cursed Soil Sect, right?” Tantai Xue asked with a smile.

Chu Feng felt rather shocked. He knew Jiang Qisha and the others came from the Cursed Soil Sect, but he didn’t expect them to hold such high positions. No wonder they were so arrogant and looked down on everything, and no wonder their strength was so superior to others.

They were the elites within elites, the geniuses within geniuses. They were true dragons within men.

“Actually, putting aside position in their sect, Kuang Bainian’s life is still very important to Jiang Qisha and the others. They’ve grown up together since a young age, and to each other they’re like their own very hands and feet. They are very close to one another.

“In their eyes, the lives of the entire Eastern Sea Region is probably less than Kuang Bainian’s. So, threatening Jiang Qisha with Kuang Bainian’s life means he won’t do anything rash.

“As for the Immortal Execution Archipelago, they won’t dare to do anything to your friends with Jiang Qisha there. At least, for each day Kuang Bainian is in my hands, it is a peaceful day for them.” Tantai Xue once again spoke. She could tell that Chu Feng was very worried about Zi Ling and the others.

“Thank you.” Chu Feng clasped his hands and bowed at Tantai Xue. The greatest knot in his heart, the thing he worried about the most, was indeed their safety. After hearing Tantai Xue’s words, his worry had indeed been diminished quite a bit.

He didn’t think Tantai Xue was tricking him. Moreover, he could tell Jiang Qisha was simply using Murong Mingtian and the others. Therefore, it was unlikely he would do anything to Zi Ling and the others based solely on the Immortal Execution Archipelago’s resentment.

Especially after taking his junior hostage, Jiang Qisha would not even scratch them. Like Tantai Xue said, they were safe, at least temporarily.

After thanking, Chu Feng asked, “If I may ask, what sort of force is the Cursed Soil Sect in the Holy Land of Martialism?”

Chu Feng felt that he and the Cursed Soil Sect were fated to become enemies. It was for no other reason but because Jiang Qisha and the others came from that sect. So, he had to familiarize himself with the Cursed Soil Sect.

“A sect that has a Martial Emperor overseeing it. What sort of force do you think it is?” Tantai Xue returned with a question.

“What? Martial Emperor?!” Chu Feng tensed up when he heard those words.

As for Qiushui Fuyan, she couldn’t help deeply gasping as well. She even cried out in surprise, then asked with disbelief, “Martial Emperor? You’re saying in the Holy Land of Martialism, there are truly Martial Emperors?”

No matter the Eastern Sea Region, or the eastern continents, Martial Emperors were legendary existences.

In both regions, the accomplishments of Martial Emperors were innumerable, but no matter which one, they existed only in legends. In this sea region and in this world, the shadow of Martial Emperors had been long gone. It was a legend and a limit that current cultivators could not reach.

So, to the people in the Eastern Sea Region, a Martial Emperor was simply god.

Godlike characters existing in the Holy Land of Martialism naturally made one shocked.

“Of course there are Martial Emperors, but even in the Holy Land of Martialism, there are not many. The sects that do have Martial Emperors are famous and powerful forces in the entire Holy Land of Martialism.

“Now, you should know what sort of force the Cursed Soil Sect is, right?” Tantai Xue calmly smiled, then added, “Chu Feng, I know what you’re thinking. You must be planning to take revenge on the Cursed Soil Sect, right?”

Chu Feng frowned slightly. He indeed had such a plan, but he didn’t expect Tantai Xue to have guessed it. He felt more and more that this woman was too horrifying. Simply nothing could be hidden from her.

“I’ve heard of what you’ve done. I know you are a person who will always take revenge.

“But don’t blame me for not reminding you: the Cursed Soil Sect isn’t the Immortal Execution Archipelago, and the Holy Land of Martialism isn’t the Eastern Sea Region. You may be able to do whatever you wish to in the Eastern Sea Region, but if you aim to do the same in the Holy Land of Martialism, you must first consider your strength.

“Perhaps you are the most dazzling star in the Eastern Sea Region, but there are countless people like you in the Holy Land of Martialism.

“However, most of those who dare to act arrogant and rash with their slight bits of talent and fearlessness do not end up well,” Tantai Xue said with a sneer. Within her tone, there was a bit of mocking.

“Thank you for your kind intentions. I will consider them.” Chu Feng clasped his fists. Although Tantai Xue’s words were not too pleasant to hear, Chu Feng knew it was a kind reminder. So, he was not angry, and with a bit of gratitude, he asked, “I’m wondering... when will you prepare to make your move towards Jiang Qisha and the others?”

“What? You want to help me?

“There’s no need. With your cultivation, you will be of no use. However, if you want to watch the show, you are free to come.

“Carry this with you. When it’s time, I will come find you.” As Tantai Xue spoke, she gave an exquisite jade ornament to Chu Feng.

He knew it was something that indicated his location. On it there was likely Tantai Xue’s mark. She would be able to find him as long as he kept it on.

“Then I’ll await your news,” Chu Feng said to Tantai Xue after putting the jade ornament away.

Actually, he still had many questions he wanted to ask Tantai Xue; however, he was unfamiliar with her, and furthermore, the present circumstances were urgent, and this wasn’t the place to chat. Seeing Tantai Xue didn’t prepare to walk with them, Chu Feng endured his curiosity and asked no more questions, choosing to quickly leave instead.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 923 - Hostility

MGA: Chapter 923 - Hostility

“Lady Tantai, great favours need not thanked by words. The grace you have showed us today will definitely be repaid in the future.” Qiushui Fuyan also bowed towards Tantai Xue.

Only after doing so did she bring Chu Feng and turn around. They prepared to enter the sea, through the Teleportation Array, and leave this perilous zone.

“Wait.” But just when they prepared to leave, Tantai Xue stopped them. She looked at Chu Feng and said, “Chu Feng, I have a question I want to ask you. I hope you can answer with the truth.”

“Lady Tantai, please ask,” Chu Feng politely said.

“In the Winter Plains, someone initiated a phenomenon in the sky. Nearly everyone in the Winter Plains saw that frightening scene.

“It just so happened that you were also in the Winter Plains back then. If I’m not mistaken, the person who initiated that sight was you, right?” Tantai Xue asked.

“Mm. Lady Tantai, that was me.” Chu Feng nodded, and did not deny.

First of all, if Chu Feng denied it, there was quite a big possibility Tantai Xue would see through it. If she were made angry and then refused to help him deal with Jiang Qisha, that would be quite bad.

Moreover, Chu Feng had no need to deny. He could feel despite having an extremely cold and distant exterior, Tantai Xue did not possess any enmity towards him. His strength, to Tantai Xue, was of no significance. She was likely merely curious.

“It’s nothing, you can go now.” Indeed, after hearing Chu Feng’s response, Tantai Xue satisfiedly nodded her head. One could thus see she had already known it was Chu Feng who made the sight appear. The reason she asked was just because she wanted Chu Feng’s trust.

“Lady Tantai, we can actually leave together through the Teleportation Array beneath. We can help you go wherever you want to,” Qiushui Fuyan said.

“No need, you can go.” Tantai Xue waved her hand, then no longer looked at Chu Feng and Qiushui Fuyan. Her attitude was very cold.

Qiushui Fuyan didn’t say anything more after that. Turning around, she jumped into the sea, and Chu Feng closely followed as he leapt into the sea with surging waves.

In the end, with Qiushui Fuyan leading the way, they arrived in front of a huge underwater rock. After deactivating the formation, the rock became a Teleportation Array.

It was really too old, so there were not many places it could transport them to. Moreover, normal people would not know how to use it, but Qiushui Fuyan clearly knew how.

After some adjustments, it slowly began activating. Chu Feng, Qiushui Fuyan, and the fainted Lady Piaomiao entered it together, and along with some changes occurring to the Teleportation Array, they disappeared.

After they left, the Teleportation Array slowly transformed and in the end, returned to its state of a huge rock. The sea also returned to its former tranquility.

Above the sea, Tantai Xue was looking at the bottom. After knowing that Chu Feng and Qiushui Fuyan had safely left, she leapt forward and disappeared. No one knew where she went.

During the few days after Chu Feng and the others left, the army of the Immortal Execution Archipelago entered the Misty Peak. They not only took over, they started extensive constructions outside the Misty Peak such as building floating palaces. One could see that they were truly preparing to make this their headquarters.

At that moment, on the apex of a peak, there was a strange palace. Within it came sounds akin to the howling of wolves and ghosts. Some figures with fierce appearances and seemed like Consciousnesses were running all about. Those were not simple organisms—they were demons who had lost their physical body.

Those demons unceasingly let out ear-piercing howls. An indescribable eerie aura enveloped the entire palace.

However, within such a horrifying palace, Murong Mingtian was standing in the center. At that moment, he felt not the slightest trace of fear. Instead, his eyes were red, and when he widened his mouth, a boundless suction power surged forth. Several demons, amidst shrieks, were drawn into his mouth. He was actually absorbing the terrifying demons floating about in the palace.

Although those demons were powerful, they stood no chance against Murong Mingtian and could only allow themselves to be sucked into his stomach.

When one demon after the other entered, Murong Mingtian's aura also started to rise rapidly. He was using a special Mysterious Technique to refine those demon. When he refined the final one, he had successfully made a breakthrough in cultivation—he became a rank seven Martial King.

"Ancestor, congratulations on becoming a rank seven Martial King! You are another step closer to becoming a Martial Emperor," Murong Xun said in both admiration and excitement as he walked up from his position of observation.

"It's just rank seven Martial King. It is still too far from Martial Emperor.

"Lady Piaomiao must have been killing the demons sealed in this place in these several hundred years, so that's why there are far too few in this place. Otherwise, I might have even become a rank eight Martial King," Murong Mingtian said with a bit of pity.

"That Lady Piaomiao should be damned. She destroyed Ancestor's good occasion back then, and she once again destroyed your good occasion now," Murong Xun said as he gritted his teeth.

"No matter. 'There is no fear in running out of wood if a forest is left alive'. I have refined the demons sealed in this place, and not only has my cultivation been raised, my life has been prolonged. There will be no issue to cultivate for another hundred years.

"Xun'er, you've seen it, right? This is the benefit of the Soul Devouring Demonic Technique. But sadly, it has very high bodily requirements. Not everyone can cultivate this.

"You are the only person, other than me, in the Murong family who can cultivate this Soul Devouring Demonic Technique. Don't fail me!" Murong Mingtian said with a smile.

“Ancestor, don’t worry. I will not disappoint your hopes,” Murong Xun guaranteed solemnly.

“Ancestor, you’ve succeeded?” Just at that moment, Murong Niekong walked in. After feeling Murong Mingtian’s aura, he too felt elated.

“Mm.” Murong Mingtian nodded, then asked, “How’s Jiang Qisha? Is he still in the Road of Immortalization?”

“Ancestor, Jiang Qisha has already come out. He didn’t die, but from his complexion, he likely hasn’t gotten anything,” Murong Niekong replied.

“Hmph. Which of the people who guard the Misty Peak isn’t a person even the heavens take pride in? In history, so many guardians had tried the Road of Immortalization. If there were any treasures that could be taken, they would have been taken already. How could it possibly be Jiang Qisha’s turn? He is already quite lucky, since he didn’t die inside,” Murong Mingtian sneered.

“However, that Jiang Qisha is not easy to deal with. After helping us take this Misty Peak, he hasn’t gotten anything. He must be feeling bitter right now. Would he turn his annoyance into rage, and feel that we’re tricking him? Will he make an enemy out of us because of this?” Murong Niekong said worriedly.

“Jiang Qisha is no fool, but exactly because he’s smart, he must have detected there truly is a treasure within the Road of Immortalization after entering. However, because of his own lack of abilities, he can’t get his hands on it. Who can that be blamed on?

“Besides, he is no longer of any use. Even if he doesn’t make an enemy out of us, I will not let them safely leave.” A hint of fierceness flashed into Murong Mingtian’s eyes.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 924 - Each Possess Their Own Plans

MGA: Chapter 924 - Each Possess Their Own Plans

“Ancestor, do you mean you’re going to kill Jiang Qisha and the others?” Murong Niekong asked with a bit of surprise.

“They must die. Everything in the Misty Peak is mine. Even if I’m not here in the future, this Misty Peak must be succeeded by you. I cannot allow anyone else to take over this place.

“Jiang Qisha and the others come from the Holy Land of Martialism. At that place, there are all sorts of odd people. It is the gathering place of true experts. Even if Jiang Qisha cannot make his way through the Road of Immortalization, it doesn’t mean that others from the Holy Land of Martialism cannot.

“If Jiang Qisha and the others spread the news that there’s something from the Ancient Era in the Eastern Sea Region, then the Misty Peak will no longer belong to us,” Murong Mingtian said.

“But Ancestor, that Jiang Qisha doesn’t seem to be so easy to deal with. Should we take time to discuss and plan this out?” Murong Niekong was bit worried. After all, they had seen Jiang Qisha’s techniques before.

“It doesn’t matter how strong he is—he’s only a rank four Martial King. Yet, right now, I’m a rank seven Martial King. Do you think I’ll be afraid of him? Besides, I won’t attack him directly. First, I’ll test his strength,” Murong Mingtian said.

“Ancestor, how will you do that?” Murong Niekong asked.

“Isn’t he unwilling to hand Zi Ling and the others over to us because his junior was caught? Now, I will use that as the excuse to meet with Jiang Qisha and see how strong he is.” As Murong Mingtian spoke, he walked towards the exit.

At that moment, there were many people standing outside. The Second Immortal and other peak experts were awaiting.

Murong Mingtian didn’t say anything after seeing them. He continued walking straight down the peak, and as for the experts of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, they followed him in order and also went down the peak.

At that moment, Jiang Qisha had already returned to his palace. It was Lady Piaomiao’s, but now, it had become his and his brothers’ residence.

Within that palace, there were two firm but transparent Spirit Formation cages. One was rather large, and there were many people imprisoned within it. All of

them were the people from the Misty Peak: Zhang Tianyi, Jiang Wushang, Yan Ruyu, Chun Wu, Xia Yu, Qiu Zhu, Dong Xue, and also some elders.

On the other cage, it was smaller, but also much more comfortable. There were chairs, tables, beds, sheets, and there were only three people locked in here—three young women whose appearances were like flowers and had exceptional beauty: Zi Ling, Su Rou, and Su Mei.

At that moment, they were not only uninjured, there was not even a scratch on them. There were even fresh fruits and delicious snacks on the table. Though they were imprisoned, they were not treated poorly.

“Senior Jiang, do you think the so-called Road of Immortalization is merely a scheme? Perhaps there isn’t any treasure inside, and that Murong Mingtian is tricking us?” asked one of the men furiously. He was Wu Kunlun, also a genius disciple of the Cursed Soil Sect. At that moment, he was a rank three Martial King.

“Yeah! Senior, that Murong Mingtian is simply an old cunning fox. If we don’t give him a lesson, he won’t speak the truth,” said another rank two Martial King. He was Zhao Yuetian—he was the one who appeared at the Gale Plains with Kuang Bainian.

“No, he didn’t trick me. There is indeed treasure inside the Road of Immortalization. It could even be said that the entire Misty Peak is a huge treasure. It’s just not that easy to acquire them,” Jiang Qisha said.

“Are there truly treasures? What sort of treasures?” Wu Kunlun’s and Zhao Yuetian’s expressions turned to joy as they couldn’t help themselves from asking Jiang Qisha.

“I don’t know the specifics, but from my observations, this Misty Peak is truly not simple. It is indeed something from the Ancient Era.

“Nothing from the Ancient Era is simple. Since this Misty Peak is so undamaged and complete, it is even less simple. It’s not impossible for there to be an Imperial Armament or even more precious things inside,” Jiang Qisha said with a smile, after drinking some tea. Although he returned with empty hands, his mood was actually quite good.

“What? Imperial Armament?

“In such a lowly place, there’s an Imperial Armament?!”

“Haha, just now, your face was not too encouraging when you returned and we even thought you were tricked. I didn’t expect there would truly be treasure here, and it’s even an Imperial Armament! This is unbelievable.” Wu Kunlun and Zhao Yuetian were ecstatic when they heard the two words “Imperial Armament”. They knew what sort of thing it was.

“I cannot confirm what it is; it’s just an analogy. But regardless, the treasure is, without a doubt, invaluable. Even in the Holy Land of Martialism, it’s enough to stir up a war. Moreover, I feel that there is not only a single treasure in this place. There is likely also a frightening secret hidden here—a secret from the Ancient Era.

“If my Cursed Soil Sect can thoroughly open this Misty Peak, unravel all its secrets, use them, and pass them down, it’s not impossible for us to become the overlords of the Holy Land of Martialism!” Jiang Qisha said with expectation.

“Doesn’t that mean we’ve done quite a good deed?” Wu Kunlun’s mouth could even crack from his excited grin, and he couldn’t put away his smile.

“Haha, I didn’t think we would inadvertently find a treasure land like this! At first, I even thought we were unlucky, but now, we would truly have to thank that witch,” Zhao Yuetian said with a face of excitement as well.

“Thank her? She stole the Talismanic Soul Stealing Flute, and even captured our junior to threaten us! This witch should be damned. If I capture her, I will defile her, then beat her and skin her alive!” Wu Kunlun said as he gnashed his teeth.

“Yeah! Senior Jiang, right now, our junior is still in the hands of that witch. And since she is so vicious, will she do anything to him?” Zhao Yuetian asked Jiang Qisha with a bit of worry.

“She won’t. If she truly wanted to do something, she would have already. There’s no need for her to use him to threaten us. Moreover, she knows we are coming for her. She can’t even avoid us in time, so why would she look for trouble instead?

“Although I don’t know the specifics, I’m fairly certain that witch is preparing to help that boy called Chu Feng.

“However, that’s perfect for us. Perhaps we can use these people to capture that which,” Jiang Qisha said a bit sinisterly.

“Right. As long as we capture her, we can return. Although we lost Patriarch’s Talismanic Soul Stealing Flute, if we capture her and bring the complete flute back, we may not be punished.

“Moreover, we’ve discovered a treasure from the Ancient Era in the Eastern Sea Region. This is definitely a great deed. Maybe Patriarch will even reward us instead!” Zhao Yuetian’s face was full of excitement.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 925 - Confrontation

MGA: Chapter 925 - Confrontation

“Junior Yue, don’t get happy too soon. She isn’t that easy to deal with,” Wu Kunlun said, extinguishing his flames of excitement. He then asked, “Senior Jiang, what plan to do you have? Why not tell us about it?”

“The witch’s matter still requires long planning. Since there’s still some time until the opening of the Heavenly Road, we just need to deal with her before then.

“But first of all, there are some people visiting us right now. They even want us to give them a lesson!” Jiang Qisha sneered at the enormous palace door. As he spoke, he waved his big sleeve and the shut doors opened with a bang.

At that instant, Wu Kunlun and Zhao Yuetian instinctively knew something was going to happen. They orderly stood behind Jiang Qisha, and with an expressionless face they looked at the outside scenery.

As expected, after a moment, Murong Mingtian appeared. Moreover, behind him followed Murong Niekong, Murong Xun, the Second Immortal, and many other experts of the Immortal Execution Archipelago. They were walking over towards the palace in a grand manner.

Moreover, their current bearing was completely different from before, Murong Mingtian especially. Although he had a smile on his face, there was no longer any of his former obsequiousness.

“My friend Jiang Qisha, you’ve returned! How was it? Have you gotten anything from the Road of Immortalization?” Murong Mingtian said as he laughed after entering the palace.

“Murong Mingtian, why ask when you already know? If I had truly gotten something within the Road of Immortalization, I’m sure you wouldn’t be laughing this happily, right?”

“But don’t worry. Everything here is the Cursed Soil Sect’s. I can take anything I want at any time. There is no rush.

“You, on the other hand, shouldn’t have come here just to give me those useless words, right?” Jiang Qisha wore a light smile on his face. As he spoke, his tone was extremely fierce and didn’t leave any face.

Many people’s complexions from Immortal Execution Archipelago were very distorted, but no one dared to say anything. They just stood behind Murong Mingtian orderly.

They had basically all seen Jiang Qisha’s techniques, and they had personally seen his killing strength and his ability to reverse the situation completely. They had seen him defeat Lady Piaomiao, and they knew the terror of this young man, a rank four Martial King. They didn’t dare to easily offend him.

“Haha, my friend Jiang Qisha, you truly are smart. I also enjoy dealing with intelligent people.

“I have come here today for no other reason but because I want to take Zi Ling away.

“No matter what crime she committed, she is, after all, my Murong family’s fiancée. It is not too appropriate that she is subjected to imprisonment here.” As Murong Mingtian spoke, he cast his gaze towards Zi Ling.

At the same time, Murong Xun’s gaze was also cast towards Zi Ling, his so-called fiancée. Moreover, his pair of eyes were restlessly examining Zi Ling’s perfect body.

He already knew the lovers’ relationship between Chu Feng and Zi Ling. So, from his vicious and concealed lecherous gaze, one could see how he planned to take revenge.

“No, I’m not going with you! I’m not a part of your Murong family. I am Chu Feng’s fiancée,” Zi Ling loudly said.

“Heh, that’s not up to you.” Murong Mingtian sneered, then held out his palm. A burst of powerful suction power then surged out towards Zi Ling. He wanted to destroy the cage that locked Zi Ling.

hmm However, before the power even neared, a ripple appeared. It soundlessly dissipated Murong Mingtian’s attack.

“Jiang Qisha, what are you doing?” Murong Mingtian’s expression did not change as he looked at Jiang Qisha. He knew he was the one who did that.

“Murong Mingtian, it’s not that I’m not giving you this face, but my junior Kuang Bainian is now in the hands of others. That person clearly said nothing can happen to Zi Ling, so thus I must guarantee her safety. It would be better that you leave.” Jiang Qisha very casually waved his hand. He was driving them away.

“Zi Ling is my Murong family’s fiancée. How could I possibly wish to harm her?” Murong Mingtian cunningly argued.

“That may not be so,” Jiang Qisha indifferently said.

“Jiang Qisha, does this mean you don’t trust me?” Murong Mingtian’s expression was a bit unsightly.

“That’s right. I have never trusted you from the very beginning.” Jiang Qisha stood up. He stared at Murong Mingtian with his fierce gaze, and spoke very gravely.

“Jiang Qisha, let me advise you: don’t go too far. I tolerate you again and again only because of my respect towards you as an ally. Don’t think I’m afraid of you,” Murong Mingtian furiously shouted as he pointed at Jiang Qisha.

“Ally? Actually, I forgot to tell you. In my eyes, you are no allies to me. You are mere dogs. Do I have to respect a group of dogs?” Jiang Qisha roared with laughter—it was a very ridiculing laughter.

“Jiang Qisha, you’ve gone too far!” Murong Mingtian was finally enraged. He flipped his wrist, and put into his hand a Royal Armament that shone with light.

He was already powerful as a rank seven Martial King, and in addition to a ruler's bearing from the Royal Armament, the might he now possessed was enough to frighten the world. He was simply unstoppable.

At that instant, layers upon layers of boundless aura because an uncontrollable hurricane, endlessly surging outward from Murong Mingtian's body.

It made the entire palace shake. The countless number of little items decorating the palace started to slide and break. If the palace weren't from the Ancient Era thus giving it its extreme firmness, it would have likely been shattered already by such a powerful might.

"Hoh." However, even though Murong Mingtian looked so powerful, Jiang Qisha was not afraid in the slightest. He sneered, then flipped his palm. A fiery-red halberd appeared within his hand.

hmm What came immediately after its appearance was the release of an extremely horrifying aura. In just an instant, it enveloped the entire palace, and even submerged Murong Mingtian's powerful aura beneath it.

At that very instant, everyone in the palace, other than Jiang Qisha and the others, could feel enormous power. An indescribable pressure pushed onto them, making it difficult to breathe.

Even the Royal Armament in Murong Mingtian's hand was slightly trembling. It, as a Royal Armament, was actually afraid.

Murong Mingtian's expression paled instantly. He once again carefully examined the fiery-red halberd in Jiang Qisha's hand, and the longer he looked, the stronger the fear became in his eyes.

In the end, with the slight wave of his robe, he put away his Royal Armament. At the same time, he also put away his pressure of a rank seven Martial King, and said with a face of shame, "My friend Jiang Qisha, I've been rash just know. Please don't take offense."

Before the confrontation even officially started, Murong Mingtian had already admitted defeat.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 926 - No More Than Dog

MGA: Chapter 926 - No More Than Dog

Jiang Qisha coldly smiled when Murong Mingtian surrendered. As he held the fiery-red halberd, although he was only a rank four Martial King, his aura was even stronger than Murong Mingtian's.

As he stood there, he was like an undefeatable god of war. He had the ability to kill everyone on scene, and he spread fear amongst their hearts.

Suddenly, Jiang Qisha waved the halberd in his hand. As the entire palace violently trembled, he pointed at Murong Mingtian and shouted, "Murong Mingtian! Respecting the fact that you were a senior, I have always kept a bit of face for you and didn't make things difficult in front of your successors.

"However, when I give you face, you reject it! If I don't make it clear, you forgot who's strong and who's weak. You forget who's the master and who's the slave! You truly think you, a mere rank seven Martial King, can sit equally against my Cursed Soil Sect?"

As Jiang Qisha spoke, he released boundless pressure from his halberd. It was so powerful that even Murong Mingtian's body couldn't help trembling. He only managed to stabilize himself after taking two steps back.

Other than Murong Mingtian, however, the rest of the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago felt their knees go weak. They were forced to kneel on the ground by such strong power, and some were even forced to lie onto the floor. They simply had no strength to rise.

"My friend, Jiang Qisha, please be magnanimous! I was wrong before. I hadn't made my own position clear.

"As long as you give us a chance to start anew, my Immortal Execution Archipelago will be willing to follow your Cursed Soil Sect and do anything for it. We will do everything we can for your benefit, and we will not dare to give any disrespect," Murong Mingtian begged extremely pettily as he quickly bent his waist and bowed.

However, Jiang Qisha just gave an indifferent smile before such a scene. Then, he said, "If you want to live, then kneel, kowtow, and ask for forgiveness. If you make me happy, then I'll give you a chance."

Someone from the Immortal Execution Archipelago furiously shouted, "You want my ancestor to kowtow to you? Don't even think ab—"

boom However, before he even managed to finish speaking, a muffled explosion rang out. That person was turned into a pool of blood.

"You..."

They were surprised and terrified, but there were also some who were enraged. To them, Murong Mingtian was their ancestor. They could throw away dignity, but Murong Mingtian could not. Jiang Qisha's demand to kneel was something they could not tolerate.

"All of you, shut your mouths!" But just at that moment, Murong Mingtian fiercely shouted.

After speaking, he bent his knees and knelt onto the ground. Then, with a face full of sincerity, he said, "My friend Jiang Qisha, I, Murong Mingtian, have been insolent. If you want to kill me or torture me, I have no words of complaint, but please give my successors a chance to live."

Then, he bent over, and powerfully slammed his head onto the ground. He was truly kowtowing and admitting his wrongs.

whoosh But before his head touched the ground, a hand suddenly appeared, holding his head, stopping his downward movement.

When he raised his head, he saw it was Jiang Qisha. At that moment, he had already put away the horrifying halberd, and was looking at Murong Mingtian with a smile. He said, "Murong Mingtian, why did you do it in the first place if you were going to show regret right now? However, since you are genuine, I naturally won't make things difficult for you."

After speaking, Jiang Qisha helped Murong Mingtian up, then walked over to a chair in the palace and sat down. Only then did he wave his hand and say, "All of you, rise."

Although Jiang Qisha had spoken, and he had also put away his boundless pressure, none of the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago rose.

"Everyone, rise," Murong Mingtian said as he turned his head at the crowd.

Only after Murong Mingtian spoke did they rise. At that moment, they were drenched with sweat.

Odd expressions were worn on their faces, but most importantly, their bodies were trembling. Even the master of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, Murong Niekong, was the same. He acted as if he had experienced an extremely brutal war.

“Don’t worry. To outsiders, we are still in a cooperative relationship. You are still the overlord of this Eastern Sea Region.

“However, you must know this well in your hearts. We are not sitting on equal ground. We are your masters.

“If there is a second time, if there’s anyone dares to disrespect their superiors and goes against our words, then I won’t be as polite as today. Understand?” Jiang Qisha spoke in a tone that was akin to a master scolding his servants.

“My friend Jiang Qisha, thank you for your generosity,” Murong Mingtian said as he nodded.

“Leave. Do things well for me, and in the future, I can bring you away from this little place and go to the Holy Land of Martialism to widen your horizons. I can show you the true world of cultivation.” Jiang Qisha casually waved his hand.

Murong Mingtian and the others first bowed, then turned around and left. However, in contrast to the arrogance they entered with, at that moment, they had truly reached the extremities of pettiness.

Everyone from the Immortal Execution Archipelago felt extreme oppression in their hearts, but they could do nothing. No one dared to say anything.

Only when they walked down the peak did Murong Mingtian say, “You must all be very confused why I didn’t start attacking Jiang Qisha and instead just conceded, right?”

“Ancestor, I’m sure you have something in mind,” Murong Niekong said. Murong Xun and the others also nodded in agreement.

In all these years, the reason the Immortal Execution Archipelago developed so smoothly was all because of this ancestor. They put great trust in his decision.

“The armament Jiang Qisha took out just now was not simple at all. It wasn’t just a Royal Armament. It had the same nature as the Demon Sealing Sword—it was able to deter my Royal Armament.

“In the battle between Royal Armament, if there is already one side that’s feared before the battle even begins, then it’ll be an uphill battle. Besides, I cannot be certain that the special Royal Armament is Jiang Qisha’s final trump card.

“In a situation with no assurance, I won’t introduce complete hostility between us, because if I can’t defeat him, not only will I lose my life, all of you will die as well,” Murong Mingtian said.

“Ancestor, what should we do now?” Murong Niekong asked.

“Ahh...” Murong Mingtian heaved a deep sigh, then said one word, “Endure.”

At the same moment, within the palace, Jiang Qisha and the others were standing with faces full of smugness.

“Senior, that Murong Mingtian made a breakthrough to rank seven Martial King, then he showed his true face immediately and dared to attack us! This person cannot stay alive. Why didn’t you just kill them immediately?” Zhao Yuetian and Wu Kunlun asked in confusion.

“If I fight him, naturally I will win. But a rank seven Martial King is no pushover. Even if I can reign victorious, I will still be forced to pay some sort of price.

“Right now, we are facing the same enemy. There’s simply no need to kill each other.

“Besides, in my eyes, he is a dog. Whether this dog is loyal or not, it’s fine as long as he can bite others for me.

“But you must also remember that a dog will eternally be a dog. There’s no need to look at them as if they were human. If, one day, this dog truly dares to bite its master, then we can just kill it and eat its meat.

“Everything is within my grasp. Who stands a chance against us in this weak little Eastern Sea Region? We have only one true opponent—that witch. However, an opponent she may be, but she will not escape my grasp.” Jiang Qisha wore a smug and confident smile on his face.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 927 - The Father of the Holy Daughter

MGA: Chapter 927 - The Father of the Holy Daughter

Jiang Qisha's words were not spoken in private via mental messages. So, nearly everyone within the palace heard them crisp and clear.

"This Jiang Qisha is too terrifying. At such a young age, his thought progress is already so elaborate. I've never had a feeling of safety in his hands. Instead, I feel even more dangerous," Su Mei said a bit worriedly as she sent mental messages.

"He is indeed not a good person at all, but at least temporarily, we are safe in his hands. If Murong Mingtian truly brought us away, Murong Xun wouldn't have let us go," Su Rou replied.

"I heard that you've got a Divine Body?" Just at that moment, Jiang Qisha cast his gaze towards Zi Ling. Moreover, with a light smile, he walked towards her.

"Hoh. Divine Body? It's the first time that I've seen such a weak Divine Body. She's even less than trash." Zhao Yuetian also walked over and he looked at Zi Ling with a face full of disdain.

However, after he carefully examining Zi Ling's countenance, he curled his lips vilely. He said with an odd smile, "Although her cultivation's a bit weak, she doesn't look too bad. This face is truly the most beautiful I've ever seen."

As he spoke, Zhao Yuetian looked at Jiang Qisha, then said, "Senior, how about you take this girl? Although she's very weak, with that face alone, you can invoke quite a few people's admiration if you bring her back."

"Junior Zhao, Senior Jiang is not someone who greeds over beauty. If you ask me, *you* want to take this Zi Ling back, right?" Wu Kunlun walked over, then said to Jiang Qisha, "Senior, I've asked around, and she is indeed a Divine Body. When she was born, the sight she triggered had caused quite the scene. Many people had personally witnessed it, so the fact that she's a Divine Body should be true.

"However, I just don't know why her aptitude in cultivation is this weak. She's the weakest out of all these people."

“The exact reason why can be known through an examination.” As Jiang Qisha spoke, she willed a door to open in the Spirit Formation cage that locked Zi Ling and the others. He then strode in.

“What are you doing? Stay away from my Sister Zi Ling!” Su Rou and Su Mei leapt forth, wanting to stop Jiang Qisha.

However, there was such a huge distance in cultivation between these two groups. How could the two of them possibly stop him? In the instant they started moving they were enveloped by Jiang Qisha’s aura, and were completely frozen. At the same time, Jiang Qisha had grabbed Zi Ling’s wrist as he began seriously observing her.

“Hahaha, the heavens are helping me, the heavens are helping me! Murong Mingtian, you old fox, you’re quite vicious! But sadly, your preparations have been a gift for myself.”

Jiang Qisha let go after a brief moment. On his face, an elated smile emerged. He started loudly laughing, and could not calm himself for quite a while.

Zhao Yuetian and Wu Kunlun felt confused at such an outburst. However, they definitely knew it was something good. So, they asked at the same time, “Senior Jiang, what did you discover?”

“Haha, I cannot leak a divine secret, but in short, this girl is mine.” Jiang Qisha looked once again at Zi Ling. It didn’t seem as if he was looking at a beauty, but instead, at a treasure.

Zi Ling and the others tightly knitted their brows. They knew why he said that. He must have discovered the secret of the Heaven Gripping Pellet, and wanted to take Zi Ling’s power for himself.

Time flew past, and after a blink, several days had elapsed.

Within a certain forest in the Eastern Sea Region, there was a worn out little temple. Inside were Chu Feng, Qiushui Fuyan, and Lady Piaomiao.

Chu Feng and Qiushui Fuyan were in quite a decent state, but worry was worn all over their faces. They looked with extreme anxiousness at Lady Piaomiao who lay on the ground.

Ever since Lady Piaomiao lost consciousness, she had yet to awaken. Moreover, her aura kept on sliding downward. She, initially a rank six Martial King, had now become a rank five Martial King. Her cultivation was shrinking.

Not to mention Chu Feng, even Qiushui Fuyan could do nothing about that. They were out of ideas.

“Sister Fuyan, if this continues, Senior Piaomiao’s cultivation will keep dropping, and it’s likely she won’t be able to survive either. We cannot await her death at a place like this, and we should think of something,” Chu Feng said with concern.

“She’s used a technique she shouldn’t have used, so we can’t do anything about it. There is only one person who can save her. Looking at the time that has passed... He should be arriving soon,” Qiushui Fuyan said.

“Someone’s coming? Who?” Chu Feng asked curiously.

“You know this person,” Qiushui Fuyan said.

“I know him?” Chu Feng was even more puzzled.

Qiushui Fuyan’s expression abruptly changed slightly, then she rubbed the necklace on her neck and she said, “Speak of the devil; he’s here.”

Chu Feng quickly cast his gaze outside the little temple, and as expected, a person soon appeared and quickly flew in.

“Senior Taikou?”

However, after seeing that person, Chu Feng’s expression changed greatly. His eyes were full of surprise, because Chu Feng truly did know that old man. He not only knew him, this person had helped him many times before. He was the powerful and famous person in the Four Seas Academy, Taikou, whose origin was mysterious and whose cultivation was unfathomably deep.

“Fuyan, how’s your mother’s condition?” Taikou’s face was one of anxiety after he entered. He didn’t greet Chu Feng as he directly asked Qiushui Fuyan a question.

“What? Mother?” Chu Feng’s heart was shocked. That word truly frightened him.

“Go in yourself and take a look.” Qiushui Fuyan did not reply, and instead cast her gaze at Lady Piaomiao.

Taikou didn't bother with any more questions. He leapt forward and immediately appeared in front of Lady Piaomiao. He sat on the ground cross-legged, and observed Lady Piaomiao's present state.

After a while, Taikou took out several medicinal pellets with special properties and put them in Lady Piaomiao's mouth. After helping her refine them, he looked back at Qiushui Fuyan and Chu Feng, and said, “Don't worry. Although she used a forbidden technique, causing serious damage to her body, at least her life is not at peril.”

After speaking, he didn't pay any more attention to them. He directly used a Mysterious Technique, laid a formation, and started healing Lady Piaomiao with special methods.

“Chu Feng, let's go. Don't disturb him.” As Qiushui Fuyan spoke, she walked out the little temple. After glimpsing at Taikou and Lady Piaomiao, Chu Feng followed her out because he knew Qiushui Fuyan had something she wanted to say to him.

“I'm sure you've made a guess or two, right?” Qiushui Fuyan asked with a smile after coming to a peaceful corner.

“I...” Chu Feng was a bit hesitant, and ultimately, did not respond.

“You are correct, Lady Piaomiao is my mother, and Taikou is my father,” Qiushui Fuyan said with a bit of sorrow.

Chu Feng sucked in a deep breath of air. Although he had guessed it already, Chu Feng still felt very shocked when he confirmed it from Qiushui Fuyan herself. In an instant, the emotions in his heart surged and he could not remain calm.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 928 - Lady Piaomiao Awakes

MGA: Chapter 928 - Lady Piaomiao Awakes

“Sister Fuyan, there's a few things I'm not sure if I should ask or not,” Chu Feng said after learning of such shocking news.

“There’s nothing that cannot be asked between us. Ask whatever you want to,” Qiushui Fuyan said.

“You, Senior Piaomiao, and Senior Taikou are family. Why couldn’t you live together, and instead, have lived in separation? Is there some reason?” Chu Feng asked curiously.

“It was actually an accident that my mother and father gave birth to me. My mother’s master had once told her she was forbidden from harbouring feelings for any man. She was afraid the feelings between a man and a woman would bind my mother’s heart, preventing her from fully putting her mind to guard the Misty Peak and influencing her decisions in choosing a successor.

“My mother promised her master she wouldn’t, yet unintentionally had a relationship with my father, and even became conceived with me. She felt ashamed, so she didn’t meet with my father.

“However, I know that she loves him. She has always blamed herself, and she has always felt she treated my father unfairly because of a vow. She felt that she’d let down my father.

“As for my father, he too loves my mother very much. Even though my mother unreasonably drove him away and was unwilling to meet him, my father hadn’t found any other partners. Also, he seemed to understand my mother’s predicament, so he had never looked for me or my mother on his own accord.

“Right now, I wonder if my mother will blame me for calling my father over. He has never seen her true appearance, and I think she wouldn’t want him to see what she looks like now either,” Qiushui Fuyan said a bit worriedly.

“But isn’t Senior Taikou the only one who can save Senior Piaomiao? If you didn’t call him over, perhaps she wouldn’t even have a chance at survival. I’m sure Senior Piaomiao won’t blame you, Sister Fuyan,” Chu Feng consoled.

“Mm. Even if my mother blames me, I had to call my father over. I can’t just watch as my mother dies,” Qiushui Fuyan said.

Afterwards, Chu Feng and Qiushui Fuyan waited outside the temple. They did not go in to disturb Lady Piaomiao’s treatment.

Since her injuries were very severe, the healing process was very lengthy. It required two full days and one night.

During that period of time, both Chu Feng and Qiushui Fuyan were very worried. They were afraid Lady Piaomiao wouldn't be able to bear through this tribulation.

"Fuyan, Fuyan..." Finally, Taikou walked out of the little temple and lightly called Qiushui Fuyan's name.

"How is it? How are my mother's injuries?"

Qiushui Fuyan quickly rose, and Chu Feng also followed. At that instant, Chu Feng carefully observed Taikou. Finally, he could detect his strength. This old man was indeed a Martial King, and his cultivation was powerful, even above Qiushui Fuyan's—he was a rank four Martial King.

Although he was a bit weaker than peak characters such as Lady Piaomiao, Murong Mingtian, and Murong Niekong, his cultivation was already extremely strong in the Eastern Sea Region.

However, at that moment, Taikou had a very weak aura. His face was pale as paper. One could tell that he had exhausted quite a bit of his strength in order to save Lady Piaomiao.

"Her injuries are essentially stable. She would wake up soon. However, let me ask you this: who was the one that forced her into this state?" Taikou had a very calm tone, but Chu Feng could see the concealed fury within her eyes. There was a strand of extreme rage.

"It's the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago, and also people from the Holy Land of Martialism. They are too strong. They were even able to force Mother to this state, so don't do anything rash! Otherwise, if anything happens to you, my mother will feel even more ashamed," Qiushui Fuyan urged.

"Your mother doesn't owe me anything, so why should she feel any shame? But no matter how she looks at me, in my heart, I, Qiushui Taikou, will always have her as my wife, and I will always have you as my daughter.

"Right now, my wife and daughter have been bullied to a state like this. How can I just do nothing?" Taikou was clearly unwilling to leave this matter alone.

"Fuyan..."

“Fuyan...”

A weak calling voice came from the temple. It was Lady Piaomiao; she had awakened.

“Fuyan, quickly go in and check on your mother.” Taikou rejoiced, but he himself did not dare to enter.

“Both of you, wait for me here. Father, don’t leave.” After leaving behind such instructions, Qiushui Fuyan entered the broken temple.

At that moment, Lady Piaomiao had indeed awoken, and she was sitting cross-legged. Although her complexion was still quite poor, she was in a much better state in comparison to her unconscious moments. At least, she had survived from such a risk.

However, her cultivation was still at rank five Martial King; it hadn’t returned to its initial rank six Martial King. One could see that despite keeping her life, she had still paid quite a price.

“Your father’s come, right?” Lady Piaomiao calmly said after seeing Qiushui Fuyan.

“He hasn’t,” Qiushui Fuyan denied subconsciously.

“Don’t pretend. I’ve actually been up for quite a while. I know he’s here. Other than him, there’s no one else who could have save me,” Lady Piaomiao said.

“Mother, don’t blame me! You know only my father could have saved you. So, I could have only called him over. Otherwise, if anything happens to you, he’ll definitely blame me for the rest of my life!” Qiushui Fuyan was a bit nervous. One could see that she was quite afraid of Lady Piaomiao.

“Silly child, why would I blame you? But, it’s just that... he’s now seen my ugly appearance. He must be really regretting having a relationship with me, right?” When Lady Piaomiao spoke, although she looked very calm, a hint of worry flowed within her eyes.

“He hasn’t! He’s only angry—angry that someone forced you to a state like this! He’s even preparing to avenge you.

“However, Father is still only a rank four Martial King. Not to mention the Holy Land of Martialism’s Jiang Qisha and that despicable and cunning Murong Mingtian, he won’t even be able to deal with Murong Niekong.

“But, he’s not listening to my words, and I can’t convince him no matter what! Mother, how about... you try? Father will definitely listen to your words,” Qiushui Fuyan said.

“Does your father truly not feel disgust at my appearance? Nor has he blamed me for leaving him for so long?” But it seemed that Lady Piaomiao was more concerned with Taikou’s opinion of her.

“Mother, don’t worry. Father loves you a lot, and what he’s concerned with isn’t your appearance, but you as a person. In his heart, there is only you. Otherwise, why would he remain alone for so many years? What sort of woman would he be unable to find with cultivation like his?” Qiushui Fuyan said with a smile.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 929 - Pearl of Immortal Inheritance

MGA: Chapter 929 - Pearl of Immortal Inheritance

Lady Piaomiao went silent in deep thought. After a while, she sighed, as if releasing some pent up emotions. She seemed to have decided on something. After she made a bitter yet expectant smile, she said, “Fuyan, go call in your father. I have some words I want to personally say to him.”

“Really? That’s great! Mother, hold on, I’ll call Father right now.” When Lady Piaomiao truly wanted to see Taikou, Qiushui Fuyan rejoiced, and she hurriedly ran out.

After Qiushui Fuyan left, Lady Piaomiao quickly cleaned up her clothes and hair. Although her face was full of scars, and she was incomparably ugly, she still wanted to tidy up herself the best she could before seeing Taikou.

“Father, Mother wants you to go in,” Qiushui Fuyan said with a faint smile. It seemed that she’d looked long forward to this day.

“What? Your mother wants me to enter? She’s willing to see me now?” Taikou was taken aback. He was both surprised, and uneasy.

“Absolutely true. Quickly go in; she is waiting.” Qiushui Fuyan gave an even prettier smile.

“Ah, ahh~” Taikou no longer hesitated. As he nodded his head, he hopped over to the temple with his single leg. Usually, he would have flown over, but he didn’t—proof of his extreme nervousness.

Chu Feng couldn’t help smiling at that scene as well. In his mind, Taikou was an odd old person who feared nothing. However, judging by his actions today, it seemed that he had someone he feared. But that wasn’t anything embarrassing because the one he feared was the one he loved.

Questioning oneself, did Chu Feng not fear Zi Ling, Su Rou, and the others as well? He did, but it was not the fear that first came in mind. He was afraid they would feel grievances. He was afraid of their anger. Although it was fear, but it was essentially different. Fear in this manner was an expression of love.

The reason Chu Feng smiled was because he felt happy for Taikou. From his and Qiushui Fuyan’s expression, Lady Piaomiao had called Taikou over because of something pleasant. Very likely, this pair of husband and wife who had separated for many years would be together once again.

As expected, after a while, Taikou floated out of the broken temple cheerfully. His face was full of youthfulness, and he could not even hide his smile. There was not even a need to mention how happy he was.

“Chu Feng, quickly enter! My wife has something she wants to say to both of you! Hahaha...”

Taikou’s smile was truly quite dazzling, and saying the word “wife” revealed why he was so happy. At least, he dared to say that definitely because Lady Piaomiao allowed it, as they were likely not going to live separated anymore. They had reconciled.

Chu Feng first looked at Qiushui Fuyan, smiled, then walked in the broken temple together.

After stepping out to call for Chu Feng and Qiushui Fuyan, Taikou returned to the temple, and he was intimately putting clothes over the cross-legged Lady Piaomiao. How did this loving atmosphere even seem like one of lovers who had separated for many years? They simply seemed more like an old couple who helped each other in times of need.

There was not any unfamiliarity in feelings due to the separation of many years.

Lady Piaomiao raised her head when they entered. After looking at Taikou behind her, who then returned with a gentle smile, a hint of resolution flashed past Lady Piaomiao's eyes.

whoosh whoosh

Suddenly, Lady Piaomiao crossed her hands, and cast a special spell. She closed her eyes, and at the same time, bursts of gales surrounded her body. Her aura started to change, and it was continuing to drop. It was dropping so quickly it was dumbfounding.

Rank four Martial King.

Rank three Martial King.

Rank two Martial King.

Rank one Martial King.

Rank nine Martial Lord.

In just a blink, Lady Piaomiao, a Martial King, had become a Martial Lord. Moreover, her cultivation was still rapidly dropping, and it was even speeding up.

Chu Feng and Qiushui Fuyan were terrified when that happened, but after seeing Taikou's calm and peaceful appearance, they didn't put forth any questions. Very clearly, he knew what she was doing, and he had likely agreed to it already.

Finally, Lady Piaomiao's cultivation vanished completely. She, a rank five Martial King, became a normal person who didn't even have a hint of cultivation aura.

whoosh But just at that moment, Lady Piaomiao opened her mouth, and from it she spat out a pearl-sized object that glowed with faint light.

Chu Feng's eyes lit up when his gaze fell upon that pearl. It was not simple at all. There was extremely powerful strength contained within—it was all of Lady Piaomiao's cultivation.

Chu Feng understood. Her cultivation was not dropping for no reason at all. It had just transformed into this mystical pearl, and more importantly, it seemed to be intentional.

“Chu Feng, the Mysterious Technique I cultivated is called the Immortal Transference Mysterious Technique. With that Mysterious Technique, other than obtaining greater power by ignition of one’s own cultivation, there is something else it can do: it can condense one’s cultivation into a pearl. It can temporarily assist any successors in a crucial moment for battle.

“As for this pearl, it’s called the Pearl of Immortal Inheritance. All of my cultivation has been coalesced into it. I have, however, used quite a bit of strength in doing so, so the cultivation within this pearl is not rank five Martial King, but rank four Martial King.

“But, if you can refine it, and add it onto your fighting strength, perhaps you can deal with that Jiang Qisha,” Lady Piaomiao said with a smile.

“Lady Piaomiao, I cannot do that!” Chu Feng was frightened as he hurried pushed such an important thing away.

“Listen to what I have to say first. Burning one’s own cultivation is already a taboo. Even if I don’t condense my life’s cultivation into this Pearl of Immortal Inheritance, I will never make any more progress in cultivation for the remainder of my life. Moreover, my cultivation will quickly fade away, and ultimately, I will still become a useless person as I am now.

“Rather than letting it vanish on its own, why not instead condense it into a pearl and let it give you a hand? Not only do you have to save Zi Ling and the others, you must avenge me and take back the Misty Peak. I promised my master that I would not let the Misty Peak fall in the hands of others.

“Right now, the only person who can help me is you. Do you understand what I’m trying to say?” Lady Piaomiao asked with a smile. In comparison to her former coldness, she was now quite a bit warmer.

“I understand.” Chu Feng nodded. He indeed understood.

Due to touching upon a taboo, Lady Piaomiao’s cultivation was fated to dwindle away, and she was thus fated to become a person with no cultivation. It was merely a matter of time.

The reason she condensed her cultivation into a pearl was because she wanted Chu Feng to use it to take back everything she lost.

This was something she couldn't help but do, and it was the solution amidst no solutions. If she did this, there would perhaps be some chances. If she didn't do this, then there would be no chance at all.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 930 - A Huge Gamble

MGA: Chapter 930 - A Huge Gamble

"Mm. You're a smart person. I'm sure you know you cannot easily obtain the power within this Pearl of Immortal Inheritance.

"Even if you refine it, its cultivation will not be permanent. It will only provide you assistance for a short period of time.

"After a certain time limit passes, not only will the Pearl of Immortal Inheritance's cultivation leave your body, you will be met with a painful backlash. Its agony, although insufficient to take your life, is near unendurable. You must be mentally prepared for that," Lady Piaomiao added.

"I understand. If I can save Zi Ling and the others, take back the Misty peak, and avenge you, a measly bit of pain is nothing." Chu Feng's face was one of resolution.

Although Tantai Xue had already said she would deal with Jiang Qisha, she was still only a rank nine Martial Lord. Chu Feng didn't know what arsenal of techniques were at her disposal, nor was he certain she would defeat him.

As the saying went, rather than relying on others, why not rely on oneself? If it were something within his capabilities, he would still rather rely on himself even if he had to pay a certain price. So, if there were a chance, Chu Feng wanted to *personally* save Zi Ling and the others. After all, they were his lovers and brothers.

"Mm. I knew I wasn't mistaken." Lady Piaomiao nodded her head in content, then added, "But Chu Feng, this Pearl of Immortal Inheritance cannot be refined easily. It can be refined by only those who cultivate the Immortal Transference Mysterious Technique.

“As for the technique itself, it can only be read but not spread. It is engraved on the Mysterious Technique Tablet in the Misty Peak. If you want to refine my Pearl of Immortal Inheritance, you must first cultivate the Immortal Transference Mysterious Technique, and if you want to do that, you must first sneak into the Misty Peak,” Lady Piaomiao said.

“Sneak into the Misty Peak? How is that possible? Right now, the Misty Peak has already been taken over by the Immortal Execution Archipelago!

“Putting aside the dangerous threat of Jiang Qisha, Murong Mingtian alone is very difficult to deal with. Sneaking in is already difficult, and if you want to cultivate the Immortal Transference Mysterious Technique in front of the stone tablet, that’s impossible!” Qiushui Fuyan’s face was one of shock. She felt it was something out of the question. It was really too dangerous.

“It is indeed very difficult, but if you take a risk, there is still a chance,” Lady Piaomiao said.

“Senior Piaomiao, do you have some sort of plan?” Chu Feng asked.

“I do have a plan, but it is very dangerous,” Lady Piaomiao said.

“Senior, please tell me.” Chu Feng was decided. As long as there was a chance to save Zi Ling and the others, he was willing to do even more dangerous things.

“First of all, you must first alter your appearance. That’s not too difficult, but your Transformational Mask cannot be used because it will absolutely not work in front of Murong Mingtian and Jiang Qisha. If you meet them, you’re dead.

“There is an Alteration Pellet in my Cosmos Sack, left behind by my master. If you consume it and change your appearance, they will not recognize you.

“Fuyan, you give it to him.” As Lady Piaomiao spoke, she gave her Cosmos Sack to Qiushui Fuyan.

She received it, and very quickly found a pellet that contained extremely powerful medicinal strength. She gave it to Chu Feng after taking it out, but then said, “Mother, even though this Alteration Pellet can change Chu Feng’s appearance and allow him to sneak into the Misty Peak, he still can’t approach the stone tablet that records the Mysterious Technique!”

“Fuyan, take out my Immemorial Jar,” Lady Piaomiao said.

Qiushui Fuyan came to a realization; she now seemed to understand Lady Piaomiao’s plan. From the Cosmos Sack, she brought out a slightly ruined mud jar.

Chu Feng was near Qiushui Fuyan, so he examined the jar when she took it out. He discovered that it was very special—it was some sort of treasure item. The formation on it was not a simple one at all, and it exuded a mysterious feeling Chu Feng could not describe.

“This is?” However, when Chu Feng cast his gaze into the mud jar, his expression changed greatly. He was shocked.

Within the mud jar, there was the Consciousness of an unconscious woman. Chu Feng recognized her—it was Murong Xun’s fiancée, Ya Fei.

“Senior, what is this all about?” Chu Feng asked with a stunned face.

Back then, in the Depraved Ravine, Chu Feng had personally seen Ya Fei’s death! Yet, this Consciousness was undoubtedly hers! She hadn’t died!

“When you were in the Depraved Ravine, I was there as well. I felt Ya Fei would be of use, so when Murong Xun killed her, I used a technique to snatch her Consciousness.

“Right now, your success in cultivating the Immortal Transference Mysterious Technique will be solely dependent on her,” Lady Piaomiao said.

“Senior, I don’t understand what you mean.” Chu Feng was already very shocked, and now, he was even a bit stupefied.

“The Immortal Execution Archipelago’s First Immortal dotes on Ya Fei, his granddaughter. From my knowledge of him, his love for Ya Fei far surpasses his loyalty to the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

“After knowing of Ya Fei’s death, the sorrow he felt was akin to death. If he were to learn that Ya Fei was actually killed by Murong Xun, he would definitely eat his every being.

“So, as long as you take Ya Fei’s Consciousness to the First Immortal, then tell him I have a method to revive her, he will most likely help you,” Lady Piaomiao said.

“Mother, what if that First Immortal promises us to help us, but then harms Chu Feng after bringing him into the Misty Peak? What should we do then?” Qiushui Fuyan was very worried.

“Ya Fei is in our hands. The First Immortal will not risk his granddaughter’s life. Besides, like I said, there is a huge risk that accompanies this mission. If there’s an absolute chance of success, then there wouldn’t be any risk to speak of,” Lady Piaomiao said.

“But...” Qiushui Fuyan was still worried.

“Sister Fuyan, it’s fine. Just leave this to me. If I’m not mistaken, right now the First Immortal isn’t in the Misty Peak but their former headquarters instead. It shouldn’t be difficult to meet him.” As Chu Feng spoke, he stretched towards the mud jar and wanted to swiftly begin.

“Chu Feng, don’t rush. We must still plan in detail.” Lady Piaomiao spoke again. Moreover, she waved her hand, indicating Chu Feng to not take the mud jar.

So, Chu Feng sat back down. He knew she definitely had a plan.

“I know Murong Mingtian’s nature very well. Even though it may seem he treats Murong Niekong and the others very well, in reality, they are merely his chess pieces. He does not give absolute trust to anyone.

“Even if the First Immortal sneaks you into the Misty Peak, you may not have a chance to go to the Mysterious Technique Tablet and see the cultivation method of the Immortal Transference Mysterious Technique.

“So, if you want to succeed, you must make a huge gamble,” Lady Piaomiao said.

“Senior Piaomiao, what sort of gamble is the one you speak of?” Chu Feng asked.

“It is a ‘make or break’ gamble,” Lady Piaomiao said seriously.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 931 - Saving Qiu Canfeng

MGA: Chapter 931 - Saving Qiu Canfeng

“Senior Piaomiao, what are you planning to do?” Chu Feng asked.

“It’s not what I’m planning to do, it’s what you’re planning to do. From start to finish, the success of this will depend on you.” Lady Piaomiao looked at Chu Feng seriously.

“Please give me some advice, Lady Piaomiao,” Chu Feng pleaded.

“Chu Feng, do you remember the Demon Sealing Sword in the Depraved Valley?” Lady Piaomiao asked.

“I do,” Chu Feng replied.

“That Demon Sealing Sword is the weapon of the Crippling Night Demon Sect’s sect head. After he passed away, there has been no one who’s been able to pull it out.

“However, I’ve heard before the sect head died, he had said if there were a person who could pull out the Demon Sealing Sword, that person would rule the entire Crippling Night Demon Sect. And, if I’m not mistaken, you are able to pull it out,” Lady Piaomiao said.

“Senior Piaomiao, you want me to command the Crippling Night Demon Sect? Then, while they create chaos, have me look for an opportunity and reach the Mysterious Technique Tablet in the Misty Peak?” Chu Feng suddenly understood a few things.

“That’s right. I have a plan, but it requires many people for its success. As such, the Crippling Night Demon Sect must follow our commands.” Lady Piaomiao nodded.

“But if this fails, doesn’t it mean everyone from the Crippling Night Demon Sect will die with us?” Chu Feng said with a frown.

“Of course. That’s why I said this is a ‘make or break’ gamble. We can only succeed. Failure is not an option.

“Besides, that is only one of the reasons. The other reason is that you must have the Demon Sealing Sword.

“Although Jiang Qisha’s only a rank four Martial King, his strength is definitely not as simple as it was when I fought him. He didn’t even use a Royal Armament, so he definitely has some sort of hidden trump card.

“Even if you are powerful, perhaps as powerful as him, it will still be very difficult to defeat him with the techniques you currently possess.

“However, that Demon Sealing Sword contains endless power. In the Eastern Sea Region, it is the king of Royal Armaments. After you refine the Pearl of Immortal Inheritance, then fight Jiang Qisha with the Demon Sealing Sword, your chance of victory will be a bit greater,” Lady Piaomiao said.

“Senior, I understand. Back then, I’ve seen their deactivation technique in the Depraved Ravine. So, it won’t be hard to get my hands on the Demon Sealing Sword. However, I’m afraid it won’t be as easy to hold command over the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

“It will be especially harder when news of the Misty Peak spreads. The degree and amount of conflicts and resentments won’t matter anymore. It’s likely the Crippling Night Demon Sect won’t dare to meet them head-on.

“So, if I want to command the Crippling Night Demon Sect, then I would have to save my master first,” Chu Feng said.

“Save your master? What happened to Qiu Canfeng?” Lady Piaomiao was taken aback. She also wanted Chu Feng’s master to appear and help Chu Feng control the Crippling Night Demon Sect, but clearly she didn’t know anything regarding Qiu Canfeng’s imprisonment.

“Mother, since it was a bit urgent, I forgot to tell you. Actually, Qiu Canfeng is...” Qiushui Fuyan knew what happened, so she quickly told Lady Piaomiao about that he was confined in the continent of the Nine Provinces.

“I would have never expected Qiu Canfeng to be this lucky and survive from such a dangerous thing like the Imperial Tomb. But Chu Feng, don’t worry. If, as you said, Fu Liansheng has the strength to save your master, then we have no problem doing the same right now.” She cast her gaze towards Taikou.

Taikou was already prepared. He patted his chest, guaranteeing, "Don't worry. Leave this to me."

After confirming Taikou would come, Chu Feng wanted to head to the continent of the Nine Provinces with the two of them only, but after some further consideration, they decided to all go together and leave the Eastern Sea Region for safety's sake.

On that very day, they began their journey.

The continent of the Nine Provinces was quite far away from the Eastern Sea Region. However, for an expert like a Martial King, that distance wasn't really anything.

After several short days, they had arrived at the eastern continents. But in order to avoid accidents from happening, they didn't bring with them Lady Piaomiao, who had already lost her cultivation.

Instead, they sent her to the hiding location of everyone from the continent of the Nine Provinces. They also had Qiushui Fuyan stay there to take care of Lady Piaomiao.

Only after settling her down did Chu Feng begin again with Taikou. They came to the continent of the Nine Provinces and snuck into the Imperial Tomb.

There were many dangers inside, and also many traps. They were created in a cycle, so even if they were destroyed, they would automatically repair themselves after a while and once again become a barrier of traps that sealed off the Imperial Tomb.

However, Taikou, the rank four Martial King, was no pushover. Although he wasn't as powerful as Huangfu Haoyue, who had the strength to barge through everything, it wasn't difficult for him to destroy the traps.

Finally, after passing through the many obstacles, Chu Feng and Taikou arrived at the deepest part of the Imperial Tomb.

"What a powerful Imperial Door. This Imperial Tomb is truly not simple at all!" From quite some distance away, Chu Feng and Taikou saw the Imperial Door that stood vertical, glowed with golden radiance, and had an inviolable holy aura around it.

Chu Feng, who once again saw the Imperial Door, felt rather sentimental as he recollected his former weak state. He had become many times stronger, but even so, the Imperial Door still gave him the same feeling as before. Nothing felt different despite his increase in strength.

“My master is over there. The thing that is binding him is called the Four Symbols Binding Formation.”

They just gave the Imperial Door a glimpse before Chu Feng cast his gaze towards a distant formation, as he was more concerned with Qiu Canfeng’s current state.

The formation was very powerful, and on its four sides were the engravings of four fierce huge beasts—it was the Four Symbols Binding Formation that bound Qiu Canfeng.

At that moment, he was sleeping deeply within the formation. He was sleeping quite comfortably too, and possibly because of his power being sealed, he didn’t detect Chu Feng and Taikou even though they had come quite near.

When Chu Feng approached, he carefully examined Qiu Canfeng. Even though two years had passed, Qiu Canfeng was still in quite good shape. His complexion was even more spirited.

But sadly, due to the barrier of the Four Symbols Binding Formation, Chu Feng could not detect Qiu Canfeng’s cultivation, even though his Spirit power was quite strong. However, the Four Protectors’ cultivations should be roughly the same, and since You Mingdeng was a rank four Martial King, Chu Feng assumed Qiu Canfeng was the same realm as well.

“This Four Symbols Binding Formation is very powerful; however, a large portion of its power has been used to seal Qiu Canfeng’s cultivation. It won’t be too difficult to deactivate it. I just need a bit of time... Roughly ten days.” Taikou was also carefully examining this Four Symbols Binding Formation.

“Actually, I have a method of deactivation. I just need your help, and in twenty hours, we should be finished,” Chu Feng said.

“Twenty hours?” Taikou was taken aback by those words, and a hint of doubt flashed past his eyes.

Ten days was the quickest time he predicted, but now Chu Feng had said twenty hours instead. In his perspective, that was nearly impossible.

Chu Feng didn't say anything concerning his doubt. Instead, he held out his finger, and drew in the air. Very soon, a glowing and shining picture of lines and runes stood upright in the air.

Taikou's eyes lit up when his gaze landed on that diagram. After a brief moment, he lightly smiled, and said in praise, "Chu Feng, you are indeed outstanding. Let's follow your instructions."

Martial God Asura - Chapter 931 - Saving Qiu Canfeng

MGA: Chapter 931 - Saving Qiu Canfeng

"Senior Piaomiao, what are you planning to do?" Chu Feng asked.

"It's not what I'm planning to do, it's what you're planning to do. From start to finish, the success of this will depend on you." Lady Piaomiao looked at Chu Feng seriously.

"Please give me some advice, Lady Piaomiao," Chu Feng pleaded.

"Chu Feng, do you remember the Demon Sealing Sword in the Depraved Valley?" Lady Piaomiao asked.

"I do," Chu Feng replied.

"That Demon Sealing Sword is the weapon of the Crippling Night Demon Sect's sect head. After he passed away, there has been no one who's been able to pull it out.

"However, I've heard before the sect head died, he had said if there were a person who could pull out the Demon Sealing Sword, that person would rule the entire Crippling Night Demon Sect. And, if I'm not mistaken, you are able to pull it out," Lady Piaomiao said.

"Senior Piaomiao, you want me to command the Crippling Night Demon Sect? Then, while they create chaos, have me look for an opportunity and reach the Mysterious Technique Tablet in the Misty Peak?" Chu Feng suddenly understood a few things.

“That’s right. I have a plan, but it requires many people for its success. As such, the Crippling Night Demon Sect must follow our commands.” Lady Piaomiao nodded.

“But if this fails, doesn’t it mean everyone from the Crippling Night Demon Sect will die with us?” Chu Feng said with a frown.

“Of course. That’s why I said this is a ‘make or break’ gamble. We can only succeed. Failure is not an option.

“Besides, that is only one of the reasons. The other reason is that you must have the Demon Sealing Sword.

“Although Jiang Qisha’s only a rank four Martial King, his strength is definitely not as simple as it was when I fought him. He didn’t even use a Royal Armament, so he definitely has some sort of hidden trump card.

“Even if you are powerful, perhaps as powerful as him, it will still be very difficult to defeat him with the techniques you currently possess.

“However, that Demon Sealing Sword contains endless power. In the Eastern Sea Region, it is the king of Royal Armaments. After you refine the Pearl of Immortal Inheritance, then fight Jiang Qisha with the Demon Sealing Sword, your chance of victory will be a bit greater,” Lady Piaomiao said.

“Senior, I understand. Back then, I’ve seen their deactivation technique in the Depraved Ravine. So, it won’t be hard to get my hands on the Demon Sealing Sword. However, I’m afraid it won’t be as easy to hold command over the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

“It will be especially harder when news of the Misty Peak spreads. The degree and amount of conflicts and resentments won’t matter anymore. It’s likely the Crippling Night Demon Sect won’t dare to meet them head-on.

“So, if I want to command the Crippling Night Demon Sect, then I would have to save my master first,” Chu Feng said.

“Save your master? What happened to Qiu Canfeng?” Lady Piaomiao was taken aback. She also wanted Chu Feng’s master to appear and help Chu Feng control the Crippling Night Demon Sect, but clearly she didn’t know anything regarding Qiu Canfeng’s imprisonment.

“Mother, since it was a bit urgent, I forgot to tell you. Actually, Qiu Canfeng is...” Qiushui Fuyan knew what happened, so she quickly told Lady Piaomiao about that he was confined in the continent of the Nine Provinces.

“I would have never expected Qiu Canfeng to be this lucky and survive from such a dangerous thing like the Imperial Tomb. But Chu Feng, don’t worry. If, as you said, Fu Liansheng has the strength to save your master, then we have no problem doing the same right now.” She cast her gaze towards Taikou.

Taikou was already prepared. He patted his chest, guaranteeing, “Don’t worry. Leave this to me.”

After confirming Taikou would come, Chu Feng wanted to head to the continent of the Nine Provinces with the two of them only, but after some further consideration, they decided to all go together and leave the Eastern Sea Region for safety’s sake.

On that very day, they began their journey.

The continent of the Nine Provinces was quite far away from the Eastern Sea Region. However, for an expert like a Martial King, that distance wasn’t really anything.

After several short days, they had arrived at the eastern continents. But in order to avoid accidents from happening, they didn’t bring with them Lady Piaomiao, who had already lost her cultivation.

Instead, they sent her to the hiding location of everyone from the continent of the Nine Provinces. They also had Qiushui Fuyan stay there to take care of Lady Piaomiao.

Only after settling her down did Chu Feng begin again with Taikou. They came to the continent of the Nine Provinces and snuck into the Imperial Tomb.

There were many dangers inside, and also many traps. They were created in a cycle, so even if they were destroyed, they would automatically repair themselves after a while and once again become a barrier of traps that sealed off the Imperial Tomb.

However, Taikou, the rank four Martial King, was no pushover. Although he wasn't as powerful as Huangfu Haoyue, who had the strength to barge through everything, it wasn't difficult for him to destroy the traps.

Finally, after passing through the many obstacles, Chu Feng and Taikou arrived at the deepest part of the Imperial Tomb.

"What a powerful Imperial Door. This Imperial Tomb is truly not simple at all!" From quite some distance away, Chu Feng and Taikou saw the Imperial Door that stood vertical, glowed with golden radiance, and had an inviolable holy aura around it.

Chu Feng, who once again saw the Imperial Door, felt rather sentimental as he recollected his former weak state. He had become many times stronger, but even so, the Imperial Door still gave him the same feeling as before. Nothing felt different despite his increase in strength.

"My master is over there. The thing that is binding him is called the Four Symbols Binding Formation."

They just gave the Imperial Door a glimpse before Chu Feng cast his gaze towards a distant formation, as he was more concerned with Qiu Canfeng's current state.

The formation was very powerful, and on its four sides were the engravings of four fierce huge beasts—it was the Four Symbols Binding Formation that bound Qiu Canfeng.

At that moment, he was sleeping deeply within the formation. He was sleeping quite comfortably too, and possibly because of his power being sealed, he didn't detect Chu Feng and Taikou even though they had come quite near.

When Chu Feng approached, he carefully examined Qiu Canfeng. Even though two years had passed, Qiu Canfeng was still in quite good shape. His complexion was even more spirited.

But sadly, due to the barrier of the Four Symbols Binding Formation, Chu Feng could not detect Qiu Canfeng's cultivation, even though his Spirit power was quite strong. However, the Four Protectors' cultivations should be roughly the same, and since You Mingdeng was a rank four Martial King, Chu Feng assumed Qiu Canfeng was the same realm as well.

“This Four Symbols Binding Formation is very powerful; however, a large portion of its power has been used to seal Qiu Canfeng’s cultivation. It won’t be too difficult to deactivate it. I just need a bit of time... Roughly ten days.” Taikou was also carefully examining this Four Symbols Binding Formation.

“Actually, I have a method of deactivation. I just need your help, and in twenty hours, we should be finished,” Chu Feng said.

“Twenty hours?” Taikou was taken aback by those words, and a hint of doubt flashed past his eyes.

Ten days was the quickest time he predicted, but now Chu Feng had said twenty hours instead. In his perspective, that was nearly impossible.

Chu Feng didn’t say anything concerning his doubt. Instead, he held out his finger, and drew in the air. Very soon, a glowing and shining picture of lines and runes stood upright in the air.

Taikou’s eyes lit up when his gaze landed on that diagram. After a brief moment, he lightly smiled, and said in praise, “Chu Feng, you are indeed outstanding. Let’s follow your instructions.”

Martial God Asura - Chapter 932 - Breaking the Formation

MGA: Chapter 932 - Breaking the Formation

After deciding on Chu Feng’s method, Taikou followed the written out instructions to create the formation. Chu Feng helped him as well.

“Chu Feng, is that you?” However, shortly after they started, Qiu Canfeng awoke.

“Master, you’re awake!” Chu Feng went up, paid his respects, and greeted him.

As the proverbs said, “Master for one day, father for one life.” Qiu Canfeng hadn’t taught Chu Feng anything, really, and didn’t perform any of his duties of a master. However, in Chu Feng’s heart, since he made Qiu Canfeng his master, then that relationship would persist and never change throughout his life.

It was the same for Zhuge Liuyun and the Azure Dragon Founder. Even though Chu Feng's current cultivation had far surpassed theirs, he still held great respect towards them. That sort of humbleness was unrelated to strength; in Chu Feng's heart, they were eternally seniors who demanded his honour.

"Chu Feng, it's really you?" But when Qiu Canfeng woke up and saw Chu Feng outside the formation, he even though it was a dream. It felt so unrealistic.

"Master, it's me. Your disciple has come to save you.

"Ah, that's right. Master, I'll introduce him. This is Senior Taikou. It was he who broke through the traps on the way here and brought me to you," Chu Feng said as he pointed at Taikou.

"Qiushui Taikou?!" However, after seeing Taikou, Qiu Canfeng's eyes lit up. He felt quite shocked, and from that, one could tell he knew who he was.

"Qiu Canfeng, we have truly not seen each other for quite some time." Taikou lightly smiled. It was clear they knew each other before, but from their expressions, it seemed they didn't have much of a friendship. Instead, there had likely been some conflicts.

"Chu Feng, why did you bring him here? Didn't I tell you to ask for Fu Liansheng?" Qiu Canfeng asked in confusion, but there wasn't any blame in his eyes. He just didn't understand why Chu Feng was with Taikou.

"Master, I am really sorry. There's been some change to the Crippling Night Demon Sect. I am truly unable to meet Fu Liansheng.

"Moreover, the situation right now is urgent. I have to quickly save you. Senior Taikou is the person I can trust the most, and he is also willing to save you, Master. So, with no other choice, I asked him to come here.

"Master, I do hope that you can forgive me for this offense," Chu Feng said apologetically.

"Silly boy, you have done all you could to save me. Why would I blame you?" Qiu Canfeng shook his head. He didn't condemn Chu Feng or anything, and he truly did feel grateful.

He cast his gaze towards Taikou with a bit of sentiment, and said, “I just didn’t expect the one to save me would be him. But that’s fine. There’s no need to mention the past. Qiushui Taikou, I, Qiu Canfeng, will repay you for what you’ve done today.”

“There’s no need. I’ve come here for Chu Feng’s sake, not yours.

“But, Qiu Canfeng, I must say that you’ve got quite good luck to have received a disciple like Chu Feng. He will be the pride of your entire life.” After speaking, Taikou continued laying the formation.

Chu Feng also quickly helped. That formation was very complicated, but everything was within Chu Feng’s grasp. With them working together, a boundless deactivation formation very soon came into existence.

“Chu Feng’s become this powerful?”

Qiu Canfeng, who was personally witnessing all that, wore shock in his eyes. He could tell that even though the core strength of the formation was on Taikou, the one who provided the core techniques was Chu Feng.

Although he already knew Chu Feng was a genius, he didn’t expect him to be a genius to such a degree. In less than two years, Chu Feng had grown to such a state. That truly surpassed his imagination, and made him, the master, look at his disciple in an entirely new light.

“Master, we will soon break through this Four Symbols Binding Formation. In a while, we will need you to coordinate with us from the inside. With that, we will be able break through this formation even quicker,” Chu Feng said after finishing all the preparations.

“Mm,” Qiu Canfeng nodded. Naturally, he understood.

Quickly after, Chu Feng and Taikou stood in two Formation Apertures and started laying the formation.

hmm

Radiance instantly shone forth upon activation. Countless runes stood in order, and like an army of millions attacking a city, the runes madly rushed towards the Four Symbols Binding Formation.

aoo—

However, one could not break the formation so easily. Feeling the bombarding attacks, furious roars arose instantly. The four great beasts—Azure Dragon, White Tiger, Vermillion Bird, and Black Tortoise—all appeared.

They were enormous and ferocious. They oversaw each side of the formation, and all had their respective abilities. They were like guardians as they stopped the attacks of the runic army.

But Chu Feng and Taikou had already expected that to occur. Without panic, they channeled power into the formation and sent an even fiercer attack.

aooo—

When continuously attacked, the four huge beasts were enraged. They roared, and simultaneous to their defense, they sent out their own attacks at Chu Feng and Taikou. The attacks were simply unimaginably powerful.

boom rumble rumble

Luckily, the formation Chu Feng and Taikou laid was equipped with both offense and defense. The strength of the four beasts didn't matter; all of their attacks were stopped.

But the spirit a human possessed was limited, and this formation was also relying completely on Chu Feng and Taikou's channeling of power. Since they were defending and attacking, the strength of the formation itself had been decreased. As such, they were thrown into a passive state.

aoo—

Although the four huge beasts were made by a formation, it seemed as if they were truly alive. They knew their assaults were effective, so as they blocked the incoming attacks, they returned fire even more ferociously.

The four huge beasts had various abilities, and the power they possessed was at the level of a rank four Martial King. Moreover, their strengths were absolutely no weaker than Taikou's.

The most important thing though was that their power was still rising, seeming as if it would reach rank five Martial King at any moment. As such, Chu Feng

and Taikou felt the pressure become even greater. If the four beasts' cultivation truly reached rank five Martial King, not to mention breaking the formation itself, Chu Feng and Taikou would likely die here today.

“These damned things. You’ve bound me for so long already, and you still want to continue binding me?!”

However, just at that moment, within the Four Symbols Binding Formation came a furious shout. Qiu Canfeng, who had remained silent, finally erupted.

When he roared, his power rolled out. It surged out from his body like a swirling hurricane, and it endlessly struck the Four Symbols Binding Formation.

Before such force, the seemingly indestructible Four Symbols Binding Formation instantly appeared as if it would collapse. With just an extra touch of force, Qiu Canfeng would be able to break the formation and escape its shackles.

“Master’s cultivation is...” Chu Feng and Taikou both couldn't help being shocked. At that very instant, they were finally able to feel Qiu Canfeng's aura and what realm it was at.

He was not a rank four Martial King—he was a rank five Martial King. Moreover, his aura was powerful, meaning it was likely he had reached the peak of rank five Martial King.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 933 - The Imperial Door Opens

MGA: Chapter 933 - The Imperial Door Opens

aoo—

After Qiu Canfeng made his move, the four huge beasts instantly panicked. Their powers were limited; before, they were only concentrated on suppressing Chu Feng and Taikou, which meant they drew some power from Qiu Canfeng's suppression.

That meant the power initially used to suppress Qiu Canfeng became weaker and weaker, and only then was Qiu Canfeng able to find a chance to release his aura and fight back.

The four huge beasts started to put their full strength in salvaging the poorly progressing situation, but Qiu Canfeng's power had already erupted, and their power was limited.

If they wanted to suppress Qiu Canfeng, they'd be forced to give up Chu Feng and Taikou. If they wanted to suppress Taikou, they'd be forced to give up Qiu Canfeng. Their front and back were under attack, and they were now powerless. They were fated to lose.

boom—

Finally, there was an explosion. The entire tomb started violently shaking, and layers upon layers of shock waves were akin to ferocious beasts as they swept across the air with a terrifying speed, instantly engulfing everyone and everything.

However, Chu Feng, Taikou, and Qiu Canfeng, who were at the very center of the shock waves, had joyous expressions. They couldn't help but heave a great sigh of relief.

The four huge beasts finally met their end. The fierceness of the shock waves didn't matter, as to Chu Feng and the others, they were of no threat. The Four Symbols Binding Formation was broken through, and not even sixteen hours had passed since they first started.

"Master, congratulations on being released and regaining freedom." Chu Feng cheerfully bowed and clasped his fists towards Qiu Canfeng, as it was his duty as disciple to do so.

"Chu Feng, rise, don't bow! I really feel too ashamed. I took you in as a disciple, but I haven't taught you anything and instead needed you to save me instead. I should be the one thanking." Qiu Canfeng quickly pulled Chu Feng up, his face full of gratitude.

"Master, don't say that! This is something I should be doing," Chu Feng said.

"Haha, I am truly fortunate to have a disciple like you!" Qiu Canfeng was full of joy and he was very pleased with Chu Feng's actions.

Amidst those emotions, he looked at Taikou, and said, "Brother Taikou, thank you."

“Right now, we are on the same side. There’s no need for customary words.” Taikou casually waved his hand, but after seeing such a polite attitude, he did become quite a bit friendlier.

“This feeling?” Just at that moment, Chu Feng’s expression changed and complicated emotions emerged onto his face.

“Chu Feng, what is it?” asked Taikou and Qiu Canfeng as their expressions changed as well. They saw a hint of unknown fear on his face.

rumble rumble rumble rumble rumble—

A deep sound like the repeating crash of thunder rang out from afar. Accompanying this shocking noise was the tomb violently trembling from its gradually calming state.

Taikou and Qiu Canfeng couldn’t help turning around and cast their gaze at the Imperial Door. Qiu Canfeng even waved his sleeve, releasing his rank five Martial King power, and thoroughly removed the still rampaging shock waves.

However, after the shock waves vanished, their uneasy expressions unavoidably changed greatly again.

Their worry was that sound came from the Imperial Door, and their worry was true. At that moment, the Imperial Door, with a dazzling golden radiance and inviolable aura, slowly opened.

On the other side of the Imperial Door, there was a world that made people shocked—it was a boundless starry sky.

The Milky Way glittering with silver, the shooting stars streaking through the air, and the stars that shone with fluctuating light—all of this was so near.

When the Imperial Door spread open, there was a wide path laid out by a seven-coloured rainbow. On the sides of this wide path, there were tall and mighty statues.

They were clad in golden armour that glowed with light. Although they stood unmoving, one knew, with a mere glimpse, that these golden statues possessed intelligence. They were very powerful existences, and it was likely a single one alone held the strength to kill all three of them in an instant.

At the end of the rainbow path was a very grand city. Not only were its buildings exquisite, they were beautiful. It made the city seem like a paradise.

However, the gates to that city were closed, thus its true appearance could not be seen.

“The Imperial Door opens... *this* is a true Imperial Tomb!” Qiu Canfeng couldn’t help exclaiming.

“A true Imperial Tomb? Master, what do you mean?” Chu Feng asked curiously. He could feel that the inside of the Imperial Door was not simple at all.

“I will have to start from the very beginning. Imperial Tombs are a very high-level treasure. The bare minimum you must be to enter this place is to be a Martial King.

“In the Eastern Sea Region, there are a few Imperial Tomb, but the ones discovered have been ventured through already. Everything inside has also been cleanly taken.

“For example, a large portion of the Royal Armaments in the Eastern Sea Region come from the Imperial Tombs. In reality, however, there is a difference in rank even for Imperial Tombs. It’s said that only those that have an Imperial Door is a true Imperial Tomb.

“From what I’ve heard, an Imperial Door is built by a Martial Emperor. It is something that a true expert left behind.

“Outside the Imperial Door are common items, and only within the Imperial Door do true treasures exist. A legend like this has been spread throughout the Eastern Sea Region for a very long time, but there has yet to be anyone who’s seen an Imperial Tomb that encompasses an Imperial Door.

“But after coming to a place like this, I have seen it. I’ve not only seen the Imperial Door, I’ve seen a true Imperial Tomb and how powerful it is. Being locked up in this place for nearly two years is evidence of that,” Qiu Canfeng narrated with solemnness.

“Doesn’t that mean this Imperial Tomb is the strongest one in the Eastern Sea Region and the eastern continents?”

Chu Feng was even more shocked. He never would have expected this Imperial Tomb which he discovered long ago was a rank that hadn't even been seen in the Eastern Sea Region.

"At least, in all of the ventured Imperial Tomb, this is the only one that has an Imperial Door. It has a maddening power, and similarly, a destructive might.

"It's said that one cannot force their way into an Imperial Door—they could only enter by it opening on its own. No matter what, I would not have expected a day like today to come. Not only have I luckily seen the fabled Imperial Door, I have even seen it open. I have seen the mystical world within the Imperial Door," Qiu Canfeng said with emotion.

"Yeah! When I heard you were locked in the Imperial Tomb, I was wondering what sort of tomb could bind someone like you. After I arrived and saw the Imperial Door, I understood everything.

"But I too would not have expected it to open after saving you.

"This vast starry world... beautiful. Truly beautiful. I really do want to enter and take a look," Taikou said with an emotional smile as well. Moreover, there was an expression of yearning that filled his aged eyes.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 934 - Unattainable

MGA: Chapter 934 - Unattainable

"Since there are true treasures concealed within this Imperial Door, doesn't that also mean there are true dangers concealed within this Imperial Door?" Chu Feng asked. He had experienced the might of the Imperial Door, so he knew how horrifying it was. He retained deep fear for this Imperial Door.

"The three of us aren't even qualified to walk pass the first statue. Don't even think about it. At least as of now, we cannot enter the Imperial Door." Taikou shook his head.

Although Qiu Canfeng said nothing, he shook his head in agreement. Though it was clear these two Martial Kings coveted the treasures inside, they no longer dared to advance.

"Eggy, what do you think about this?"

Chu Feng had no choice but to ask Eggy for advice. He too could feel there were huge gains to be had within the Imperial Door, but as Taikou said, there were incomparable dangers as well.

“To be honest, there are various mechanisms in the Imperial Tomb, and every Imperial Tomb laid by a Martial Emperor varies as well. Because of that, I’m not too clear on the things inside the Imperial Tomb, so I am less clear on the things regarding the Imperial Door.

“But I can feel that this Imperial Door is not simple at all. That’s why I had said this Imperial Door may very well be an Imperial Armament.

“After another look today, I am even more certain,” Eggy said sweetly.

“Imperial Armament? Eggy, you’re saying that this Imperial Door is truly an Imperial Armament? But what’s with the vast starry sky?” Chu Feng asked.

“My understanding of Imperial Tomb is limited, but I do have a decent understanding of Imperial Armaments. A true Imperial Armament is very powerful. Not only does it have an unstoppable Emperor-level Martial power, it is the creation of a powerful Immortal-cloak World Spiritist. So, naturally, it has the ability to create an independent space.

“Therefore, this Imperial Door is definitely an Imperial Armament. It’s too perfect of a match. Moreover, it is a Masterless Imperial Armament,” Eggy said with certainty.

“Masterless Imperial Armament?” After hearing those three words, Chu Feng’s heartbeat quickened. An indescribable feeling of elation stemmed from his heart. A Royal Armament was already so powerful, so one would not even be able to imagine the strength of an Imperial Armament. And now, there was even a Masterless Imperial Armament lain before him. To say his heart wasn’t moved would be a lie.

“Chu Feng, one must consider their own strength before acting. The treasures within the Imperial Door aren’t within our abilities to acquire. However, it is our luck that we’ve been able to discover this place,” Qiu Canfeng quickly urged. He seemed to have seen Chu Feng’s strong desire in his eyes, and was afraid he would do some sort of rash and fatal move.

“Chu Feng, your master is right. With your aptitude, it is greatly possible that you become a Martial Emperor in the future. Since no one’s discovered this

place yet, this is basically just a treasure left solely for you. As long as you have more success in cultivation, you can come back and take it any time. There's no need to be in any sort of rush," Taikou urged as well.

"Yeah yeah! These two old ones are right! The power of a Masterless Imperial Armament is limitless. It's not something you can control, nor something you can gain the approval of. It's better to work hard in cultivation and in the future, when you have a certain amount of strength, you can come back and take it. Hehe." Even Eggy spoke with a giggle.

Chu Feng couldn't help bitterly smiling at their words. He really did want to get his hands on the Imperial Armament, and he really did want to seize it for himself, but he knew very clearly that he was simply unqualified right now to wield this Imperial Armament.

However even though he knew he could not enter the Imperial Door, Chu Feng couldn't help himself. He used the Heaven's Eyes as he stood outside the door, and carefully observed as he cast his gaze inward.

Before the Heaven's Eyes, all things showed their true form.

Yet... even though he knew the starry sky within the Imperial Door was fake, Chu Feng could see no evidence of that. The strength of the person who built everything within the Imperial Door could thus be seen.

Although Chu Feng was unable to see the essence of the thing inside the Imperial Door, Chu Feng noticed a formation engraved atop the shut city gates. Within the formation, there were three round gaps. Around those gaps were special engraved patterns.

Chu Feng recognized those patterns: one represented ice, and one represented fire. These two markings merged with each other.

The first thought that sprang into Chu Feng's mind was that the key to open the gates related to ice and fire.

Judging by the size of the gap, Chu Feng couldn't help but think of Su Rou, Su Mei, and the Azure Dragon Founder.

The size of those three gaps were the exact same as the Ice and Fire Pearls within Su Rou's and Su Mei's Body, and the Azure Dragon Founder's pearl that led to his body's immortality.

“Those three pearls are so mystical, and they have inestimable power. Perhaps it is the critical solution to opening the gates.

“However, the Ice and Fire Pearls are sealed in Little Rou’s and Little Mei’s body. This...

“Whatever. This Imperial Armament isn’t something I can take right now anyway. With sufficiently powerful strength, there are no impossibilities. I can always think about this later in the future.”

After some consideration, he had indeed learnt how far he was before he could interact with the Imperial Door. So, he didn’t bother looking for annoyances and obediently left with Qiu Canfeng and Taikou.

However, before they left the Imperial Tomb completely, they covered up its last entrance together with great seriousness and detail. The reason they did that was solely for the treasure within.

They naturally did not wish for others to discover that treasure.

Afterwards, Chu Feng and the others went to meet up with Lady Piaomiao and Qiushui Fuyan.

“Even Lady Piaomiao has come? Chu Feng, Brother Taikou, what’s happened in the Eastern Sea Region?” Qiu Canfeng asked. After knowing that even Lady Piaomiao had come to the eastern continents, he had realized the severity of the present situation.

Chu Feng didn’t hide anything as he carefully narrated to Qiu Canfeng everything that had happened up until now: He joined the Crippling Night Demon Sect, but You Mingdeng drove him out; the conflicts between the Crippling Night Demon Sect and the Immortal Execution Archipelago; and the attack onto the Misty Peak by the Immortal Execution Archipelago’s alliance as they used the excuse of Lady Piaomiao’s protection.

After knowing everything that had happened—especially after knowing You Mingdeng drove Chu Feng out of the Crippling Night Demon Sect even though he had done so much for them—Qiu Canfeng gritted his teeth from anger. He was extremely furious.

However, at the same time, Qiu Canfeng was also very happy. He never would have expected his disciple could pull out the unpullable Demon Sealing

Sword. One must know that he, and the three other Protectors, had attempted to draw out the Demon Sealing Sword in their struggle over the position of sect head, but they had all failed.

“Chu Feng, don’t worry. Your master here will collect everything the Crippling Night Demon Sect owes you. They fear that you will affect their influence? I’ll do exactly that. I’ll push you onto a position they will fear,” Qiu Canfeng said gravely.

“Master, do you mean?” Chu Feng asked.

“I will have you become the head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect,” Qiu Canfeng said solemnly.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 935 - Rank Seven Martial Lord

MGA: Chapter 935 - Rank Seven Martial Lord

“Master...” Chu Feng was shocked. He knew he had to lay hold of the Demon Sealing Sword and command the Crippling Night Demon Sect if he wanted to save Zi Ling.

However, in reality, Chu Feng didn’t want to become the head of some demon sect. Even if he pulled out the Demon Sealing Sword, he felt he was unqualified. On the other hand, no matter experience or strength, his master was fully suited for that position. Moreover, Chu Feng knew Qiu Canfeng did really want this role.

Yet, right now, even Qiu Canfeng wanted Chu Feng to become the head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect. That truly put him in a difficult position, because he knew Qiu Canfeng wasn’t joking.

“Chu Feng, listen to me first. Before he passed away, the sect head had said no matter who it was, as long as they were able to pull out the Demon Sealing Sword, they could become the head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect. Similarly, the only person qualified as head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect is the person who is able to wield the Demon Sealing Sword.

“Although I do wish to command the Crippling Night Demon Sect, I do not have the ability to pull it out. Even if I can subdue everyone with my strength,

it will only be a submission of mouth, not of heart. That would instead be worse.

“But you are different. You’re able to pull the Demon Sealing Sword out, so you are the sole person qualified to rule the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

“Chu Feng, I’m sure you’ve seen it too. Right now, the Crippling Night Demon Sect is in pieces. We’re already no match for the Immortal Execution Archipelago, and the Immortal Execution Archipelago will sooner or later destroy us completely if the present circumstances persist.

“If we rebuild the Crippling Night Demon Sect right now, perhaps we can put up a battle against them. Any later, when we wait until the Immortal Execution Archipelago comes to deal with us themselves, it will be all too late,” Qiu Canfeng urged when Chu Feng hesitated.

“Chu Feng, a master’s order is hard to turn down. Just accept. Besides, even if you become sect head, you don’t have to stay in the Eastern Sea Region. When you want to venture off to the Holy Land of Martialism, wouldn’t it be fine to just have your master handle the Crippling Night Demon Sect?” Taikou urged as well.

The meaning behind his words was very simple: Chu Feng just had to wear the title of “sect head” while the person who truly controlled the Crippling Night Demon Sect remained to be Qiu Canfeng. And, Qiu Canfeng could only fairly and reasonably rule over the Crippling Night Demon Sect when Chu Feng became the sect head.

“Then... fine. Master, I will follow your instructions.” With this much persuading from his master and Taikou, Chu Feng naturally couldn’t refuse. Thus, he could only agree to their suggestions.

“Mm, that’s how it should be.” Qiu Canfeng satisfiedly smiled after Chu Feng accepted. As he spoke, he handed a Cosmos Sack to Chu Feng and said, “This is what I promised you before. Although it’s less than Lady Piaomiao’s Pearl of Immortal Inheritance, it will more or less help you. Your chances of victory when facing that brat from the Holy Land of Martialism will also increase a bit.”

“Thank you, Master.” Chu Feng could not hide his grin when he received the Cosmos Sack. It was filled with cultivation resources, and they were not even

ordinary cultivation resources. The amount was so staggering it made one dumbfounded.

These resources were very special. To a normal person, it would prove greatly difficult if they wanted to refine them. There were even some things in there that normal people simply could not refine, yet Chu Feng could, even within a short period of time.

If he refined so many cultivation resources, he would not merely become a rank six Martial Lord. Perhaps Chu Feng could make continuous breakthroughs and become a rank seven Martial Lord.

Moreover, other than large amounts of cultivation resources, Chu Feng also discovered something that made him excited within the Cosmos Sack—it was a Spirit Formation. A mystical creature was sealed within the Spirit Formation.

It seemed like a peacock, but it was something more beautiful, more overbearing, and more ferocious.

It was a vermilion bird. Very evidently, this was the final Secret Skill that lay within the Imperial Tomb—the Vermilion Bird Revival Technique.

The White Tiger Slaughtering Technique, Black Tortoise Armour Technique, and Azure Dragon Dashing Technique had been obtained. What remained was only the Vermilion Bird Revival Technique.

Chu Feng had a premonition that these four Secret Skills were connected. Only after successfully cultivating all of them could their true power be used. Chu Feng had awaited this day for a very long time. Finally, it had come.

After meeting up with Lady Piaomiao and the others, they didn't leave immediately because Chu Feng prepared to restart their journey only after refining the cultivation resources and cultivating the Vermilion Bird Revival Technique.

After all, Chu Feng had an important mission this time by returning to the Eastern Sea Region. No matter becoming the head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, or attacking the Misty Peak, he required even more powerful strength. He had to first raise his power.

He went to work immediately. On the day they reunited, he found a peaceful area, went in seclusion, and started refining the resources he received from Qiu Canfeng.

There were many resources, and they were very special as well. Thus, they were very difficult to refine. However, to Chu Feng, it was a very simple task, even simpler than eating and drinking. As a result, after less than half a day, Chu Feng had finished.

Moreover, as Chu Feng expected, he had truly made continuous breakthroughs in cultivation after refining all of those resources—from rank five Martial Lord, he became a rank seven Martial Lord.

Back then, Chu Feng was relying on the power of the Divine Lightning to become a rank five Martial Lord. So, he himself didn't really know the immensity of cultivation resources required to make a breakthrough.

However, he knew it was definitely a horrifying amount. When he truly became a rank seven Martial Lord after refining all of those cultivation resources, Chu Feng felt surprised, and excited.

He could feel that he was now not only just a rank seven Martial Lord—there was still extremely strong power that accumulated within his dantian. Right now, he was likely at the peak of rank seven Martial Lord. He was only a step away from being a rank eight Martial Lord.

Chu Feng had to admit that the cultivation resources within the Imperial Tomb were indeed extraordinary. They even surpassed his imagination.

“Haha, how impressive! Chu Feng, do you see this? This is your strength. As long as you have sufficient cultivation resources, your rate of cultivation improvement is absolutely terrifying! In this world, I doubt there's anyone who can compare to you.

“The amount of cultivation resources in the Eastern Sea Region is limited. However, when you reach the Holy Land of Martialism in the future, the cultivation resources at that place will definitely be abundant. After all, that's a place with Martial Emperors.

“At that place, although experts are as common as clouds, you are a person who becomes strong when you meet a strong person. You will be like a fish in water. Right now, you are a rank seven Martial Lord, and you're just a step

away from being a rank eight Martial Lord. But I can already see the day that you become a Martial King.

“No, your cultivation will not just be limited to Martial King—Martial Emperor. Sooner or later, you will become a Martial Emperor. It’s not even an impossibility that you become an existence that surpasses Martial Emperors!” Eggy was actually even more excited than Chu Feng when she felt his present cultivation.

On his journey of cultivation, Eggy had experienced the very same troubles Chu Feng had faced. She had personally watched as Chu Feng, from a little outer sect disciple of the Azure Dragon School, a trash with cultivation in the Spirit realm, slowly develop to his present state. She knew Chu Feng hadn’t done this easily, but at the same time, she knew how huge of a potential was concealed within Chu Feng.

She looked very forward, with Chu Feng, to stepping onto a stage much vaster, and stepping onto a journey much more perilous.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 936 - Vermilion Bird Revival Technique

MGA: Chapter 936 - Vermilion Bird Revival Technique

“Mm, yeah! Although remnants from the Ancient Era and even complete products like the Misty Peak remain in the Eastern Sea Region, there’s no one who can expose every single part of the Misty Peak.

“As for the areas that can be opened up, everything inside has already been cleanly looted. The opportunities I have in this place will always be limited, just as how I reached a dead end in growth in the continent of the Nine Provinces.

“As for the Holy Land of Martialism, it is filled with the unknown, and it is filled with even more dangers. However, at the same time, I’ll definitely have a greater chance in finding treasures.

“I truly want to see the strength of a legendary Martial Emperor as well. I wonder if they’re truly like gods?” Chu Feng not only wore a joyful and prideful expression, he also wore a confident smile.

The Divine Lightning required a vast amount of cultivation resources, which limited his aptitude and slowed his rate of improvement. However, as Eggy

said, Chu Feng's cultivation speed would be astounding when there was a sufficient amount of resources.

He lacked cultivation resources. He lacked the *opportunities* to procure more cultivation resources; however, in the Holy Land of Martialism, there were definitely many of those opportunities, but they were just hidden from sight.

He firmly believed he would become powerful. There would be one day where he'd be able to hold control of the world he once looked up to, and the power to defy heaven itself.

Martial Emperor? He knew he would reach that realm one day, but even Martial Emperor wasn't his final stop.

"It's time to ask this senior to appear." After a sigh, Chu Feng flipped his palm. He brought out the formation that sealed the Vermilion Bird Revival Technique and broke it.

aooo— A mellifluous cry rang out immediately, and a strand of red light simultaneously shot out of Chu Feng's hand. It became an enormous creature which appeared before Chu Feng—it was the Vermilion Bird Revival Technique.

"No wonder those guys gave their approval. You brat, you're indeed quite extraordinary. Although the junk resources Qingxuantian left behind aren't anything good, it's not as if normal people can refine them. You have potential." The Vermilion Bird Revival Technique gazed at Chu Feng with its beautiful eyes, and nodded with quite some satisfaction.

"Qingxuantian?" Chu Feng's heart was shaken upon hearing that name. He knew of Qingxuantian—ten thousand years ago, he was an outstanding genius in the continent of the Nine Provinces.

The legends said the Imperial Tomb was Qingxuantian's tomb. But, after all, a legend was only a legend; there was no way to verify the facts. At present, however, since the Vermilion Bird Revival Technique had spoken such words it meant the legends were likely true.

"Mm? Brat, you know Qingxuantian?" asked the Vermilion Bird Revival Technique with a bit of surprise.

“Of course I do! Senior Qingxuantian is the number one genius in the continent of the Nine Provinces. His accomplishments have been spread down for ten thousand years, and he’s a legend in the continent of the Nine Provinces!” Chu Feng replied truthfully.

“Haha, time truly flows fast! Ten thousand years felt just like a blink. Has that Qingxuantian become a legend already?”

“However, he *is* worthy of the title of ‘legend’. I just wonder how his successors will feel if they know he’s become a legend already...”

The Vermilion Bird Revival Technique’s expression suddenly turned sentimental as it said in a low voice, “It’s been ten thousand years, but he hasn’t returned yet. Has he already...”

“Senior, does that mean Senior Qingxuantian hasn’t died yet?”

Chu Feng felt a bit shocked. There were many legends surrounding Qingxuantian. Of those, the most reasonable one was he had died already and the Imperial Tomb was his tomb. But, from what the Vermilion Bird Revival Technique said just now, he hadn’t died yet. Or, at least, there was such a possibility.

“Qingxuantian’s dead? Who said that? How did he die?” But when it heard Chu Feng’s words that implied Qingxuantian’s death, the Vermilion Bird Revival Technique suddenly became very agitated. Surprising Chu Feng, it not only gave no reply, it fiercely questioned him.

“This... This is only a legend...” Chu Feng hurriedly explained, and told everything he knew to it.

“Rumours and the sort are fake. Back then, he had indeed built some sites and had the four of us wait in there, but they weren’t Imperial Tombs. They were just simple sites.” The Vermilion Bird Revival Technique heaved a deep relieved sigh. It could be seen that it was very concerned with Qingxuantian’s life.

“Senior, do you mean Senior Qingxuantian left this place? And after ten thousand years, he’s still alive?” Chu Feng asked in a probing manner. The life of a human was limited. Although one could prolong their life through special techniques, ten thousand years was really too much time. If one were

able to, not only were extraordinary methods required, it also demanded an overpowering degree of strength.

“Hoh, it’s merely been ten thousand years. You think he would die of age? No person can kill a man like him. His only true threat was himself,” the Vermilion Bird Revival Technique said proudly.

Chu Feng seemed to roughly understand Qingxuantian was in fact an impressive existence. Otherwise, the Vermilion Bird Revival Technique wouldn’t have said such words and shown such pride.

Deducing from its words before, Chu Feng knew that even the Vermilion Bird Revival Technique itself wasn’t certain whether Qingxuantian was alive or not.

Out of curiosity, Chu Feng continued probing, “Senior, then where did Senior Qingxuantian go? Could it be the Holy Land of Martialism?”

“Holy Land of Martialism? Hoh...” The Vermilion Bird Revival Technique disdainfully smiled, and seemed as if it wanted to say something. But very soon, its face darkened and as it glared at Chu Feng, it said, “You brat, why are you asking so many questions? There are some things you shouldn’t ask.”

“Senior, Senior Qingxuantian is the pride of the continent of the Nine Provinces, and I do really admire and respect him. So, I want to learn more about his achievements. Please, show me some kindness and tell me a few more things about him,” Chu Feng said as he smiled.

He knew the Vermilion Bird Revival Technique possessed intelligence. However, if it were to grant Chu Feng its power, it would lose its ability to speak. So, Chu Feng had to take this chance to first ask what he wanted to know.

“You give me less of that! Do you think I’d be tricked so easily?” But the Vermilion Bird Revival Technique was an old cunning fox. It instantly saw through Chu Feng’s ploy. It knew Chu Feng didn’t really adore Qingxuantian; he was just speaking flattering words.

Chu Feng could only giggle foolishly and didn’t bother defending his antics. However, he used his pair of innocent eyes to look at the Vermilion Bird Revival Technique, hoping it could show some generosity and tell him a bit more.

“Ahh... You seem so curious and look like you know absolutely nothing. Did those three old guys tell you nothing?” the Vermilion Bird Revival Technique asked.

“They didn’t. Senior Azure Dragon, White Tiger, and Black Tortoise didn’t say anything to me. If it weren’t for you, I wouldn’t even be certain the Imperial Tomb was built by Qingxuantian.”

Chu Feng quickly nodded. He could see that the Vermilion Bird Revival Technique prepared to speak. He also had a premonition it’d be something extremely important.

“Those three old bastards are truly damnable. You’re lazy to speak, so push everything onto me?! I’ll be sure to return this favour!”

The Vermilion Bird Revival Technique muttered to itself, then carefully examined Chu Feng from head to toe before seriously speaking.

“Brat, I must congratulate you!”

Martial God Asura - Chapter 937 - Successor

MGA: Chapter 937 - Successor

“Congratulate? Senior, what do you mean?” Chu Feng asked confusedly.

“You are very lucky—you have a chance to become Qingxuantian’s successor! You tell me, should I congratulate you?” said the Vermilion Bird Revival Technique.

“A chance?” Chu Feng was still puzzled.

“Heh, didn’t you see it? That Imperial Door is an Imperial Armament! If you can get your hands on that Imperial Armament, it’s equal to receiving half of Qingxuantian’s inheritance. That Imperial Armament is a concentration of Qingxuantian’s painstaking efforts! It is a very impressive Imperial Armament,” the Vermilion Bird Revival Technique said.

Chu Feng understood what it meant. Since Qingxuantian had spent so much work on the Imperial Armament, wouldn’t it mean the one to receive Qingxuantian’s inheritance was who got their hands on it?

As for the “opportunity” the Vermilion Bird Revival Technique spoke of, it was because Chu Feng only had a *chance* to acquire the Imperial Armament. Whether he could truly obtain it depended on Chu Feng himself.

“Senior, that Imperial Armament is indeed very impressive; I have seen it. However, I just don’t understand why you said it represented only half of Senior Qingxuantian’s inheritance. Where is the other half of the inheritance then?” Chu Feng said astutely.

“Oh? You’re quite sharp. I didn’t think you would notice! Haha.” The Vermilion Bird Revival Technique laughed, and his impression of Chu Feng couldn’t help but change. Then, he said, “Back then, Qingxuantian built these sites in the continent of the Nine Provinces because he feared he wouldn’t be able to return one day, and thus his work would have been for naught. As such, he left behind two very important things in the continent of the Nine Provinces, hoping that one day there would be a fated person who could receive his inheritance.

“One of those two is the Imperial Armament he forged with great effort and the usage of all sorts of oddities. The other are the four Holy Beasts that had followed him for many years as he set out in an expedition in the world: the Azure Dragon, White Tiger, Vermilion Bird, and Black Tortoise.”

“The other half are the four of you seniors? But didn’t they already grant their power to me?” Chu Feng was a bit shocked. He truly didn’t expect the four Secret Skills to be the other half of the inheritance.

Although Secret Skills were powerful, they were only Secret Skills. How could they be even discussed on the same level as Imperial Armaments?

“Could it be that... you aren’t Secret Skills?” But after a quick thought, Chu Feng came to a conclusion. He noticed that the Vermilion Bird Revival Technique didn’t call itself a Secret Skills, but instead a Holy Beast.

“Hahaha, you are indeed sharp. Brat, you’re right.

“The four of us aren’t any Secret Skills. That’s just a cover that conceals our true identity.

“The four of us were born with Qingxuantian. We originally existed together with him, but with special techniques, he created physical bodies of ourselves and separated us from him, making us into four independent living organisms.

“But back then, in the Holy Land of Martialism, Qingxuantian had met a great enemy. In order to protect him, the four of us were willing to sacrifice ourselves to seal that thing.

“He wasn’t willing to let us throw our lives away, so with a special method, he stripped away our consciousness and nature from our physical bodies, then turned us into Secret Skills so we could live eternally.

“However, as long as our spirits can merge back into our physical bodies, we can revive. So, if you can bring us four back to life, we will be loyal to you as how we were loyal to Qingxuantian. That way, you would have received the other half of Qingxuantian’s inheritance,” the Vermilion Bird Revival Technique said.

“So the four of you seniors weren’t simple Secret Skills, but instead four Holy Beasts! Seniors, if there’s truly a method of revival, I will do my best to accomplish that goal.”

Chu Feng secretly rejoiced. He could feel that the four Holy Beasts were not simple at all. If they could truly be brought back to life, then that would be a huge helping hand to him.

“Less with this ‘senior’ here and ‘senior’ there. You are the only person all four of us approved of in nearly ten thousand years. However, approving of you is one thing. It does not mean we’ve submitted to you.

“We promised Qingxuantian we would find a successor for him. So, we will do our duties until the very end. However, before you conquer that Imperial Armament, we will not advise you on anything, nor will we tell you the location of our sealed our physical bodies.

“However, if you do acquire the Imperial Armament, we will tell you everything. Those are things people in the Holy Land of Martialism coveted to know!”

As he spoke, its body turned illusory. It was preparing to merge into Chu Feng’s body, and preparing to grant him its power.

“Senior, please wait! At least, you have to tell me how I can get that Imperial Armament, right? Otherwise, if it kills me, wouldn’t you have waited ten thousand years for nothing?” Chu Feng hurriedly asked. It didn’t matter how powerful this Vermilion Bird Revival Technique was before. Right now, it was

only a Secret Skills. Even though it had its own intelligence, it would lose its ability to speak if it were to enter Chu Feng's body. None of Chu Feng's questions could be replied then.

"If you want to know, then get your hands on the Imperial Armament first. Afterwards, we will resonate with it, and then we can communicate with you at any moment.

"However, if you fail and it kills you, that means you aren't qualified to receive Qingxuantian's inheritance. We've already waited for ten thousand years. We don't mind waiting a bit longer."

It had then become a strand of red light and burrowed itself into Chu Feng's forehead.

He felt a sharp pain to his head before a bundle of information appeared in his mind. He also gained an extra power—the Vermilion Bird Revival Technique.

It was a technique to strengthen his physical body, and also a technique to heal not only himself, but others as well.

If mastered, the Vermilion Bird Revival Technique would take but an instant to repair broken limbs. It was akin to having an imperishable body, so that was why it had such a name.

"As I thought, after gathering these four Secret Skills... this is truly extraordinary! If I cast them all at the same time, there will be a surprising effect." The corners of Chu Feng's mouth curled up to form a pleasant smile—one that showed just a slight surprise.

It was no longer as simple as receiving the Vermilion Bird Revival Technique. What he would receive soon was Qingxuantian's inheritance.

Chu Feng looked very forward to grasping the Imperial Armament. Simultaneously, he looked very forward to knowing where Qingxuantian had gone. He even wanted to know about the existence that nearly took away Qingxuantian's life, one that could only be sealed after the sacrifice of the four Holy Beasts.

The Holy Land of Martialism—he knew Qingxuantian had gone there a long time ago. With his nature, perhaps he had already left many shocking achievements in that land.

As for Chu Feng, he would soon enter that world as well. He was going to step onto the same journey, but he was going to create an entirely different world.

But before all that, he had to first defeat Jiang Qisha. He had to eradicate the Immortal Execution Archipelago. He had to take back the Misty Peak, or else those were all useless thoughts.

Chu Feng tidied up his clothes, and left. He went to meet up with Lady Piaomiao and the others, preparing to return to the Eastern Sea Region.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 938 - Selecting a Sect Head

MGA: Chapter 938 - Selecting a Sect Head

Lady Piaomiao, Qiushui Fuyan, Qiu Canfeng, and Taikou were together to discuss the countermeasures against Murong Mingtian and Jiang Qisha.

“It’s not easy to refine any of the Imperial Tomb’s cultivation resources. Although Chu Feng said it was sufficient to give him a day, is it truly possible to refine so many in such a short time?”

Qiu Canfeng was a bit worried. He knew of the volatile power these resources contained. Many of them were so dangerous even he didn’t dare to refine them.

“Qiu Canfeng, it seems that you really don’t know anything about your disciple! Chu Feng is the most monstrous young man I have ever seen in my entire life. He even refined the Natural Oddity no one dared to touch in the Burning Heaven Church. What do you think he *can’t* refine?” Lady Piaomiao said with a faint smile.

“Natural Oddity?” Qiu Canfeng’s expression changed and a hint of shock emerged in his eyes. He of course knew of Natural Oddities, but he didn’t know there was also a Natural Oddity within the Burning Heaven Church. However, based on her words just now, he could tell that the Natural Oddity was not an ordinary one.

“Master, Senior Piaomiao, Senior Taikou, Sister Fuyan.” A joyful call—Chu Feng had returned.

“Chu Feng, you’ve made a breakthrough?”

“You continuously made two levels of breakthroughs, and became a rank seven Martial Lord?”

All of them were amazed. They already knew Chu Feng was very freakish, but didn't expect him to be *this* freakish. When typical people cultivated in seclusion, they usually took several days, several months, even several years.

But Chu Feng had just used less than half a day, which was even quicker than his own initial projection. That truly surpassed their expectations.

“Chu Feng, you've refined all of it?” Qiu Canfeng asked with shock.

“Mm, I refined all of it. I've also gotten the Secret Skills.” Chu Feng smiled as he nodded.

“Haha, good, good! I, Qiu Canfeng, have truly received an excellent disciple!” Qiu Canfeng couldn't even stop grinning after confirming what had happened. There was praise and pleased expressions within his eyes.

“It's wonderful that it's a success! Chu Feng, we've already planned out how to deal with Murong Mingtian and the others. Come and look through it as well.”

Lady Piaomiao completely and detailedly narrated their plan. Without a speck of doubt, Chu Feng was the pivotal point that decided their victory and defeat.

First, Chu Feng and Qiu Canfeng were to go to the Depraved Ravine and acquire the Demon Sealing Sword. Then, they were to think of a way to gather the ones who held some position in the Crippling Night Demon Sect. Finally, Qiu Canfeng would use his strength of a rank five Martial King to directly push Chu Feng into the role of sect head.

As for Qiushui Fuyan, she would go find the First Immortal with Taikou. With the condition of helping Ya Fei restore her physical body, they would have the First Immortal help them. Of course, they wouldn't easily trust him. So, Lady Piaomiao prepared a special poison.

They would have him consume this poison. That way, they'd have shackles over both his and Ya Fei's life. This ensured he wouldn't dare play any tricks on them.

If everything went successfully, they would send the army to the Misty Peak.

Of course, since the Immortal Execution Archipelago was so powerful, even the entire Crippling Night Demon Sect was no match for it. Thus, they wouldn't have a head-on confrontation. They would only use various methods to throw the Immortal Execution Archipelago into chaos, opening an opportunity for Chu Feng to find the Immortal Transference Mysterious Technique.

This method was very simple—there was a formation no one knew of deep within the Misty Peak's sea. Lady Piaomiao had constructed that formation over several hundred years with the Misty Peak's resources.

Originally, that formation was used for guarding the Misty Peak. However, since it was incomplete, a single person could not activate it—there was a minimum requirement of several tens of thousands of people, even millions of people. The more people there were, the stronger the power. This formation would definitely catch Murong Mingtian and the others off guard, thus creating havoc.

At that time, Chu Feng could follow the First Immortal and go forth to the stone tablet and cultivate the Immortal Transference Mysterious Technique. Then, he would be able to refine the Pearl of Immortal Inheritance and receive Lady Piaomiao's cultivation—rank four Martial King.

Although it was only rank four Martial King, it depended on who possessed such cultivation. If Chu Feng were a rank four Martial King, his fighting strength would absolutely be much more terrifying than the former Lady Piaomiao, a rank six Martial King. In addition to the power of the Demon Sealing Sword, Jiang Qisha might not even be able to defeat Chu Feng if he wielded the power of the Demon Sealing Sword.

Every single thing was done for Chu Feng. The outcome of this depended solely on him.

If Chu Feng succeeded, then they could remove a great enemy and take back everything. If Chu Feng failed, then the entire Crippling Night Demon Sect who participated in this would die along with him.

As Lady Piaomiao said before: this was a gamble. A “make or break” gamble, one where failure was not an option.

“The greater the power, the greater the responsibility. Chu Feng, this'll depend on you alone.” Lady Piaomiao spread open her palm, and gave Chu Feng the

Pearl of Immortal Inheritance which contained her cultivation attainments over several hundred years.

“Senior, don’t worry. Although I do not dare to guarantee this will succeed, I will do everything within my abilities,” Chu Feng swore after receiving the Pearl of Immortal Inheritance.

Chu Feng and the others directly departed afterwards. As for Lady Piaomiao, she remained here.

She stood atop a peak, and watched the four people who disappeared instantly in the horizon. Her expression started changing when she couldn’t see them anymore. Its initial calmness existed no longer. Replacing it were endless worry and uneasiness.

No one was certain of this battle’s outcome. No one knew who would live and who would die. However, she knew if Taikou and Qiushui Fuyan were to die, she would not live on.

It was dead silent on their journey...

After they all reached the Eastern Sea Region, they went their own ways.

Chu Feng and Qiu Canfeng hurried to the Depraved Ravine. Everything went according to their expectations, but when they arrived, they couldn’t help being shocked.

They discovered with astonishment that the Spirit Formation which sealed the Depraved Ravine had been deactivated. Outside the Depraved Ravine was a large number of people. There were at least several millions, perhaps near ten million.

Moreover, there was some similarity between them—they wore the same clothing. They also had outstanding cultivation; these were the members of the Crippling Night Demon Sect. They had gathered together.

Although this was not the formation back at the Crippling Night Demon Sect’s peak era—it was even less than half of back then—after being interspersed about the Eastern Sea Region for so many years, it was really not easy to have gathered so many members.

“It seems that the news of the invaded Misty Peak has been known. Those three old things are impatient now. That’s probably why they showed up at the same time and summoned all of them.”

Qiu Canfeng faintly smiled. With his and Chu Feng’s hearing strength, there was no need to ask anyone as they eavesdropped a few things from the ocean of people underneath.

The news had been spread: the Immortal Execution Archipelago allying with the Three Great Monstrous Clans and seizing the Misty Peak, and the unknown conditions of Lady Piaomiao, Qiushui Fuyan, Chu Feng, and the others.

The Crippling Night Demon Sect, as the Immortal Execution Archipelago’s archenemy, were aware of this peril.

The reason so many members appeared in the Depraved Ravine was due to the summon from You Mingdeng, Xue Xiyue, and Fu Liansheng.

As for the goal of summoning the Crippling Night Demon Sect’s army, it was to choose a new sect head!

Martial God Asura - Chapter 939 - Perfect Royal Armament

MGA: Chapter 939 - Perfect Royal Armament

You Mingdeng, Xue Xiyue, and Fu Liansheng knew the present situation was not assuring.

They, as the Three Protectors, knew very well if they kept the Crippling Night Demon Sect split up, only one result awaited them—eradication.

If they remained ununited, judging by the Immortal Execution Archipelago’s nature, they wouldn’t accept Crippling Night Demon Sect’s surrender. They would only annihilate them.

Therefore, they had to quickly reorganize the Crippling Night Demon Sect and gather the members scattered across the Eastern Sea Region. No matter if they were to live or die, or battle or escape, they were going to do it together.

However, the exact reason why the Crippling Night Demon Sect had split into pieces was because they were akin to a group of dragons that lacked a leader. Even amongst the Three Protectors, none of them were willing to obey each other. It wasn't that easy to choose a sect head.

In reality, there were many people who didn't know how they prepared to come to a conclusion, but Chu Feng and Qiu Canfeng did. This was a chance provided to them.

"Master, it seems that we can use their own plan against them," Chu Feng said smilingly.

"Mm. Disguise yourself. Let's take a look at this, though there's no need to rashly do anything. Let me see what these three old things are planning." Qiu Canfeng nodded his head as he smiled as well.

Just like that, Chu Feng and Qiu Canfeng, the pair of master and disciple, snuck into the vast ocean of people after transforming into ordinary people. They avoided showing themselves.

They headed directly into the Depraved Ravine's underground palace. They knew the selection of sect head was going to be carried out in the palace that held the Demon Sealing Sword.

On their way, the two of them discovered that the underground palace had been refurbished. Although it hadn't become all that exquisite, it was quite a bit wider, even several times wider than before. This was most definitely to accommodate for the larger number of people.

One could tell the Three Protectors had spent quite some work and time for today.

But in spite of their efforts, it was still very crowded. There were already a million people squished within the underground palace. By some rough estimations, they found out there was truly quite a few members gathered here today. In addition to those above ground, there were already over ten million people present.

This was evidence of the loyalty the members held towards the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

Their sect had split up, and they scattered throughout the world, lacking any superiors to rely on. However, when the sect's order was sent, they still hurried over. Risking their lives, disregarding sufferings, and preparing to do all they could for the sect.

Finally, Chu Feng and Qiu Canfeng arrived within the Demon Sealing Sword's palace. It was reconstructed to become even bigger—right now, there were several hundred thousands of people within the palace. Its vastness could thus be imagined.

However, only those who held some position within the sect could enter that palace. There were even guards at the entrance to check identities. Ordinary members were not allowed entry.

Though it might seem unreasonable on the surface, it was understandable after some thought. This was, after all, the place a sect head was to be chosen. It wouldn't matter how big this palace became, since there was always a limit. It could not accommodate all the members of the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

With this checkpoint, it secluded many of those who wished to personally witness the progress of the sect head selection. But that proved no difficult for Chu Feng and Qiu Canfeng as with a bit of trickery, they snuck in.

"Chu Feng, go ahead. I can just wait here," Qiu Canfeng said via mental messaging.

"Mm." Chu Feng knew Qiu Canfeng didn't want to reveal himself yet. So, he alone forced himself into the center of the palace from the very outskirts of the crowd.

The palace was quite enormous, but it was already crammed with people. As such, when a young man like Chu Feng squeezed himself forth so shamelessly as he pushed others aside, that invoked quite a few people's displeasure. There were many curses and grudgeful words thrown about as Chu Feng advanced.

But as if he heard nothing, he continued these blatant actions.

Finally, he arrived at the forefront of the observers after passing through the crowd. At that moment, several familiar people also appeared within his line of sight.

Xuan Xiaochao, You Tonghan, and Fu Fengming were all there. They were conversing in secret, and chatting quite merrily. But, one could still tell there seemed to be something that pressured them heavily.

Other than the three of them, there were many others who he knew of: the Ten Gold-cloak Brothers, Water King, Fire King, Earth King... In reality, all five Elemental Kings were present.

Of the five Elemental Kings, the strongest one was the Gold King—he was a rank three Martial King.

Of course, the ones with the greatest statuses, who possessed the commanding power to call so many members here, were of course the Three Protectors.

You Mingdeng—Chu Feng had seen him before. He naturally recognized this old bastard who held animosity towards him.

He was sitting on a chair made out of Spirit Formations. He appeared to be quite at ease, and by his side were two other people sitting as well.

One was a woman who had a bewitching figure and heavy makeup, while her body exuded an odd fragrance. She looked middle-aged, but everyone knew she was an old granny who'd lived for nearly two hundred years.

The other one was a white-haired old man who wore simple but fitting cloth clothing. He appeared quite ordinary, but within his gentle eyes was an indescribable fierceness. It let people know he was no kind pushover.

Needless to say, those two were the two other Protectors of the Crippling Night Demon Sect—respectively Xuan Xiaochao's master, Xue Xiyue, and Fu Fengming's master, Fu Liansheng.

Both of their cultivation was really high—they were the same as You Mingdeng, rank four Martial Kings. Their lips were moving slightly at that moment, but they let out no sound. They were clearly using mental messages for some sort of discussion.

However, rather than concentrating on these famous people, Chu Feng's gaze was focused more on the center of the palace, because there was one thing that lay there: a large black sword with an overbearing aura—it was the Royal Armament, the Demon Sealing Sword.

Chu Feng was now a person who possessed a Royal Armament. So, when he had a second glance at this Demon Sealing Sword, he could feel its power. This Royal Armament indeed deserved to be called the King of Royal Armaments. An ordinary one was truly no match for the power this sword contained.

“The quality of this Royal Armament is definitely the highest possible. If I’m not mistaken, the person who made it is unlikely a Martial King, but a Martial Emperor. Only a Royal Armament made by a Martial Emperor can hold such quality,” Eggy said.

“A Royal Armament forged by a Martial Emperor, huh? That does make sense. The difference in strength between a Martial King and Martial Emperor is like the heaven and earth. Their comprehension in cultivation is on a completely different level.

“Although they are both creating Royal Armaments, there’s an enormous disparity in quality. If a Martial King’s Royal Armament more or less has imperfections, then a Martial Emperor’s Royal Armament will be absolutely perfect.” Chu Feng nodded, agreeing with Eggy.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 940 - Shameless You Mingdeng

MGA: Chapter 940 - Shameless You Mingdeng

Royal Armaments weren’t objects ordinary Martial Kings could create. They demanded not only cultivation of a Martial King, but also the realm of a Royal-cloak World Spiritist.

This was why there was a limited number of Royal Armaments despite there being quite a few Martial Kings—there was not a single Royal-cloak World Spiritist in the Eastern Sea Region.

Imperial Armaments were the same. Not just any Martial Emperor could create Imperial Armaments, because there was still the second requirement: being an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist.

It was a fairly normal occurrence for a Martial Emperor to forge a Royal Armament; however, undoubtedly, a Royal Armament that came from a Royal-cloak Martial Emperor would have superior quality to one that came

from a Royal-cloak Martial King. As for this Demon Sealing Sword, it likely came from a Martial Emperor.

“Chu Feng, the formation that surrounds the Demon Sealing Sword seems to be changed,” Eggy said.

Upon a careful inspection, Chu Feng found that the formation surrounding the Demon Sealing Sword had indeed changed. There were layers of closely connected circles, and there were ten layers in total. The pressure within every layer was different.

“They didn’t switch the formation; they just changed something from the original one. It must be the work of those Protectors, but I have no clue what they’re preparing to do,” Chu Feng said.

“Heh, these foolish clowns still dare to select a sect head! Don’t they know the person who’s fulfilled all requirements is here already?” Eggy said as she giggled. The person she spoke of was naturally Chu Feng.

“No matter. We still have time anyway, so we can watch the show they put up.” Chu Feng lightly smiled, and prepared himself for a good spectacle.

Back then, the reason You Mingdeng treated him so poorly was solely because he feared Chu Feng’s potential. He, You Mingdeng, feared his position would be affected if Chu Feng continued staying in the Crippling Night Demon Sect. He was afraid of Chu Feng’s ever increasing fame, which would push him to become the sect head eventually.

But today, when You Mingdeng plotted to rise to the role of sect head, Chu Feng was already all prepared. No matter what You Mingdeng did, Chu Feng would make all his plans fall flat, because this position was Chu Feng’s.

“Everyone, I’m extremely grateful to all of you for returning to the Crippling Night Demon Sect from faraway places and peaceful established lives.

“I had thought, with us three old bones’ rallying power, there’d definitely be quite a few brothers who would be willing to rejoin the Crippling Night Demon Sect and recreate our dominion.

“I had never, however, expected it to be this powerful. After being separated for so many years, just some words from us recalled millions of brothers. This has truly exceeded my imaginations.

“As I feel joy, I must say that I also feel grateful. I thank you all—I thank you, my brothers. If Sect Head is up in heaven, he must also feel very relieved.”

You Mingdeng stood up, and spoke with a solemn and appreciative tone. He even deeply bowed to the Crippling Night Demon Sect’s members in an expression of his gratitude.

“Brothers! Do you remember our Crippling Night Demon Sect’s mantra? Do you remember the declarations when we joined the Crippling Night Demon Sect?” shouted someone amongst the crowd.

“I share my lives with the Crippling Night Demon Sect! I share my dignity with the Crippling Night Demon Sect! When the sect is honoured, I am honoured! When the sect is shamed, I am shamed! When the sect lives, I live! When the sect dies, I die!”

The first shout was the catalyst for the response of the entire crowd. The ones within the palace were the first to shout, then the ones within the tunnel, then, in the end, everyone—over ten million members—who gathered in the Depraved Ravine shouted in unison.

“WHEN THE SECT LIVES, I LIVE. WHEN THE SECT DIES, I DIE!”

The Crippling Night Demon Sect’s declaration was even more deafening than thunder. It not only shook the lands, it shook everyone’s heart.

“Good! My brothers are indeed all courageous men! You are indeed dragons amongst men!

“However, a crowd of dragons cannot lack a leader—the Crippling Night Demon Sect is the same.

“If it weren’t for a lack of leadership in so many years, we wouldn’t have allowed that Immortal Execution Archipelago to rise in power, nor would we have allowed them to disgrace us like this.

“Right now, we are facing a crisis. We cannot sit and await death. We must engage in a counterattack, but before doing so we must find a suitable leader.

“Today, we have asked all of you to assemble here just for this. I’m sure there’s a fitting leader in everyone’s hearts right now.

“And if I’m not mistaken, many of you wish for the leader to arise from us Four Protector, and of those people, half of them certainly hope that Qiu Canfeng enters that role.

“That’s right. At this moment, the person most qualified to become sect head is undoubtedly Big Brother Qiu Canfeng. He is the leader of the Four Protectors, but sadly, Big Brother Qiu Canfeng has disappeared for nearly two years. I haven’t even heard anything from him as of yet.

“Even though the Crippling Night Demon Sect is about to begin fighting the Immortal Execution Archipelago, he hasn’t appeared yet. However, from what I know of him, he is absolutely not a person who ignores such matters. If he knows we will soon battle, he would definitely stand out for us, and even be the first to do so.

“But now, he hasn’t. This doesn’t make sense. I have even searched through his residence but I saw no sign of him. No one knows where he’s gone.

“There is no reason for Big Brother Qiu Canfeng to disappear. So, there is only one explanation—he has been met with misfortune, and has been struck by the Immortal Execution Archipelago’s venomous hands,” You Mingdeng said quite sorrowfully.

“What? Great Protector Qiu Canfeng...” Everyone was astonished. They found great difficulty in accepting this as an indescribable sadness and shock spread throughout the crowd.

“He is truly shameless. For his own benefit, he says my master is dead!” Chu Feng cursed in his heart. He, at last, had seen signs of You Mingdeng’s shamelessness.

“Although it is only a guess, it is likely true. Although Big Brother Qiu Canfeng is powerful, I’m sure you all know that the Immortal Execution Archipelago has an old monster—Murong Mingtian.

“Murong Mingtian is able to even defeat Lady Piaomiao, and I’m afraid only the sect head, if he were alive, could stand a chance against him. Even if Big Brother Qiu Canfeng were to fight him, he would likely be defeated.”

Just at that moment, Xue Xiyue also spoke. Even her eyes were a bit red—she had a face of fake sadness.

“Avenge Great Protector, avenge Great Protector!”

“A debt of blood must be paid in blood! A debt of blood must be paid in blood!” shouted someone loudly. Quickly following that were others who also raised their fists and yelled. Their voices were like thunder, every single word loud and clear. One could thus see that Qiu Canfeng held a very high position in all of their hearts, his position even surpassing the other three Protectors combined.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 941 - Choosing the Sect Head

MGA: Chapter 941 - Choosing the Sect Head

“Everyone, be calm! Revenge must be exacted, but before that, we must still decide on a sect head.

“I’m sure everyone must feel that I, Xue Xiyue, and Fu Liansheng are the most fitting to lead the Crippling Night Demon Sect. Actually, from the start, our thoughts were the same.

“However, we’re old. Even if one of us does become sect head, how many years could we last for?

“So, after careful discussion, we decided to abandon this position and instead choose to develop a substitute sect head from an entirely new generation,” You Mingdeng said.

“What? Choose a substitute sect head?”

“But other than the Three Protectors, who else is qualified to hold this position?

“The Five Elemental Kings? No, that’s not right. They too are not young, so if the Three Protectors aren’t going to strive for that position, then they wouldn’t either!”

You Mingdeng’s words made the crowd very shocked. They started discussing amongst themselves, and some people even started panicking. They felt the Three Protectors were the most suitable, but if they refused this position, then there would be no one else who would be suitable.

“Hoh. Let me see what sort of tricks you are playing.”

Chu Feng on the other hand was very calm. He had already understood You Mingdeng's nature. He was not a person who'd give up power so easily. If Chu Feng was not mistaken, You Mingdeng would think of a way to seize the authority of sect head into his hands. His words regarding a substitute sect head had already stated his intentions as clear as day.

“The substitute sect head must be a young person, one that has both ability and potential.

“Of all the people in the Crippling Night Demon Sect's younger generation, Xuan Xiaochao, You Tonghan, and Fu Fengming are the most suitable nominees. So, I first suggest them three.

“Of course, regarding this decision, we must make it absolutely fair: as long as it is a member of the Crippling Night Demon Sect's younger generation, anyone can participate in this.

“As for the method of selection, it's very simple. The Demon Sealing Sword is the Crippling Night Demon Sect's most valuable treasure. When Sect Head was alive, he had left a few words behind: no matter who it is, as long as they are able to pull out the Demon Sealing Sword, they could inherit his position and become the head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect. The members must all listen to that person's orders as well.

“However, the Demon Sealing Sword is too powerful. Other than Lord Sect head, there is simply no one who is qualified to grasp it. Even us three, and Big Brother Qiu Canfeng as well, were unable to pull it out.

“Right now, the Crippling Night Demon Sect is facing an unprecedented danger. We must quickly select a sect head, so we have no choice but to alter Lord Sect Head's wishes.

“We will borrow the power of the Demon Bestowal Slaughtering Formation and lay a new formation. There are ten layers in total, and the closer one approaches the Demon Sealing Sword, the greater the pressure.

“Within the formation, whoever advances the most will become the substitute sect head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect. That person will be developed by me, Xue Xiyue, and Fu Liansheng until he becomes a true sect head.

“Right now, the sect head selection will officially begin. Any person in the younger generation can attempt this formation.” You Mingdeng shouted.

A bit of ruckus arose immediately after he spoke. Xuan Xiaochao and the others were the publicly acclaimed geniuses of the Crippling Night Demon Sect. If a substitute sect head were to be chosen from the younger generation, then only the three of them were the most qualified.

Besides, putting aside personal strength, they even had the backup of the Three Protectors. There was truly no one who was worthy to contest against them.

As a result, those who knew their limits didn’t stand out to challenge the position. However, there were always exceptions. Though most people were logical, there would always exist some fearless people, or perhaps some strong people. People like them were always brimming with confidence, and they would never submit to others.

In fact, after a few brief moments of dead silence, there were a few young people who came out.

They were all Martial Lords, and their cultivations were not weak either: the lowest was a rank three Martial Lord. Including You Tonghan and the others, there was a total of eighteen people who prepared to run for sect head.

“Not bad. Applaudable courage. Our Crippling Night Demon Sect needs exactly brave youths as yourselves.”

On the surface, You Mingdeng appeared very happy towards the young people who were with his own disciple, but from his smile and squinting eyes, Chu Feng saw one word: overestimation. From the bottom of his heart, You Mingdeng looked down on those people who came forth.

“Lord Protectors, Seniors, this untalented Zhao Hu will go first.” A brawny young man clasped his fists at the Three Protectors and their disciples. Then, he went straight for the formation.

hmm His steps were stable, and he was quite robust. However, in the instant he stepped into the tenth layer, his expression changed greatly as an enormous pressure fell upon him.

But he did not give up just like that. Gritting his teeth with widened eyes, he advanced forward one step at a time.

boom

“Ahh!”

Suddenly, he slipped and let out a cry. Blood sprayed straight out of his mouth, and simultaneously he lost control of his body. He shot out from the formation and flew out.

He was whizzing through the air so fast if he were to collide into something, he would receive a heavy injury.

whoosh

You Mingdeng seemed to have expected that. He waved his big sleeve, and a gentle breeze flew over, slowing the male and landing him down safely, thus avoiding any serious injuries.

“Thank you, Lord Protector, for saving me. This untalented Zhao Hu is unable to pass even one layer,” he shamefully said as he wiped the traces of blood on the corner of his mouth.

“No matter. This formation is very powerful. Being able to successfully enter already means you have great aptitude. Work hard and you will have extraordinary results,” You Mingdeng consoled with a smile. He spread open his palm, and a healing pellet flew into Zhao Hu’s hand.

“Thank you, Lord Protector.”

Zhao Hu received the pellet and thanked with a bow and a clasp of his hands. Before the gazes of the crowd, he returned.

After Zhao Hu, others continuously stepped into the formation. However, most of them were like Zhao Hu. They could not even safely pass through the tenth layer, and the one with the best result could only reach the eighth layer but was still unable to enter the seventh.

One after the other, outstanding youths were shot out by the power of the formation. When the observing crowd saw that, they finally knew of the formation’s strength, and also of the Demon Sealing Sword’s power.

Finally, everyone left with failures, leaving behind only Xuan Xiaochao, You Tonghan, and Fu Fengming.

However, they were looking at each other as they wore complicated emotions on their faces. It seemed as if they didn't want to take even a single step. They didn't want to fight over this position of sect head.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 942 - Outcome Has Been Decided

MGA: Chapter 942 - Outcome Has Been Decided

"*Coughcough.*" You Mingdeng deeply coughed, then said in a mental message, "What are you three hesitating for? Don't you know there are so many people waiting?"

"This..." Xuan Xiaochao and You Tonghan were speechless. They knew You Mingdeng was forcing them in.

"Let's not make it so distant between ourselves. If we're going, let's go in together," Fu Fengming said with a faint smile.

"That's not a bad idea. Then, let us brothers enter together." Xuan Xiaochao and You Tonghan nodded their heads in agreement.

Afterwards, they walked together, shoulder-to-shoulder, towards the formation.

Everyone fixed their gaze on them. There were even many heartbeats that quickened.

They knew very well that the future sect head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect would be born from one of these three.

whoosh Xuan Xiaochao and the others advanced with large strides, and easily entered the tenth layer. That shocked everyone, because that proved how powerful their aptitudes were.

Their speed decreased slightly upon entering the ninth layer, but their expressions remained unchanging. They still, with relative ease, passed through the ninth layer and entered the eighth layer.

However, upon entering the eighth layer, not only did their speed drop, even their complexions changed. Two words could briefly represent their condition: great exertion.

In spite of that though, the three of them still successfully passed through the eighth layer, and arrived at the seventh. However, every step became difficult when they reached that layer. When they drew farther inward, perspiration drenched their foreheads.

Their breathing started turning erratic. Their complexions turned pale. They walked with so much difficulty it was as if there were several mountain peaks tied with their legs.

One step. Two steps. Ten steps. Twenty steps. They had then, finally, arrived at the border of the fifth layer.

However, all three of them stopped moving. Not a single one of them stepped forth. Instead, they looked at each other as a hint of a smile surfaced onto their faces.

As for the observer, they couldn't help but hold in their breaths. The lumps in their throats felt as large as their hearts. With such a scene occurring before their eyes, they could see that Xuan Xiaochao and the others were indeed dragons amongst men. Every single one of them had the potential to succeed the position of sect head.

However, there could only be one sect head. Since the sixth layer was already so difficult, the fifth layer was definitely the concluding layer.

"Come! Let us go together. No matter who becomes sect head, we will remain good brothers!" Fu Fengming said.

Xuan Xiaochao and You Tonghan nodded their heads. Then, a tinge of resolution flashed into their eyes. They took a large step, and entered the fifth layer simultaneously.

"Ahh!" However, just as he entered the fifth layer, Xuan Xiaochao let out a painful cry and he flew out.

whoosh Xue Xiyue frowned. She then flew up and took Xuan Xiaochao into her embrace, then landed back at her previous position.

“Ahh, you brat, why didn’t you try your best?” Xue Xiyue scolded disappointedly after inspecting Xuan Xiaochao.

“I’m sorry, Master, I’ve embarrassed you,” Xuan Xiaochao admitted his wrongs with an apologetic face.

“Ahh, whatever. You put too much emphasis on camaraderie. In the future, even if you become sect head, you won’t be decisive. Rather than letting you, it’d be better to let one of those two to become sect head so the Crippling Night Demon Sect wouldn’t fall by your rule.” Xue Xiyue waved her hand. Although she had quite unsightly expression, she didn’t blame him too much.

Many were confused at that exchange of words, but Chu Feng saw the truth: Xuan Xiaochao had intentionally backed out. If he persevered, he could have continued, but he just didn’t want to fight over this position.

Though Xuan Xiaochao had no interest, You Tonghan and Fu Fengming were clearly different. At that moment, they were gnashing their teeth and even their eyes turned blood-red. One could really imagine the immensity of the formation’s pressure.

However, they weren’t really desiring the position of sect head. It was just difficult to go against their masters’ orders. They were struggling right now, not for themselves, but for their masters.

For their masters, who had put great effort into raising them, the two of them would not easily give up. They decided to continue until the very end.

However, one of them was fated to fall before the other, and the fifth layer was their end. With the strength they had, they could not step past the fifth layer.

“Dammit!” Fu Fengming’s complexion suddenly changed. Then, a mouthful of blood sprayed out. His body trembled slightly, and he slipped. Like an arrow that had just left a bow, he shot out from the formation.

whoosh Fu Liansheng willed a soft power to emerge, which brought Fu Fengming to his side.

“Master, I have been useless. Please grant me punishment.” Fu Fengming immediately knelt after landing.

"It's a fair competition, so what crime have you committed? Besides, I know that you've done your best." Fu Liansheng faintly smiled, then helped Fu Fengming up; he was quite a bit gentler than Xue Xiyue.

At that instant, You Mingdeng was elated. He knew his disciple, You Tonghan, had won. So, he didn't care whether he held his composure or not. He said, "Han'er, you've won. There's no need to continue; come out!"

You Tonghan was completely focused on withstanding the enormous pressure. He didn't even notice Fu Fengming had lost, and he only came to his senses after hearing You Mingdeng.

whoosh After flying out of the formation, he first wiped the sweat off his forehead, then asked with a bit of doubt, "Master, I've won?"

"Han'er, you've won! You will become the Crippling Night Demon Sect's sect head," said You Mingdeng as he nodded. This ugly old thing could not even hide his grin.

You Tonghan's face also brimmed with an incomparably excited smile. He knew he had finally made his master proud.

"Lord Protector, I feel that this position of sect head cannot be decided just like this." But suddenly, someone had spoken.

Looking in the direction of the speaker, they discovered it was the head of the Ten Gold-cloak Brothers, Old Liu. He said those words just now.

"What do you mean?" There was a bit of displeasure on You Mingdeng's face.

"Lord Protector, since the substitute sect head is to be chosen from the outstanding younger generation, how could Chu Feng be excluded?"

"Everyone knows that Chu Feng is a member of the Crippling Night Demon Sect. He is also a publicly acclaimed genius in the Eastern Sea Region. Even Murong Xun stands no chance against him. If I may ask, which youth in the Eastern Sea Region can defeat Chu Feng?"

"Besides, Chu Feng had come up to the Demon Sealing Sword and even touched it! Lord Earth King can attest to this."

“So, although I feel the sect head can come from the younger generation, it cannot be selected without Chu Feng because that would not be fair,” Old Liu fiercely said. From his attitude, one could tell he spoke bravely only because he had made his resolve. He was risking his life to demand some fairness for Chu Feng.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 943 - Chu Feng Appears

MGA: Chapter 943 - Chu Feng Appears

“Yeah! Why is Chu Feng left out? Even though You Tonghan is very powerful, he seems to be quite lacking when compared to Chu Feng!”

“Actually, I wanted to ask this question quite a while ago. On such an important day, why hasn’t Chu Feng appeared?” Old Liu’s words were like fuse as a ruckus exploded amongst the crowd. Many people started guessing the answer to that question.

“Heh, you must not know. I’ve heard that Chu Feng’s a coward who’s afraid of death! Because he fears the Immortal Execution Archipelago, he doesn’t want to be affected by the Crippling Night Demon Sect, so he’s already withdrawn!”

“What the hell are you talking about? I’ve personally seen Brother Chu Feng’s glory before. How does he even resemble a person who fears death or the Immortal Execution Archipelago?”

“Besides, Chu Feng had eradicated a sect in the Winter Plains for our brothers! He even killed experts from the Immortal Execution Archipelago!”

“I’ve heard Chu Feng fought Murong Xun in the Gale Plains, and in addition to saving Xuan Xiaochao and the others, he even saved the Water King and Fire King! There are even many people who can act as witness to this!

“Chu Feng, as a member of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, was willing to risk his life. How could he possibly betray us because he’s scared of dying? If you ask me, there’s someone who’s jealous of Chu Feng’s abilities and intentionally forced him out!”

“Shh, you cannot say things like this! The Three Protectors intentionally nominated their own disciples to become sect head. Don’t you understand what they mean by that?”

“Don’t make such random conjectures! Why would the Three Protectors cast away Chu Feng? When the Immortal Execution Archipelago allied with the Three Great Monstrous Clans and attacked the Misty Peak, Chu Feng was there. He was heavily injured on that day, and right now, no one knows whether he is alive or not. If you ask me, he’s likely dead. That’s why he hasn’t shown up.”

“Ahh, has he truly died? That would be quite a pity. I truly do want to see Chu Feng’s glory! If Chu Feng stepped into that formation, he wouldn’t have been stopped at just the fifth layer, right?”

Everyone was talking about Chu Feng amidst their discussions. There were even many who felt Chu Feng was treated unfairly by lacking a chance and protested. Some felt Chu Feng left the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

There were also some who felt Chu Feng had died when the Immortal Execution Archipelago attacked the Misty Peak.

But regardless of their opposing thoughts, one could tell from their very words that they actually really hoped Chu Feng could become the sect head.

“I truly didn’t expect this brat Chu Feng to build up such fame within the Crippling Night Demon Sect during short two years.” Qiu Canfeng, who was standing amongst the crowd, smiled smugly at the praises directed towards his disciple. He couldn’t help feeling a bit proud.

“Everyone, shut up!” You Mingdeng suddenly shouted. His complexion was very, very distorted.

“All of you, listen up! It is unknown where Chu Feng comes from, and he holds an ulterior motive in his heart! Everything he’s done for the Crippling Night Demon Sect is for a scheme!

“Putting aside whether he is alive or dead, even if he comes, he cannot allowed to become sect head!

“Do not think my words are blatant lies! Earth King, you tell them! When you tried imprinting the Incomplete Moon Formation on Chu Feng, what exactly happened?!” You Mingdeng furiously said.

“This... Chu Feng’s body was special, and I had failed to imprint the formation on him,” the Earth King said.

“What? The formation couldn’t be imprinted on Chu Feng?”

“The Incomplete Moon Formation is the symbol of the Crippling Night Demon Sect! Without it, it means he hasn’t joined us!”

“Does it mean Chu Feng wasn’t a member of the Crippling Night Demon Sect from the very beginning?”

Many people felt You Mingdeng’s words were reasonable. As a part of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, they all took pride in the Incomplete Moon Formation on their backs.

Similarly, it was the indication of their sect. So, they reasonably felt those without the formation weren’t from the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

“I know you have a rather deep friendship with Chu Feng, but as Big Brother Qiu Canfeng’s old subordinates, you best know your boundaries. If you dare to support that Chu Feng again, I may not be so polite,” You Mingdeng fiercely shouted as he pointed at Old Liu.

At first, he still wanted to say a few more things, but he was stopped by his brothers. In the end, after consideration of their current state, he remained silent.

“It’s not that I, You Mingdeng, am being selfish. This formation was laid together by me, Xue Xiyue, and Fu Liansheng. It is absolutely fair.

“And my disciple, You Tonghan, had walked the farthest within the formation. He was the nearest to the Demon Sealing Sword, so it should be he who becomes the substitute sect head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect. Is there anyone who wishes to raise objections?” You Mingdeng said again.

The initial rowdy crowd once again returned to peace. Not a single person said another word, nor were there any who dared to object.

You Mingdeng’s mouth couldn’t help but curl into a complacent smile. Then, he said, “Very well. Since there are no objections, I announce You Tonghan to be...”

“Wait!” But all of a sudden, before You Mingdeng was even able to finish speaking, a yell exploded within the crowd.

There was no one who wasn't shocked when this shout erupted. The surrounding crowd quickly distanced themselves from the direction of the voice, afraid they would be dragged into whatever calamity that was about to occur.

Very soon, Chu Feng appeared in front of everyone.

"Who are you?" asked You Mingdeng with a bit of unhappiness. After he looked at Chu Feng, he frowned slightly. Chu Feng changed his appearance, so he didn't know he was Chu Feng.

But daring to speak at such a crucial moment made You Mingdeng feel very displeased. This was a challenge to his power.

"This Crippling Night Demon Sect member heard the person who advances the most within the formation can become sect head. So, I want to give it a try. Can Lord Protector give me this chance?" Chu Feng said with a smile.

"Who is this person? So many people have failed, yet he still wants to enter the formation! Does he truly think he is stronger than You Tonghan? He thinks too highly of himself." A burst of ridicule instantly came from the crowd. They felt Chu Feng was looking to be humiliated.

Originally, You Mingdeng felt displeased at Chu Feng's emergence, but after hearing everyone's mocking, he once again made a strange smile.

He was the same as everyone else. He felt Chu Feng was making a fool of himself, and since Chu Feng wasn't afraid of embarrassment, You Mingdeng was even less afraid. Thus, he decided to allow Chu Feng to disgrace himself completely.

"Of course you can. If you are a member of the Crippling Night Demon Sect's younger generation, you have the right to become sect head. Go ahead, but careful. The power of the formation is very powerful. If you are injured because of it, no one can help you," You Mingdeng said with a smile. The meaning behind his words was very clear as well—he was telling all of them when this overconfident brat blasted away from the formation, no one was allowed to help him. He wanted this person to receive serious injuries, teaching him a lesson in that manner.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 944 - Furiously Pulling out the Demon Sealing Sword

MGA: Chapter 944 - Furiously Pulling out the Demon Sealing Sword

“Lord Protector, no need to trouble yourself with worry.” Chu Feng lightly smiled. He didn’t thank nor bow to You Mingdeng and just walked straight towards the formation in large strides.

Many people only saw Chu Feng’s actions as a joke. No one treated him seriously.

However, when Chu Feng entered the formation and, without change in expression nor speed, continued forward at an unbelievable rate—through the tenth layer, ninth layer, eighth layer, and seventh layer—no one could remain calm anymore.

“What’s happening? How can this brat walk through so many layers without any pressure?”

Not to mention others, even You Mingdeng, Xue Xiyue, and Fu Liansheng, the Three Protectors, changed their faces greatly. They had personally laid that formation. They knew the strength it contained.

Even Xuan Xiaochao and the others were under enormous pressure and were limited at the fifth layer, so how could this brat pass through so many effortlessly?

Before the crowd’s stunned gazes, Chu Feng still walked with ease. He continued advancing forward without the slightest decrease in tempo. He went through the sixth layer, fifth layer, and the fourth layer that even the Protectors’ disciples couldn’t enter, still without a change in expression nor a drop in speed. He seemed as if he were walking on normal ground as he felt no pressure at all.

“Heavens! This is unbelievable! How did he do it?”

The observers felt their scalps go numb and chilly winds blow past their spines. They felt it to be so inconceivable, because Chu Feng still looked so relaxed despite it being the fourth layer.

Recollecting Xuan Xiaochao's and the others' performance earlier, they truly felt stupefied.

After arriving at the fourth layer, Chu Feng stopped moving. "Lord Protector, is this the formation you're using to choose the new sect head? It's rather disappointing," he said mockingly.

"You..." You Mingdeng was so furious he gritted his teeth, but he didn't know how to retort. He could only angrily clench his fists and tremble in rage.

"Impossible! It's impossible he entered the fourth layer so easily! Something must have gone wrong with this formation!" You Tonghan couldn't tolerate his master being humiliated.

After a deep breath, he dashed forward and ran straight into the formation. However, just after he stepped into the fifth layer, he let out a painful cry. He was forced out by its immense power.

"Han'er!"

You Mingdeng's expression changed greatly. You Tonghan's descent was quickly softened, but because he had been too careless, he was struck by an extremely powerful force. He had been knocked unconscious by the pressure of the formation.

"This... Heavens! The formation's power hasn't diminished! With this person's own strength, he walked to the fourth layer!"

"That's unbelievable! Who is he? Why have I never heard of such a monster in the Crippling Night Demon Sect?"

You Tonghan's actions undoubtedly brought alarm amongst the crowd—it told them the formation hadn't been changed. It was still that horrifying. This nameless brat was able to walk to the fourth layer because his own abilities were too strong.

Chu Feng helplessly sighed. They had quite a decent relationship, so he didn't wish harm to fall upon him.

But there was nothing that could be done, nor could You Tonghan be blamed for his rashness. After all, Chu Feng had been insulting his master. If it were another person who insulted Chu Feng's master, he too would not tolerate it.

However, Chu Feng had showed himself in front of You Mingdeng to do exactly that—to throw him into a fit of rage. As such, he couldn't pay much attention to You Tonghan. As he looked at You Mingdeng, he said with a few chuckles, "Lord Protector, it seems that this position of substitute sect head will be changed."

After speaking, Chu Feng turned around and continued forward. He, amidst stunned and devastated gazes, passed through the third layer, second layer, and in a straight path came to the first layer.

Everyone was dumbstruck. Even Xue Xiyue's and Fu Liansheng's eyes were bursting with astonishment.

But Chu Feng clearly didn't plan to stop just there. He looked over You Mingdeng, Xue Xiyue, and Fu Liansheng, then asked, "Lord Protectors, Lord Sect Head proclaimed whoever pulled out this Demon Sealing Sword could become the head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, right?"

Xue Xiyue and You Mingdeng tightly furrowed their brows, and both remained silent.

However, Fu Liansheng faintly smiled, and said, "That is true. Sect Head had said regardless of the person, as long as they pull out the Demon Sealing Sword, they could become sect head."

"Then, if someone does become the head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, does it mean the three of you also need to listen to their command?" Chu Feng asked again.

"Of course. The sect head is the leader of the Crippling Night Demon Sect. Not to mention us, everyone in the Crippling Night Demon Sect must follow their command. They are not permitted to disobey," Fu Liansheng said as he nodded.

"Since that's true, then I won't become substitute sect head. It'll just be more worth it to become sect head." Chu Feng chuckled, and as he spoke, he even cast his gaze towards the nearby Demon Sealing Sword.

"How arrogant. Even we Four Protectors weren't able to pull out this Demon Sealing Sword. Do you think *you* can?" Xue Xiyue spoke. Her tone was very mocking—mocking Chu Feng's ignorance.

“Xue Xiyue is correct. The Demon Sealing Sword is very powerful. I’d advise you to avoid contact with it, otherwise if it’s unhappy and kills you, even we can do nothing about it,” You Mingdeng said in a threatening manner.

“This is not up to you, but up to me,” Chu Feng sneered, then, before the gazes of the crowd, he held out his palm, and placed it on the Demon Sealing Sword.

boom

In the instant Chu Feng grasped the Demon Sealing Sword, layers upon layers of boundless auras swept out like a hurricane, the Demon Sealing Sword akin to its eye.

The auras were so powerful many people were unable to withstand it. They were forced back, and even the entire palace violently shook.

“Heavens! He truly wants to pull out the Demon Sealing Sword! He’s too daring!” The members of the Crippling Night Demon Sect were quite frightened.

If Chu Feng’s previous actions merely shocked them, Chu Feng’s current actions completely terrified them.

“Heh, this is indeed a good sword. Let me become your master!”

Chu Feng made a smile. As he spoke, he clenched his hand, and fiercely waved his arm. After a clank, the entire earth trembled. A heavy object had been pulled up from the ground, and was held in Chu Feng’s hand.

Chu Feng had drawn out the pitch-black Demon Sealing Sword from the formation.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 945 - Kill without Exception

MGA: Chapter 945 - Kill without Exception

When the Demon Sealing Sword arose, everything shook. Gales blew all about, and the entire palace was in chaos.

Only after a long while did it gradually calm down...

When the burst of might faded away, Chu Feng was still standing at the very same place; however, in his hand, there was an extra pitch-black sword—it was, of course, the Demon Sealing Sword.

“This... How is this possible? He truly pulled it out!”

Everyone was dumbfounded. They felt this was not reality, and some people were even trembling in fear. No matter what, they never expected this young man to truly pull out the Demon Sealing Sword.

It was the Demon Sealing Sword! A Royal Armament no one could pull out other than the former head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect! Even the Four Protectors had failed, yet this young man had succeeded! How could they remain collected?

“Bastard! Who do you think you are to hold the Demon Sealing Sword?”

You Mingdeng was enraged. He released his rank four Martial King aura, and with killing intent, he leapt towards Chu Feng. He was actually attacking Chu Feng.

boom

However, before he was even able to approach him, a thunderous explosion rang out. At the same time, the Demon Sealing Sword in Chu Feng’s hand shot up, bringing Chu Feng into the air. After breaking through the palace’s ceiling, he broke through the underground palace, into the surface, arriving in the sky.

“Heavens, what is that? What flew from beneath?”

“It’s a person, and it seems to be someone from the Crippling Night Demon Sect! Who is that? I don’t think I’ve seen him before?”

The people on the surface still didn’t know anything that occurred underground. When an object flew out from below and straight into the blue sky, it shocked the people above ground. All of them raised their head and curiously looked.

Simultaneously, the ones underground started flying out and arrived on the surface. What Chu Feng took away was the Crippling Night Demon Sect’s treasure, the Demon Sealing Sword!

However, only after arriving on the surface did they discover Chu Feng hadn't left. At that moment, he stood unmoving in the air. The sky itself started changing due to Chu Feng's emergence.

boom rumble rumble rumble

Rolling black clouds surface into the peaceful atmosphere, and thick strings of lightning were akin to enormous sinister dragons as they circled around Chu Feng's body, protecting him.

The Demon Sealing Sword released endless black mist which lingered endlessly in the air. A horrifying ear-piercing howl, akin to the cry of a demon, reverberated through the mist and out into the surrounding area.

Moreover, the black mist progressively increased in size. By the time it stopped expanding, it had already enveloped the entire sky. Despite the terrifying howls and cries that rang out from the black mass, none of it harmed Chu Feng. Rather, it appeared that it was guarding him instead.

"What is happening? The Demon Sealing Sword is protecting him!" Not to mention others, even You Mingdeng and the other Protectors were completely baffled.

"You Mingdeng, I pulled out the Demon Sealing Sword! Therefore, I am now the head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect! You don't kneel and kowtow, and even dare to attack me! This is truly dishonourable, and this offense warrants execution!" Chu Feng shouted as he held the Demon Sealing Sword and pointed at You Mingdeng below.

"What? That's the Demon Sealing Sword? The Crippling Night Demon Sect's most valuable treasure, the Demon Sealing Sword?"

Chu Feng's words undoubtedly told everyone he had successfully pulled it out, and became qualified to lead them.

"What should we do? When the sect head was alive, he had indeed said the one who pulled out the Demon Sealing Sword could become sect head, and we had to unconditionally serve that person!"

Many people panicked. Although Chu Feng had been successful, they were naturally unwilling to have a person they knew nothing of to lead them.

“Who are you?!” You Mingdeng asked. His words lacked the slightest bit of respect, and instead were filled with fury and resentment.

“You really want to know who I am? No problem, I’ll show you who I am!” Chu Feng laughed, then waved his big sleeve. When the sleeve slid past his face, Chu Feng’s complexion had changed, returning to its initial form.

“Chu Feng? He’s Chu Feng?!”

The observers couldn’t help but deeply gasp. Some were incomparably excited, and some felt disbelief.

Even though for many of them it was their first time seeing Chu Feng, they still recognized him. After all, Chu Feng was famous in the Eastern Sea Region. His wanted posters were pasted in every street in the Eastern Sea Region. Not to mention the people from the Crippling Night Demon Sect, even many ordinary citizens knew of Chu Feng’s appearance.

“Brother Chu Feng, is it you? Is it truly you? You haven’t died?”

Xuan Xiaochao and Fu Fengming were elated as they shouted loudly. If it weren’t for their masters stopping them, they would have already risen into the air and passionately embraced him.

Their relationship with Chu Feng had always been quite good. When they first heard that Chu Feng had possibly died, they had even felt sorrowful for quite a while. Right now, knowing that Chu Feng hadn’t died yet, they were naturally surprised and excited.

“Big Brother Xuan Xiaochao, it is indeed me. I haven’t died. I escaped from the Misty Peak.” Chu Feng nodded. He too had quite good feelings towards Xuan Xiaochao and the others.

“Haha, it truly is Chu Feng! This is great! I was wondering why this person was so monstrous... So he was Chu Feng! He’s an unprecedented genius in the Eastern Sea Region, and now, he has pulled out the Demon Sealing Sword! He should indeed become sect head.”

There were cheers that rang out within the sea of people after confirmation of Chu Feng’s identity. From that, one could see a large portion of the Crippling Night Demon Sect felt it was acceptable for Chu Feng to become sect head. Some even wanted him to.

Although Chu Feng had only been in the Crippling Night Demon Sect for a very short time, his achievements completely convinced them all. They felt only a genius like him could bring the Crippling Night Demon Sect back to its glory. He was the most suitable nominee for sect head.

Before, due to the existence of the Four Protectors, they didn't dare to say those words. However, Chu Feng had now pulled out the Demon Sealing Sword. He became the successor the former sect head decided on. They could finally speak the thoughts in their hearts.

"Chu Feng, I knew you had ulterior motives by joining the Crippling Night Demon Sect! Indeed, you came here for the Crippling Night Demon Sect's invaluable treasure, the Demon Sealing Sword! Today, don't even think of leaving!

"Members of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, attention! This child is not a member of our sect, and he even dares to rob our treasure! He must be killed without exception.

"No matter who it is, if you're a member of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, you will have accomplished a great deed if you kill Chu Feng, and you will be greatly rewarded!" But just at that moment, You Mingdeng pointed towards Chu Feng and shouted. He had actually ordered Chu Feng's death.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 946 - What the Public Desires

MGA: Chapter 946 - What the Public Desires

"What? Kill Chu Feng? Why? Why must we kill Chu Feng? Isn't he a member of the Crippling Night Demon Sect?"

"Chu Feng only joined us for the Demon Sealing Sword? Is that really true? It wouldn't be a lie, would it?"

"No matter if it's real or not, it is a fact that Chu Feng brought great animosity between him and the Immortal Execution Archipelago because he saved members of the Crippling Night Demon Sect! How could we possibly attack and kill him?"

However, beyond You Mingdeng's expectations, after sending down that killing order, there was not even a single person who moved. There were even many who spoke up for Chu Feng.

"Lord You Mingdeng, didn't you say the person who pulled out the Demon Sealing Sword could become the head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, and that we must also listen to their commands?" Old Liu once again stood out.

"Insolence! You've been repeatedly defending that Chu Feng. Are you conspiring with him?!" You Mingdeng furiously shouted.

"Lord You Mingdeng, I feel that he's correct. You were the one who personally said Sect Head's last words, and we had personally seen Chu Feng pull out the Demon Sealing Sword. I believe we should obey Sect Head's last words." Unexpectedly, the Earth King had spoken as well.

"Lord Protectors, without a sect head, you are the highest in command of the Crippling Night Demon Sect. But even so, you should still listen to Sect Head's last words. Otherwise, it wouldn't matter how much strength you obtain. You will not be able to convince everyone else!"

"That's right. Besides, Chu Feng isn't someone we know nothing of. Back then, in the Gale Plains, Chu Feng had risked his life and fought the Immortal Execution Archipelago, doing all that just to save us. Not only have we brothers seen it, Xuan Xiaochao, You Tonghan, and Fu Fengming have seen it as well.

"Lord You Mingdeng, have you not seen it too? Will a person who does his best for us and dares to even throw away his own life desire harm to befall the Crippling Night Demon Sect?" said the Water King and Fire King as well. Their tone was very intense, and it was simply as if they were slapping You Mingdeng's face.

Back in the Gale Plains, due to You Mingdeng's strength, they endured his treatment of Chu Feng. However, today, they could not. If they endured any further, You Mingdeng would likely kill Chu Feng.

"Everyone, I'm sure you have heard of what Chu Feng's done to the Crippling Night Demon Sect. I'm sure you've also heard of Chu Feng's potential. Right now, he has pulled out the Demon Sealing Sword, and become our future sect head! Tell me, is he worthy of this position?" someone suddenly yelled within

the crowd. It was very loud, loud enough to let everyone could hear his words clearly.

“YEEESSS—” replied the millions of Crippling Night Demon Sect members in unison. Their voices were truly like thunder, and such a powerful sound was a manifestation of all their desires of Chu Feng becoming sect head.

“You dimwitted fools! We don’t know where this child comes from. How can he be allowed to become sect head?”

You Mingdeng’s complexion darkened heavily from anger when he heard the spurts of shouts. Even his heart could explode from the rage. He could not endure this. Thus, he decided to not endure it. Without speaking anymore, he leapt up and rose into the sky. With his boundless rank four Martial King pressure and the horrifying aura that stirred up chaos, he rushed towards Chu Feng, once again attacking him.

wuaoo—

However, the mist surrounding Chu Feng attacked You Mingdeng with an ear-piercing howl.

“Who can stop me?!”

But You Mingdeng was still, after all, a rank four Martial King. When he threw forth his punch, even space itself cracked. The black mist also dissipated instantly.

wuaoo— However, when it dispersed, the mist regathered—that cycle was repeating unceasingly. There was no decrease in amount, and instead, more and more converged together. Like an army of millions, they kept on pouncing towards You Mingdeng and attacking him. It was very difficult to deal with that.

“Look! Even the Demon Sealing Sword is protecting Chu Feng! It wants Chu Feng to become its master!” Old Liu shouted as he pointed at the sky.

“This is unbelievable! It’s said that the Demon Sealing Sword holds extreme arrogance! Even the sect head had only been able to use it, but not fully control it. Yet, this Demon Sealing Sword is protecting Chu Feng in such a manner. Could it be really as Old Liu said? Does this Demon Sealing Sword wants to approve Chu Feng as its master?” Even the bystanders exclaimed. They felt Old Liu’s words were very reasonable.

“Could this be the will of the heavens?” Not to mention others, even Xue Xiyue, knitted her brows slightly. Shock emerged into her eyes.

“Master, help Chu Feng! I understand Brother Chu Feng. He definitely isn’t a person who holds malicious intentions. In fact, like what the Water King and Fire King said, if it weren’t for Chu Feng, perhaps we would have died already at the Gale Plains. You wouldn’t have seen your disciple anymore,” Xuan Xiaochao begged.

“This...”

Xue Xiyue was a bit moved. As one of the Four Protectors, regardless of her viewpoint, she was not an unreasonable person. Chu Feng was a genius—she could see that. However, she was the same as You Tonghan: she held some suspicions regarding Chu Feng’s background.

“You Mingdeng... just leave it. Even the Demon Sealing Sword wants Chu Feng to become sect head. Why go through all this trouble?”

“Just follow Sect Head’s last words, and let this Chu Feng become sect head,” Fu Liansheng said suddenly. Moreover, his tone was sincere—one could tell his words came from the bottom of his heart.

“Fu Liansheng, your head is muddled! We don’t know where this child comes from! Who knows what he’s planning? What if he’s someone who hates the Crippling Night Demon Sect, and leads us to destruction in the future? Who will carry this responsibility?”

You Mingdeng was unmoved by anything. He ignored everything that was said. A hint of fierceness flashed into his eyes and, towards Chu Feng in the sky, he loudly shouted, “Chu Feng, you’re unable to use the power of this Demon Sealing Sword! Don’t think you’re safe with it protecting you. If I want to kill you, no one can stop me!”

boom Suddenly, You Mingdeng released a roar, and threw out a palm attack.

It instantly shot forth powerfully. Gales arose with the emergence of the attack, and as the atmosphere transformed, the palm became akin to a giant wave of air.

Layer stacking on layer, it surged forward and oppressed all. This was not an ordinary attack—it was a rank seven martial skill. Even though it was not at the peak, in the hands of a rank four Martial King, he drew forth an extremely horrifying power.

bang bang bang bang The black mist guarding Chu Feng was instantly forced back. It was unable to stop You Mingdeng's rank seven martial skill.

Like he said, it didn't matter how powerful the sword was. Chu Feng was too weak; he could not use the true might of the Demon Sealing Sword. He was simply unable to put up a fight against this rank four Martial King.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 947 - Who Dares to Harm My Disciple

MGA: Chapter 947 - Who Dares to Harm My Disciple

"It won't be that easy to kill me."

Although the power from the Demon Sealing Sword was unable to block You Mingdeng's attack, it had greatly reduced its speed. This gave Chu Feng sufficient time to react.

So, he willed an azure aura to rise beneath his feet, and amidst a dragon's roar, the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique had appeared.

Under the watchful gaze of the crowd, Chu Feng grasped the Demon Sealing Sword in his hand, and willed the azure dragon beneath his feet to dodge You Mingdeng's rank seven martial skill.

At the same time, Chu Feng's aura was completely released.

"Rank seven Martial Lord? Brother Chu Feng, you're a rank seven Martial Lord?" Fu Fengming couldn't help deeply gasping.

"Monster! Hell, he's too monstrous! Back at the Gale Plains, he was still a rank five Martial Lord. How is he a rank seven Martial Lord already? Brother Chu Feng, your speed of improvement is quite terrifying!"

As for Xuan Xiaochao, he too was quite shocked by Chu Feng's current cultivation. But amidst his feelings of shock, excitement filled his face as he also felt happy for Chu Feng.

Actually, at that instant, everyone was stunned. Chu Feng was quite famous, so his cultivation was something everyone always focused on. However, it seemed that every time Chu Feng appeared, his cultivation would increase. His speed was simply worthy of admiration.

“Chu Feng, you will not escape today!”

However, in contrast to everyone else, You Mingdeng’s bloodlust rose higher and higher. To him, the quicker Chu Feng grew in cultivation, the greater the threat he presented. He had to finish off Chu Feng right now, otherwise it would have an enormous impact on his future.

“Die!”

After collecting his thoughts, he once again made his move. Waving his sleeves, the gales rose and the clouds flowed. A boundless Martial power had become an army of thousands as it rushed unstoppably and invincibly in the air—it was a rank nine martial skill.

“Oh? It seems that this old bastard has been enraged. He looks serious now.”

Chu Feng gave a light chuckle as he looked at the army rapidly approaching. Although he could not block that attack, he felt not even an iota of fear. He knew clearly there was an even more powerful person guarding him.

“Xue Xiyue, let’s go together! We cannot allow You Mingdeng to kill this Chu Feng!” Fu Liansheng had already risen. He prepared to help Chu Feng.

“Mm. This child is truly a monster. No matter where he comes from, we must protect his growth.” Xue Xiyue also flew up after seeing Chu Feng’s current cultivation. She was not only preparing to save Chu Feng, she was preparing to protect Chu Feng on his way to become the sect head.

“I must kill this child! No one should even think of saving him!” You Mingdeng swore to kill Chu Feng. He gnashed his teeth upon feeling Fu Liansheng’s and Xue Xiyue’s presence, but he didn’t stop, and instead, channeled his full strength into the rank nine martial skill. At the same time, he flew towards Chu Feng.

boom rumble rumble rumble

A rank nine martial skill was already powerful. But when a rank four Martial King was propelling it forward with everything he had, it truly seemed as if nothing could stop its path. When the army of millions advanced in the sky, even space itself was shattered. None could block that might—not even the power of the Demon Sealing Sword.

“This isn’t good! What is this You Mingdeng doing? He refuses to listen to reason!” Fu Liansheng frowned slightly. He knew if You Mingdeng wanted to truly kill Chu Feng, he would not make it even if he moved right now.

“You Mingdeng, have you gone mad from age? How can you kill a genius like him?” Xue Xiyue furiously rebuked.

“Lord You Mingdeng, that is our sect head! Killing one’s own sect head is a greatly dishonourable act. Please reconsider!”

At the same time, many other members of the Crippling Night Demon Sect shouted. Nearly everyone was standing out for Chu Feng.

“Everyone, shut up!

“I said, this child must be killed! Today, no one should even think of saving him!”

The more the crowd supported Chu Feng, the more hatred You Mingdeng felt towards him. Gritting his teeth, he further increased the power in his attack. He wanted to completely destroy Chu Feng, not even wishing to leave a corpse behind.

“No one should even think of saving him? Those are quite the words you have there! Today, let me see who dares to even touch my disciple!”

However, when the crowd all felt helpless and that Chu Feng was absolutely dead, an extremely horrifying aura suddenly exploded amidst the crowd. At the same time, a person, with speed even quicker than light, shot up from the surface and arrived in front of Chu Feng.

Moreover, he didn’t even move after reaching that position. He released a pressure that even caused space itself to tremble and collapse. You Mingdeng’s rank nine martial skill instantly disappeared.

“Heavens! Such power! Who is it?”

“It’s Chu Feng’s master! It’s Chu Feng’s legendary master! He had said before that Chu Feng is his disciple!”

“Chu Feng’s master is this strong? Who is he?!”

The sudden appearance of a person caused everyone to be shocked. They heard Qiu Canfeng’s voice, but didn’t see any signs of him. They could only just guess that Chu Feng’s fabled master had appeared.

“That voice just now...?” Fu Liansheng, Xue Xiyue, and You Mingdeng all widened their eyes in surprise because the voice just now was so familiar.

whoosh At that instant, Fu Liansheng and Xue Xiyue had arrived in the air. They waved their sleeves, and the chaotic shock waves vanished. When everything returned to normal, Qiu Canfeng had finally appeared before the crowd.

“Big Brother Qiu Canfeng, it’s truly you?” Although they had made a guess, after seeing Qiu Canfeng with their own eyes, Fu Liansheng and the others were still stunned.

“That is? Great Protector Qiu Canfeng!”

“It is truly him! He didn’t die, he didn’t die! This is great!”

As for the others, they were elated. Some even shed tears from emotion, because that was truly a heavenly great news to them.

“Fu Liansheng, Xue Xiyue, long time no see.”

Qiu Canfeng smiled faintly when he looked at them. No matter what they had done before, they still aimed to save Chu Feng. That made some good feelings blossom; at least, in consideration of the situation in whole, they were still thinking for the Crippling Night Demon Sect’s benefit.

“Big Brother Qiu Canfeng, you’ve become a rank five Martial King. Congratulations!” Xue Xiyue said with a smile. If it were before, she would definitely feel extremely displeased at his superior cultivation. However, the Crippling Night Demon Sect was facing a great disaster. To all of them, Qiu Canfeng’s increase in strength was most definitely something good.

“Big Brother Qiu Canfeng, you said just now that this Chu Feng is your disciple?” Fu Liansheng asked.

After Fu Liansheng spoke, all noise disappeared. No one spoke. They all raised their heads and fixed their gazes tightly on Qiu Canfeng, awaiting his answer.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 948 - Conquering the Demon Sealing Sword

MGA: Chapter 948 - Conquering the Demon Sealing Sword

Qiu Canfeng lightly smiled at the millions of expectant gazes, then said with a calm but loud voice, “That’s right. I, Qiu Canfeng, have a disciple—Chu Feng. However, I didn’t want people to know this relationship. I didn’t want him to receive everyone’s help by borrowing my fame. I wanted him to rely on himself and grow.

“That’s why I’ve always had him conceal the fact that I’m his master. I forbade him from telling anyone.

“After all that’s happened, I feel very relieved because he didn’t disappoint me. Even without my protection, he was still able to rise in the Eastern Sea Region with his own strength. I feel proud to have a disciple like this. I am proud to be his master.”

“Huaa—”

A commotion instantly arose amongst the crowd. Everyone’s emotions changed from his words.

Qiu Canfeng had clearly told everyone that Chu Feng was his disciple.

This fact changed everything. It meant, from the very start, Chu Feng was a member of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, and he was even the strongest disciple amongst all four Protectors.

He even pulled out the Demon Sealing Sword. It was completely reasonable that Chu Feng sat on the position of sect head.

It was truly difficult to *not* have Chu Feng become sect head. If he did enter that role, there wouldn't be anyone who'd dare to object. Instead, this was something everyone wished for.

"Ahh, but sadly, although Chu Feng's abilities were shown completely, it attracted envy. It's one thing that outsiders bully him, but even people from the Crippling Night Demon Sect want to deal with him. This truly brings disappointment and sorrow my heart." Qiu Canfeng suddenly sighed with both fury and sorrow. He even cast his gaze towards You Mingdeng.

You Mingdeng instantly trembled when Qiu Canfeng's gazed at him. He was extremely uneasy at that moment. He reached the extremities of panic.

First of all, Chu Feng was Qiu Canfeng's disciple—that had already made him anxious.

It meant all of his prior suspicions were wrong. Chu Feng sincerely wished to help the Crippling Night Demon Sect. And since Chu Feng was already a member of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, all the crimes he lay upon Chu Feng were without merit.

Originally, the general population of the Crippling Night Demon Sect had already been defending Chu Feng. They felt You Mingdeng was very dishonourable. They felt he was offending a superior. They wanted Chu Feng to become sect head, yet he, You Mingdeng, insisted on such an unreasonable action and wanted to kill Chu Feng. Right now, in hindsight, he was truly completely in the wrong.

If Qiu Canfeng's cultivation were the same as his, then he'd just be reprimanded; no one could do anything to him due to his status, position, and strength.

However, Qiu Canfeng's cultivation was now superior—he was a rank five Martial King. That was not an existence he stood a chance against. If Qiu Canfeng prepared to punish him, then, though it sounded unpleasant, he could only endure. He wouldn't dare to fight back.

"You Mingdeng, you tell me. Chu Feng, as my disciple, joined the Crippling Night Demon Sect, and fought for the honour of the Crippling Night Demon Sect. Is he in the wrong?" Qiu Canfeng asked as he stared at You Mingdeng.

“He... He isn’t,” You Mingdeng said with a lowered head. There was no spirit in his words.

“Then, you tell me: Chu Feng’s body is special, leading an incompatibility with the Incomplete Moon Formation. So, the formation could not be imprinted on his body. Is he in the wrong?” Qiu Canfeng asked again.

“He... He isn’t,” You Mingdeng said again quietly.

“Louder!” Qiu Canfeng shouted furiously.

“He isn’t! He isn’t in the wrong,” You Mingdeng replied clearly. His body trembled from fright, and he even took two steps back.

“Then, tell me. He is so outstanding, and he also pulled out the Demon Sealing Sword. With complete reason, he can become the head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect. Why is there someone who’s bringing up trouble, and even wants to kill him? What plan does this person have? What is he thinking?” Qiu Canfeng asked again.

“Big Brother Qiu Canfeng, I was foolish, I was foolish! I was only thinking for the Crippling Night Demon Sect! Forgive me! If I knew Chu Feng was your disciple, how could I suspect him?”

Finally, You Mingdeng broke down. He couldn’t bear this sort of interrogation. He couldn’t bear the gaze of the crowd. He actually admitted his wrongs to Qiu Canfeng.

“Oh, you’re wrong. You are indeed wrong. However, it is useless telling that to me. You must admit your wrongs to our sect head.” Qiu Canfeng cast his gaze behind, towards Chu Feng.

“This...” You Mingdeng’s expression changed. He could admit his wrongs to Qiu Canfeng, but doing that to Chu Feng... he couldn’t do that.

It didn’t matter whether Chu Feng had the Demon Sealing Sword or not. It didn’t matter if Chu Feng was Qiu Canfeng’s disciple or not. It didn’t matter if Chu Feng won everyone’s hearts or not. In his own mind, Chu Feng was still hostile brat who wasn’t worthy to become the head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

You Mingdeng deeply sucked in some air, then said, “Chu Feng has indeed pulled out the Demon Sealing Sword, but if you want me to approve of him as the sect head just on that alone, I will absolutely not. I will not serve a person weaker than me, unless...”

“Unless what?” Qiu Canfeng asked.

“Unless he gains the approval of the Demon Sealing Sword in front of everyone. Only then is it proof that this Demon Sealing Sword is truly his and he has the qualifications to lead us,” You Mingdeng said.

“This...” Qiu Canfeng’s eyes glittered, and he couldn’t help but cast his gaze towards Chu Feng.

The Demon Sealing Sword was incomparably arrogant. It was the king of Royal Armaments, and even though the former sect head’s strength was overwhelming, he had still spent quite some effort to acquire it—and he just hardly grasped it. He hadn’t truly obtained the Demon Sealing Sword.

Chu Feng’s aptitude was extraordinary—everyone knew that. However, his cultivation was still lacking. Could he, a rank seven Martial Lord, receive the Demon Sealing Sword’s approval? That was truly a difficult question.

Moreover, it was as You Mingdeng said. Chu Feng had pulled out the Demon Sealing Sword, and many people did wish for Chu Feng to become sect head.

However, it was likely there were people who weren’t convinced in their hearts. Unless Chu Feng could gain the Demon Sealing Sword’s approval and truly take it for himself, there would more or less be some doubt and objection.

“Master, it’s just gaining its approval. That’s nothing. Since I will receive it sooner or later, there’s no problem doing it in front of everyone now.”

Chu Feng lightly smiled. Then, he spun the Demon Sealing Sword and slowly raised it up. With a thought, a strand of aura entered the sword. He wanted to merge it with the Demon Sealing Sword, and thoroughly grasp this king of Royal Armaments.

BOOM—

When his aura fused into the sword, an explosion instantly rang out. Layers of black flames were like a surging wave yet also like an erupting volcano as they violently gushed out from the Demon Sealing Sword.

wuaoo—

Frightening howls rang throughout the world. An enormous pressure fell upon their backs, feeling as if the entire world were about to collapse.

The might of the king of Royal Armaments had been shown completely.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 949 - Rank Eight Martial Lord

MGA: Chapter 949 - Rank Eight Martial Lord

“So this is the Demon Sealing Sword. Its might is indeed far superior to an ordinary Royal Armament.”

Qiu Canfeng tightly furrowed his brows at the crack in the fabrics of space surrounding Chu Feng. He knew the power of the Demon Sealing Sword. He knew it was very difficult to subdue it.

whoosh

But in the instant worry began to spring up in Qiu Canfeng’s heart, the destructive might rapidly shrank. They didn’t surge into the Demon Sealing Sword, but into Chu Feng’s body.

In the end, the boundless aura the Demon Sealing Sword released all entered Chu Feng’s body, as if it had always been one with him.

“Heavens, this...” Everyone was dumbfounded. They were speechless. All of their jaws dropped to the floor.

At that instant, the Demon Sealing Sword didn’t just approve of Chu Feng. Even the boundless black flames amidst a frightening howl all entered his body. Chu Feng’s aura then soared—from a rank seven Martial Lord, he became a rank eight Martial Lord.

He had experienced a change like that before, and it was also in this Depraved Valley, and it was also a Royal Armament recognizing its master.

There was only one fabled explanation for this atypical phenomenon—Absolute Submission.

“Absolute Submission! The Demon Sealing Sword not only approves Chu Feng as its master, it even submits to him! This is unbelievable!”

Everyone was dumbfounded. What was the Demon Sealing Sword? That was the Royal Armament not even the former sect head could subdue.

Yet, right now, Chu Feng had not only subdued the Demon Sealing Sword, he even made it submit and increased his own cultivation. What did that mean? It meant at least in terms of aptitude Chu Feng was far superior to the former sect head. It was so powerful that even this Demon Sealing Sword was willing to submit to him.

“This... How is this possible?!” You Mingdeng was also stupefied, because he truly had no words to speak after seeing that scene.

“My brothers, what are you looking at? Quickly greet the new sect head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, Lord Chu Feng!” Xue Xiyue loudly said.

Only after she spoke did they break out of their gaze. No one dared to hesitate as they all knelt on the ground, kowtowing and saying in unison, “We greet Lord Sect Head!”

After seeing the army of millions kneeling down, Xue Xiyue and Fu Liansheng, after a glance at each other, knelt in the air at the same time—towards Chu Feng, “We greet Lord Sect Head!”

Nearly all members of the Crippling Night Demon Sect had knelt towards Chu Feng, expressing their decision of recognizing Chu Feng as their sect head. Only Qiu Canfeng and You Mingdeng remained standing.

“You Mingdeng, what other objections do you have?” Qiu Canfeng questioned as he looked at You Mingdeng a bit unhappily.

After taking another deep breath, You Mingdeng knelt in the air with a *whoosh*, and kowtowed, admitting, “This little You Mingdeng has eyes but could not see. I’ve done a dishonourable act, so Lord Sect Head, please bestow punishment! Even if you grant me death, I, You Mingdeng, will not complain at all!”

Qiu Canfeng only nodded in satisfaction. He turned around, and was going to kneel down towards Chu Feng.

“Master, there’s no need! How can I accept this?” But Chu Feng had stopped him.

“Lord Sect Head, in the Crippling Night Demon Sect, even masters are inferior to the sect head. Rules cannot be broken, otherwise how can you establish might in the future?” However, Qiu Canfeng merely smiled lightly then forcibly knelt.

“Master, quickly rise!” Chu Feng quickly pulled Qiu Canfeng up, then he waved his hand and shouted, “Brothers, quickly rise!”

“Thank you Sect Head!” The army of millions only stood up after Chu Feng spoke.

However, You Mingdeng remained kneeling even after everyone rose. He was unwilling to rise.

“You Mingdeng, you can rise as well,” Chu Feng said.

“This little one does not dare! I have disrespected Lord Sect Head, and I should be executed. I ask for punishment to set an example!”

Every single word from You Mingdeng came from his heart. From that, one could see after the Demon Sealing Sword submitted to Chu Feng, he too approved of Chu Feng to become his sect head. He knew how foolish he was before. He nearly killed a person who could lead their sect to glory.

“Your former actions had gone against the former sect head’s wishes. That is indeed a crime deserving of death, but since you were thinking for the Crippling Night Demon Sect, I’ll give you a chance to exchange your offenses with deeds,” Chu Feng loudly said.

He walked up to You Mingdeng. Disregarding the risk he might attack, Chu Feng personally helped You Mingdeng up, and as he did, he even bent his waist, lowered his head, and said quietly, “Senior You Mingdeng, right now, the Crippling Night Demon Sect has an enemy we have to face. We should point the edge of the blade outside, not inside. If we possess the ability, then we should use it for enemies, not each other.”

You Mingdeng's heart was shaken at those words. Even his body trembled slightly. He didn't insist on kneeling, and after standing, he said very sincerely, "Thank you Sect Head. This little one will do my best to accomplish deeds and not disappoint your grace."

Qiu Canfeng, Xue Xiyue, and Fu Liansheng captured that within their eyes. They couldn't help but nod their heads pleasedly.

"Forging when soft"—when Chu Feng made an old stubborn person like You Mingdeng submit to him, they really had to admit they increasingly felt letting Chu Feng become sect head was the correct choice. This young man was not only decisive, he was also a person who was broad-minded and cared about the situation at large.

Afterwards, Qiu Canfeng spoke of many thoughts that fortified Chu Feng's position of sect head in everyone's hearts.

Moreover, he started arranging matters against the Immortal Execution Archipelago. In this period of time, Chu Feng was training in seclusion with the Demon Sealing Sword.

After Chu Feng made it submit, not only had he obtained power much stronger than other Royal Armaments, he discovered a special power—it was one connected the formation imprinted on everyone's backs.

Chu Feng felt if he used that power well, perhaps he could create a Demon Bestowal Slaughtering Formation that could be moved. As long as he was within a certain distance, he could split the power in the Demon Sealing Sword to everyone in the Crippling Night Demon Sect and raise their power. At that time, they would have an extra layer of defense when fighting the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

However, the Demon Sealing Sword was very powerful. So powerful that even though Chu Feng had control over it, he was unable to use it to its fullest. So, to want to lend the remaining power in the Demon Sealing Sword to the others in the Crippling Night Demon Sect was not something simple. It truly required some careful studying.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 950 - The Wind Blows

MGA: Chapter 950 - The Wind Blows

Within a certain underground palace inside the Depraved Ravine, Chu Feng was cultivating in seclusion. However, his goal was not to increase his strength. Instead, it was to completely bring out the power of the Demon Sealing Sword.

His cultivation method was very simple—creating a formation on his own palm.

The Demon Sealing Sword was the same as the Silver Dragon Spear and the Asura Ghost Axe—they had already recognized Chu Feng as their master. Their lives were connected with Chu Feng, and they would move in accordance with his will. They could be brought out from his body, and stored within his body before he had the need to use them.

This was the reason for the formation on his right hand. So long as the imprint was successful, he could freely distribute the power of the Demon Sealing Sword to the members of the Crippling Night Demon Sect when the sword was within his grasp.

Which also meant the formation was in Chu Feng's complete control. He could give the power to whoever he wanted to; he would give it to anyone in the Crippling Night Demon Sect. Similarly, he could allot it amongst everyone, he could allot it to an individual, and he could also allot it to certain groups.

"It should be about ready."

Finally, after the final stroke, a seemingly insignificant but very profound formation appeared on Chu Feng's palm. It was barely noticeable, and was quite mystical.

"Haha, Chu Feng, not bad! You're truly quite capable—you truly figured that formation out! If you ask me, the power this formation contains is even greater than that Demon Bestowal Slaughtering Formation!

"When you activate it, there will be an essential change everyone's strength. Actually, the ordinary ones don't matter much, but the assistance this provides to Martial Kings like Qiu Canfeng is the most important. After all, they're the ones who supply the most powerful strength in the war."

The queen Eggie couldn't help but praise Chu Feng when his formation finally succeeded.

In the past few days, she had always stayed by Chu Feng's side. She had watched as Chu Feng reached this stage from absolutely nothing. She saw his entire progress as he studied the Demon Bestowal Slaughtering Formation. She had personally seen how Chu Feng brought out his ability in Spirit Formation techniques.

"Heh, since I'm such a genius, should you consider marrying me?" Chu Feng said with a smile.

"Sure! If you don't mind me tearing your thing off on the night of marriage, you can go ahead and try!" Eggy said with a smirk as she placed her hands on her waist.

"Eh..." Chu Feng was quite speechless. He knew she was not a person who could be so easily teased.

hmm

In the same moment, Chu Feng saw the entrance's formation flicker slightly. It meant someone was looking for him.

Chu Feng hurriedly opened the door, and three familiar people entered: Xuan Xiaochao, You Tonghan, and Fu Fengming.

"We greet Lord Sect Head." The three smiled and bowed together, paying their respects.

It wasn't the first time they came to see Chu Feng in the past few days. Chu Feng had also suggested, when there wasn't anyone else, there was no need to call him "sect head" here and "sect head" there—they could just call him Chu Feng. However, that did nothing as they were unwilling to change.

In the end, Chu Feng did compromise. They could call him whatever they wanted to; he wouldn't care. In any case, they were still his brothers in his heart.

Chu Feng had finished creating the formation, so he was naturally happy after seeing the three of them. He quickly said, "Brothers, stand still!"

Chu Feng hurriedly closed the door, then had them stand orderly in a line. Before letting them say anything, a light shone from his palm, then the Demon Sealing Sword appeared within his right hand.

When the sword appeared, there was no diminishing in the light that originated from Chu Feng's right hand, and instead, continued emitting a faint radiance. Simultaneously, an invisible shock wave passed through Xuan Xiaochao and the others. Their eyes lit up, and their expressions changed greatly.

"My gods! Lord Sect Head, you've succeeded? You've successfully transferred the Demon Bestowal Slaughtering Formation onto your hand?" they exclaimed uncontrollably. The three of them could feel their auras rising. It gave them even more power than the original formation.

It meant Chu Feng had truly succeeded. He not only grasped the power of the Demon Sealing Sword, he could even give them its strength.

"Heh, it seems that it works." Chu Feng smiled and nodded.

"Haha, this is great! Lord Sect Head, I truly prostrate myself in admiration! It's said the former sect head had thought of something like this too, and he had also attempted doing it, but he hadn't succeeded.

"I just didn't expect the thing he failed would be completed by you!" You Tonghan laughed lively. He felt joy arise from the bottom of his heart.

"Yeah! With this, if we truly start fighting the Immortal Execution Archipelago, we'll gain a greater chance at victory!" Even Fu Fengming who was usually composed nodded excitedly.

Chu Feng naturally understood the reasoning for their intense reactions. Was he himself not very excited as well?

He was now the head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, so finally, he had truly granted the Crippling Night Demon Sect a small favour.

"That's right. Brothers, you would never look for me needlessly. What's the matter today? Have the preparations for battle all been set up?" Chu Feng asked with a smile.

Although Xuan Xiaochao and the others had quite a good relationship with Chu Feng, they would not visit without cause. Every time they came to find Chu Feng was to update him on their current status.

In the past few days, Chu Feng had been studying the Demon Bestowal Slaughtering Formation in seclusion. He became a boss who threw all responsibilities to others as he handed everything to Qiu Canfeng.

However, Qiu Canfeng was after all the Great Protector of the Crippling Night Demon Sect. He easily managed everyone without any trouble at all. He had also been planning the attack on the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

“Mm. Under Senior Qiu Canfeng’s arrangements, everything is prepared. With an order, the Crippling Night Demon Sect’s army of ten million can head out on conquest at any moment.

“However, we haven’t come here today for this. There’s an important guest who’s come,” Xuan Xiaochao said.

“Important guest?” Chu Feng was taken aback.

“The Immortal Execution Archipelago’s First Immortal,” Xuan Xiaochao said in a low voice.

“Let’s go.”

Chu Feng’s eyes lit up when he learnt it was the First Immortal. A hint of surprise surfaced into his eyes, and without another word, he opened the palace’s doors, and stepped outside.

Right now, all things were prepared. They just lacked the wind to blow them forth.

The First Immortal was the wind they all waited for.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 951 - Two Pieces of Information

MGA: Chapter 951 - Two Pieces of Information

Chu Feng soon arrived at the floating palace with Xuan Xiaochao and the others leading the way. Qiu Canfeng had personally built it, and it was an important area for war preparations. Even they didn’t have the qualifications to enter.

But Chu Feng, as the sect head, could naturally enter any place since this was a part of the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

After entering, Chu Feng discovered the Four Protectors—Qiu Canfeng, Xue Xiyue, Fu Liansheng, and You Mingdeng—were there.

Other than those four, there were also two more—Qiushui Fuyan and Taikou.

However, there was an unfamiliar person Chu Feng hadn't seen before. It was an old man with a powerful aura—rank four Martial King. However, he wore a sickly complexion. It was quite evident he was the Immortal Execution Archipelago's First Immortal.

After seeing Chu Feng, his expression was very strange. His gaze especially was very strange, as if he knew Chu Feng already.

Chu Feng even saw a hint of near indiscernible fear concealed within the First Immortal's gaze as he looked at Chu Feng.

That made Chu Feng puzzled. He could not think of anything regarding himself that made a person like him feel fear.

"Everyone, get out. I want to talk to Chu Feng alone," the First Immortal said after looking at Chu Feng carefully.

"That will not do. What if you intend to harm my sect head?" But You Mingdeng denied him immediately after he spoke.

"Sect head? He's already become sect head?" The First Immortal felt quite surprised, but he still resolutely said, "If you want to have a discussion, get out. Otherwise, there will be none."

"You..." Xue Xiyue was a bit displeased. She opened her mouth, about to spit out curses.

"All of you, leave," Chu Feng interrupted.

"Chu Feng, this..." Qiushui Fuyan hurriedly cast a glance at Chu Feng, telling him to be more careful—the First Immortal was very dangerous.

"No matter. Seniors, head out for a moment. I feel that Senior First Immortal truly hopes to cooperate with us," Chu Feng said with a faint smile. His face was completely calm.

“Whatever. Since Sect Head has spoken, let’s listen to him. We’ll step outside,” urged Qiu Canfeng as well when Chu Feng insisted.

“This... Then fine.” You Mingdeng reluctantly nodded.

At first, he was very dissatisfied with Chu Feng, and wanted Chu Feng dead no matter what. However, after Chu Feng became sect head, his attitude changed completely, and he became one of Chu Feng’s most loyal subordinates. He was absolutely convinced by his aptitude.

“First Immortal, if you dare to inflict harm upon my sect head, you will wish you were dead.”

But even so, Xue Xiyue and the others did not forget to fiercely warn the First Immortal before leaving. Only then did they head out.

“Senior First Immortal, although we faced each other as enemies before, I still truly feel sorry for what happened to Ya Fei.”

Chu Feng clasped his hands towards the First Immortal after everyone left, representing his apology. He believed the First Immortal had seen Ya Fei already. Even though she was only a Consciousness, if she were still awake, she would still retain her memories. Perhaps she had already told the First Immortal that Murong Xun killed him. And likely also what Chu Feng did to her.

“No need for that. Everything was Murong Xun’s fault. It’s unrelated to you.

“I’ve come here today to ask you only one thing. If I help you deal with the Immortal Execution Archipelago, will you truly be able to help Fei’er rebuild her body? Will you truly revive her?” the First Immortal asked gravely. As he presented that question, he fixed his eyes closely on Chu Feng, his gaze filled with desire.

“Ya Fei’s physical body has been destroyed. Her Source Energy has been cut, and I’m afraid other people’s bodies may not be compatible. Even if a body were created out of nowhere, it will still be very difficult to recombine her Consciousness with the new body.

“From antiquity, there have been countless examples of destroyed bodies but surviving Consciousnesses. However, if it were that easy to recreate a physical body and thus revive, there would be no such thing as death.

"I'll be honest: I cannot guarantee Ya Fei's resurrection. However, I will say that there are many profound techniques on the Misty Peak. Since Lady Piaomiao had spoken in such a manner, perhaps she truly does have a way to help Ya Fei," Chu Feng said truthfully.

"Ahh... My poor Fei'er!" The First Immortal heaved a long sigh as the grief on his face became greater.

However, in the end, he still said, "Chu Feng, I will help you. But I will only help you reach the stone tablet. Whether you'll be successful is your own business. I have nothing to do with that.

"Moreover, even though it was Murong Xun who killed Fei'er, I will not kill him. Similarly, I will not kill a single person from the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

"I can betray them, but I will not kill them."

"Thank you, senior."

Chu Feng rejoiced in his heart. Although the First Immortal held quite a position in the Immortal Execution Archipelago, from his words and actions, Chu Feng didn't feel he was being lied to.

For Ya Fei, his precious granddaughter, he was truly preparing to help Chu Feng.

After concluding, Chu Feng called in Qiu Canfeng and the others. They started to discuss the specifics regarding their plan to deal with the Immortal Execution Archipelago. Of course, when doing these things, the First Immortal was asked to leave with Taikou accompanying him.

The First Immortal had already promised to help them. However, Chu Feng could tell, regardless of the First Immortal's hatred towards the Immortal Execution Archipelago, he couldn't bear attacking them due to his own kindness.

So, when they started planning how to attack the Immortal Execution Archipelago, naturally it'd be better to exclude him from the conversation. Otherwise, even if he could accept doing such things, there would be even greater guilty feelings in his heart.

“Chu Feng, we’ve heard two pieces of information when we were heading here. I feel that we must tell you this,” Qiushui Fuyan suddenly said.

“Sister Fuyan, what are they?” Chu Feng asked.

“A few days ago, an abnormal scene occurred above the Eastern Sea Region’s Fertile Continent. Its usual scalding summer atmosphere became a chilling air full of snow and ice.

“However, the snow and ice only stayed in the sky and didn’t fall down. It stretched outward for several thousands of miles. There were even roars akin to wild beasts that came from the snow,” Qiushui Fuyan said.

“A phenomenon? Does that mean it’s the descent of a Divine Body?” Xue Xiyue asked.

“I’m not sure. But from what I’ve heard, when a Divine Body appears, there will be indications. However, that scene suddenly appeared, then suddenly disappeared. No one knows what it meant.

“However, there’s only been so many occurrences like this that have appeared in the Eastern Sea Region. I feel it’s not normal for something to appear so suddenly,” Qiushui Fuyan said.

“I agree, it’s not normal at all. Sister Fuyan, what’s the second news?” Chu Feng asked.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 952 - A Spectacle about to Arrive

MGA: Chapter 952 - A Spectacle about to Arrive

“The second piece of information isn’t really a secret anymore. I’m sure it will be known in every corner in the Eastern Sea Region soon.

“In a few days, there will be an enormous wedding hosted in the Misty Peak. The bride will be Chu Feng’s fiancée, Zi Ling,” Qiushui Fuyan said.

“Murong Xun is pushing the marriage day forward?” Chu Feng pupils shrank. He tightly clenched his fists; it was clear he was a bit disturbed. To him, Zi Ling was really too important.

“No, this isn’t a marriage between Murong Xun and Zi Ling.” However, Qiushui Fuyan shook her head.

“Then who?” Chu Feng asked.

“It’s Zi Ling and Jiang Qisha’s,” Qiushui Fuyan said.

“What? Jiang Qisha?” Chu Feng couldn’t help feeling shocked. Though, upon another thought, it was not all that surprising.

Zi Ling’s beauty was stunning, and she was a Divine Body. Jiang Qisha lusted for her beauty; that was somewhat understandable. However, Tantai Xue had clearly threatened Jiang Qisha to not do anything to Zi Ling and the others.

Yet, right now, Jiang Qisha was publicly flaunting his marriage with Zi Ling, which was quite crazy. It didn’t make much sense either, because this was simply challenging Tantai Xue.

“It’s a trap?” Chu Feng calmly said after some thought.

“You’ll know whether it’s a trap or not when you see this for yourselves.” As Qiushui Fuyan spoke, she handed out several invitation cards.

They were Jiang Qisha’s invitation cards sent to various forces in the Eastern Sea Region.

After opening it, Chu Feng wrinkled his brows even more. The content on the card truly made one livid.

Jiang Qisha had not only publicly announced he was the disciple of the Holy Land of Martialism’s Cursed Soil Sect, he even announced the reason for Zi Ling’s limited aptitude—it was because of the special poison in her body, the Heaven Gripping Pellet.

He even clearly stated on the invitation card that Zi Ling’s lover was Chu Feng, but due to his incompetence, he was unable to remove the pellet in Zi Ling’s body. His heart could not bear such a tragedy.

Thus Jiang Qisha decided to marry Zi Ling. Two years later, when the Heaven Gripping Pellet reached its most optimal state, he would take away her divine power, and have Zi Ling become an ordinary person.

“What a bastard.” You Mingdeng was furious after seeing that invitation card. He not only threw it away, he even shattered the desk in the palace.

“This Jiang Qisha brat has truly gotten tired of living.” As for Xue Xiyue, she too gritted her teeth from anger. She looked as if she wanted to skin Jiang Qisha alive.

After being together for a while, Qiu Canfeng had told them a few things about Chu Feng. So, they had a decent understanding regarding the relationship between Zi Ling and Chu Feng.

He was now the head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, so Zi Ling was the wife of the head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

Yet now, Jiang Qisha publicly announced he would marry Zi Ling, and even stated clearly he was doing it for the divine power in her body. He truly went quite far. How could they even endure such a thing?

“It seems that this is most definitely a trap.” In contrast to You Mingdeng, Chu Feng appeared rather serene.

“But even if he’s luring you, he doesn’t need to do all this, right?” said Xue Xiyue furiously.

“No, he’s not luring me. In his heart, I’m not an obstruction in any way. He simply doesn’t need to go through so much trouble just for me.” Chu Feng shook his head.

“Then who is he luring?” All of them were confused.

“A person like Jiang Qisha, who also comes from the Holy Land of Martialism,” Chu Feng said.

“You mean it’s for Tantai Xue?” Qiushui Fuyan asked.

“Mm. I can feel that Jiang Qisha is still quite afraid of Tantai Xue. He fears she’ll harm Kuang Bainian, and the only reason he is doing this is to force her to appear,” Chu Feng said.

“Do you think she will?” Qiushui Fuyan asked.

"I'm not sure. Tantai Xue had said she would deal with Jiang Qisha, but she also said she would come and find me if that were the case. However, up until now, she has yet to contact me.

"I'm sure she will appear sooner or later. However, that will only be when she feels the time is ripe. Since she hasn't come in contact with me, it means she isn't absolutely confident she can defeat Jiang Qisha.

"So, this is a bit troubling.

"Although she promised to help us, there's no friendship or anything between us. She is no fool, so she wouldn't risk her life just for us.

"Similarly, the reason Jiang Qisha is doing this is because he's afraid of his junior's safety. Therefore, even if Tantai Xue doesn't appear, he wouldn't harm Zi Ling and the others. As for now, they are safe," Chu Feng said after some analyzing.

"Then what should we do? Will we just do nothing and wait here?" Xue Xiyue said bitterly.

"No. No matter who Jiang Qisha is luring, Zi Ling is still my lover. I will not allow her to marry any other person." Chu Feng shook his head.

"Sect Head, do you mean?" Fu Liansheng also spoke. At the same time, everyone's gazes were focused on Chu Feng.

"On the day of marriage, capture the bride, and carry out murder!" Chu Feng said calmly.

"Haha, good! Then it's decided! If we don't show him a few things, they would truly think they can bully the Crippling Night Demon Sect anytime!" Xue Xiyue and the others were all joyed.

Simultaneously, a hint of extreme chilliness emerged into Chu Feng's eyes.

Although he appeared very calm after knowing Jiang Qisha was going to marry Zi Ling, it did not mean he was not angry.

In reality, it was the complete opposite. Chu Feng already hated every single fibre of Jiang Qisha's being. Jiang Qisha dared to even think of marrying Zi Ling—that was a capital offense. Chu Feng was going to kill him.

After confirmation of the plan, they executed it immediately. On that day, Chu Feng personally led the Crippling Night Demon Sect away from the Depraved Ravine. They headed towards the current headquarters of the Immortal Execution Archipelago—towards the Misty Peak.

They could not use the Teleportation Arrays to arrive at the Misty Peak directly. So, they had to leave at an earlier date. They had to take a longer path and sneak into the Misty Peak. Then, on the day of the marriage, when all forces of the Eastern Sea Region were present, they would give the Immortal Execution Archipelago and Jiang Qisha a surprise.

Actually, ever since the Immortal Execution Archipelago took down the Misty Peak and made it into their headquarters, that news had already shocked the entire Eastern Sea Region.

And right now, when Jiang Qisha spread the news that he came from the Holy Land of Martialism and was even going to marry Zi Ling, that shocked everyone even more.

Who was Zi Ling? Divine Body? Chu Feng's lover? No, that was not all. Everyone knew Zi Ling was still Murong Xun's fiancée. She was someone who had an arranged marriage with him.

Yet now, Jiang Qisha announced he would marry Murong Xun's fiancée, *in the Immortal Execution Archipelago's territory!* That was simply a slap in public.

However, the Immortal Execution Archipelago was hosting everything. Even the invitation cards sent to various forces were sent by the Immortal Execution Archipelago. That introduced a problem.

It meant the Immortal Execution Archipelago was now serving Jiang Qisha, or they were serving the force Jiang Qisha came from, the Cursed Soil Sect.

But no matter what, it would be a spectacle one should not miss.

With that thought in mind, sects from various places in the Eastern Sea Region hurried to the Misty Peak. Not to mention the ones who already received invitation cards, even those who hadn't went forth to join in the liveliness.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 953 - Sneaking into the Misty Peak

MGA: Chapter 953 - Sneaking into the Misty Peak

When people from various areas headed towards the Misty Peak, there was also an army of ten million that covertly snuck in.

They were disguised and walked beneath the sea—it was the Crippling Night Demon Sect led by Chu Feng.

However, no one knew of their arrival because at that very instant, they were all deep under the sea. They were surrounding a round boulder.

“Sect Head, you’re certain the formation Lady Piaomiao spoke of is here?” You Mingdeng slightly frowned as some doubt arose.

After all, he was a rank four Martial King and a Gold-cloak World Spiritist. Yet, he could not tell what was special about that boulder.

“There’s no doubt about it.” Chu Feng lightly smiled as he firmly nodded. Actually, if it weren’t for the Heaven’s Eyes, he too wouldn’t have found that formation because it was really too hidden.

But despite Chu Feng’s assurance, You Mingdeng, and even many others, were doubtful. No matter how you looked at it, this boulder didn’t seem like a boundless formation that could move millions of people.

“Master, you can activate this formation.” Chu Feng smiled again, and then with mental messaging, he sent the rest of the information to Qiu Canfeng.

Qiu Canfeng’s eyes lit up after hearing Chu Feng’s words. Then, he stood out and laid an Activation Formation on the boulder.

hmm

When the formation was in progress of activating, the seemingly ordinary boulder immediately shone with radiance. The light quickly converged to form a formation which then enveloped all the members within.

When countless runes swirled around, layer after layer of odd power drifted within the formation.

“Waa, it truly is a formation! It’s amazing!”

Almost everyone was shocked by its appearance. Expressions of surprise surfaced onto their faces.

They could feel the power it contained, and they also understood its profoundness.

Even a person like Qiu Canfeng couldn’t help praising, “As expected of Lady Piaomiao. This is truly something not an ordinary person can do.”

“This is a formation Senior Piaomiao spent several hundred years building. To say it’s her life’s work wouldn’t be an exaggeration.

“This formation is as abstract as the Formation of Multitudinous Talismanic Soldiers cast by Jiang Qisha. It’s even a bit more powerful.

“As long as it borrows a bit of the Crippling Night Demon Sect’s power, it can create warriors as powerful as us and we can also control them.

“On the day of the wedding, Murong Mingtian and Jiang Qisha will definitely welcome the various guests. At that time, activate this formation and attack the Misty Peak.

“When the army attacks, even if their defenses are enough to stop us, they will ignore the inside of the Misty Peak. I and the First Immortal will then go the stone tablet, and I will cultivate the Immortal Transference Mysterious Technique,” Chu Feng said.

“But Sect Head, even though it’s powerful, this formation cannot allow us to completely overtake the Misty Peak. It will at most catch them off guard for a short while.

“As for the Immortal Transference Mysterious Technique, it clearly isn’t something that’s easy to cultivate. There’s only a brief amount of time! What if you’re discovered?” They were still not too worried.

“Naturally, the Mysterious Technique isn’t easy to cultivate, but I doubt it will be so challenging that I will fail.

“Lady Piaomiao had described its cultivation difficulty. If I’m not mistaken, I should finish within half a day,” Chu Feng said.

“Half a day?” You Mingdeng and the others couldn’t help deeply gasping.

“Half a day is enough. Otherwise, my Zi Ling would truly become his.” Chu Feng faintly smiled—confidence was worn on the corners of his mouth.

“Then... fine. We will follow your arrangements.” You Mingdeng and the others no longer doubted him.

“Everyone, the success of this conquest will depend on you. If we obtain victory, all of you have done deeds of absolute importance. I, Chu Feng, will definitely repay all of you.” Chu Feng was very thankful—thankful for these millions of people who were willing to put their lives on the line just for his sake.

“Sect Head will be victorious! The Crippling Night Demon Sect will be victorious!” someone suddenly shouted.

“Sect Head will be victorious! The Crippling Night Demon Sect will be victorious!” Quickly after, everyone started yelling. With these words, they declared their unyielding loyalty towards Chu Feng.

Chu Feng didn’t blame them or anything for making such a ruckus. Although this was already within the borders of the Misty Peak, the sea was very deep. Moreover, they had already laid Concealment Spirit Formations beforehand. Even if they were shouting loudly here, people outside wouldn’t be able to hear them.

However, he had to admit, when seeing so many people willing to fight for him, he not only felt gratitude, he felt very emotional.

Afterwards, Chu Feng didn’t dally any longer. He leapt forward and came by the First Immortal’s side.

The First Immortal’s eyes were glittering, and he said unbelievably, “I had thought you relied on your master Qiu Canfeng to become sect head, but I now seem to be wrong.”

“Hoh...” Chu Feng gave a light smile, then said, “Let’s go.”

Chu Feng consumed the Alternation Pellet Lady Piaomiao prepared for him. After changing his appearance, he pretended to be the First Immortal’s servant as they advanced toward the Misty Peak.

When they came above the sea surface, Chu Feng saw a lively scene he had never seen before. There were not only several new palaces built within the Misty Peak, it was very crowded scene. One could see people everywhere in the sky.

Rough estimations gave him a number of over a hundred million people. Ninety percent were from other Eastern Sea Region forces. They came here just to watch the upcoming display.

No one was denied entry to the Misty Peak at that moment. Regardless of strength, position, or status, so long as they came here, they would have good food and good residences. It was quality treatment of guests.

“Your Immortal Execution Archipelago truly isn’t simple. They’ve made such a huge show even when they give their own fiancée to others.” Chu Feng couldn’t help but mock the First Immortal when they saw such a grand presentation.

“Hoh...” It was now his turn to give a light smile. Then, he said to Chu Feng, “Even if it gets more impressive, so what? It’s not like you’re going to allow this marriage to be held successfully.”

The First Immortal dashed forward and increased his flying speed towards the Misty Peak.

Chu Feng lightly smiled as well. He too dashed forward and followed the First Immortal’s steps.

With the First Immortal leading the way, they were met with no obstructions even though it was occupied by the Immortal Execution Archipelago. They thus easily entered the Misty Peak.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 954 - A True Divine Body

MGA: Chapter 954 - A True Divine Body

Although Chu Feng had entered the Misty Peak, he could not go see Zi Ling, nor could he go to the stone tablet.

Actually, he could not go anywhere. He could only rest in the First Immortal’s residence. Everything was left up to him, and every piece of information was to be inquired by him.

In a situation like this, if the First Immortal held malicious intentions and wanted Chu Feng dead, it would be easy for him to do so. However, Chu Feng did not feel any sort of uneasiness or nervousness.

It wasn't that Chu Feng believed in the First Immortal, it was that he believed in the affection between the First Immortal and Ya Fei. For her, he wouldn't sell Chu Feng out.

Yet, this wait lasted ten full days. Although no one had gone to this residence looking for trouble, the First Immortal had yet to return.

This made even the calm Chu Feng a bit anxious. By the look of things, tomorrow was the wedding day between Zi Ling and Jiang Qisha. However, the First Immortal hadn't returned. Could something have happened?

jii

Just when Chu Feng was so nervous he couldn't stay still anymore, the palace door was opened. At the same time, a familiar person walked in—the First Immortal.

“Senior First Immortal, you’ve finally returned. Why were you gone for so long?”

Chu Feng's tense heart was relaxed at last. But only after nearing the First Immortal did he discover the stench of alcohol exuding from his body. He had likely drank quite a bit of wine.

“I haven't seen the ancestor and the master in a long time. They welcomed me, so I couldn't refuse. I simply couldn't leave the banquet.

“But don't worry. I got the thing you wanted. This is the Spirit Formation key that leads to the stone tablet.” As the First Immortal spoke, he took out a key, then said, “However, the ancestor seems to view it with quite a bit of importance. If I hadn't made countless contributions for them, there's no chance they'd grant me this key. Even now, they don't permit me to bring anyone else there. Only I alone can go up and cultivate.

“But that's not an issue. Tomorrow, on the day of marriage, your Crippling Night Demon Sect will come and make trouble anyway. At that time, everything will be in chaos so there will be no problem when I bring you there amidst the havoc.

“Moreover, today, I went to the stone tablet and gave it a look. I even found the Immortal Transference Mysterious Technique, and attempted to cultivate it.

“However, I found it too difficult to cultivate. It would require me half a year to a full year even for a rough understanding of the technique. It’s quite an urgent situation right now. How will you be successful?”

“Hoh, First Immortal, you’re afraid I’ll fail?” Chu Feng asked with a smile.

“Yes, of course I am. After everything that’s done, success is the only option.” The First Immortal nodded.

“Senior, don’t worry. Although it’s a gamble, it’s not like I lack any confidence. It won’t matter how difficult the Immortal Transference Mysterious Technique is to cultivate. Half a day is absolutely enough.”

Chu Feng was very sure of himself. Let alone the Immortal Transference Mysterious Technique which there had been past instances of success, he even grasped an Earthen Taboo martial skill which there had been *no* recorded instances of success.

“It seems that the rumours are not false. You truly are a monster. The Immortal Execution Archipelago shouldn’t have made you an enemy.” The First Immortal gave a long emotional sigh when he saw Chu Feng’s definite trust in himself.

“Senior, do you have news regarding Zi Ling and the others? How are they right now?” Chu Feng asked. That was the thing he was most worried right now.

“Don’t worry. Not to mention Zi Ling and the others, even the people from the Misty Peak are in a very good condition. Jiang Qisha is fearful for his brother’s safety, so he doesn’t dare touching them. And right now, the Immortal Execution Archipelago has already become Jiang Qisha’s puppet; naturally, they don’t dare to go against his words and harm any one of them,” the First Immortal said.

Chu Feng’s heart was even more at ease. He couldn’t help walking up to the palace window and looking at the stelliferous night sky. However, in his heart, complicated emotions started stemming forth.

Despite the tranquility during the night before the great battle, Chu Feng's heart could not be soothed.

Even though Chu Feng had a certain amount of confidence, the future was always filled with variables. There were some things that he could not affect.

In such a crucial moment, he too was afraid. He was afraid of losing. He was afraid of defeat. Not only would it represent his death, it would represent the death of all the members in the Crippling Night Demon Sect, and all his lovers and brothers.

However, Chu Feng didn't even know who his parents were! He still didn't know who sealed Egg in his body, in addition to the other powerful World Spirit!

So, he was afraid. If he were dead, no mysteries would be unraveled. So, he had to win this battle.

At the very same instant, Jiang Qisha was in Murong Mingtian's residence.

"What is this?" Murong Mingtian couldn't help knitting his brows when he saw several pellets in Jiang Qisha's hand.

Those pellets were very special. There were countless minuscule runes imprinted on them. Those runes looked as if they were alive as they were slowly squirming around.

"This is a treasure from my Cursed Soil Sect, called the Talismanic Pellet. It demands several years of concocting, and even though it has a similar effect as Forbidden Medicines, its backlash is very tiny. Its strength is much stronger as well," Jiang Qisha explained.

"Why are you giving me such a treasure?" Murong Mingtian asked in confusion. Jiang Qisha words had told him that these Talismanic Pellets seemed to be an invaluable treasure.

The pure advantages it had in comparison to Forbidden Medicines were sufficient as evidence.

"Tomorrow, that witch will come. She isn't easy to deal with, and I need you to help me," Jiang Qisha said.

“You’re talking about that Tantai Xue? Isn’t she just a rank nine Martial Lord? You’re afraid of just a rank nine Martial Lord? That doesn’t seem like you, right?” Murong Mingtian said puzzledly.

“She was a rank nine Martial Lord, but the present is different from the past. Do you remember the phenomenon that appeared? It appeared because she made a breakthrough. If I’m not mistaken, she has already become a Martial King,” Jiang Qisha explained.

“She caused the phenomenon? That means she has a Divine Body?” Murong Mingtian felt a bit amazed.

“That’s right. She does indeed have a Divine Body.” Jiang Qisha nodded.

“Even if she does, she’s only a rank one Martial King. Is there a need to be this nervous?” Murong Mingtian lightly smiled and said.

“Hoh...” However, Jiang Qisha smiled—it was a very strange smile. Then, he asked Murong Mingtian, “Have you seen a true Divine Body?”

Martial God Asura - Chapter 955 - The Wedding Begins

MGA: Chapter 955 - The Wedding Begins

“I...”

Murong Mingtian was a bit speechless. Although Zi Ling had a Divine Body, due to the Heaven Gripping Pellet, she simply hadn’t fully used its power. She was even much inferior to those with good aptitudes. Therefore, he had never seen what a true Divine Body looked like.

“There’s a reason we call Tantai Xue a witch. It’s one thing if she doesn’t make a breakthrough, but since she has, it won’t be as simple as merely one rank. She doesn’t only have a true Divine Body, she is even a witch,” Jiang Qisha said gravely.

Murong Mingtian couldn’t help gulping when he looked at Jiang Qisha’s serious gaze. It was the first time he saw him face someone so solemnly.

“If that Tantai Xue comes tomorrow, you face her first. Help me test her abilities, but don’t use the Talismanic Pellets. Only use them when Tantai Xue is injured, then we will kill her together,” Jiang Qisha said.

“Injured? You’re certain she will be injured?” Murong Mingtian’s expression couldn’t help changing.

“Hoh. I never do things I lack assurance in. I admit, that witch Tantai Xue is very powerful, and especially after her breakthrough even I will feel some difficulty in defeating her, but I am certain she will die when she comes.” Jiang Qisha smiled with smug, then strode away.

“Ancestor, do you think there’s something wrong with these pellets?” asked Murong Niekong who had been silent before Jiang Qisha left.

“There won’t be. If Jiang Qisha wanted to harm me, he would have done so already. There would be no need for so much work.” Murong Mingtian shook his head.

“But Ancestor, if Jiang Qisha spoke truthfully about these Talismanic Pellets, aren’t they quite precious? Things like these are simply invaluable in the Eastern Sea Region, yet he’s willing to give such things to you!” Murong Niekong said.

“Normally, of course he wouldn’t, but now, there are no such things as willing or not willing. He does need a chess piece like me, after all.

“Hoh... He wants me to test that witch’s strength. I’m quite amazed he can think of such a thing. If her strength is so powerful that even he stands no chance, doesn’t that mean I’m absolutely dead?” A sneer arose onto Murong Mingtian’s face, and a hint of fury surfaced into his eyes.

“That Jiang Qisha should truly be damned. He has only been using us from the very start. Ancestor, if this treatment continues, how long do we endure this for?” Murong Niekong was rather angry as well.

“It’s about time. Tomorrow, I’ll let Jiang Qisha know that I, Murong Mingtian, am no pushover.” Suddenly, a strange glint emerged into his eyes, indicating a long-planned scheme.

“Ancestor, could it be... you’ve succeeded?” Murong Niekong rejoiced.

“Mm.” Murong Mingtian nodded.

“But Ancestor, since you’ve succeeded, why didn’t you kill Jiang Qisha just now, and instead are waiting until tomorrow?”

“You know how much pain Xun’er is feeling because Jiang Qisha plans to marry Zi Ling! Even putting him aside, what he’s done is a huge disgrace to the Immortal Execution Archipelago!” Murong Niekong said.

“You don’t understand. On the surface, Tantai Xue is Jiang Qisha’s archenemy, but in reality, is she not our archenemy as well?”

“If she truly comes tomorrow in order to save Zi Ling and the others, that means after dealing with Jiang Qisha, she will deal with us.

“Rather than removing Jiang Qisha and leaving behind a danger like Tantai Xue, why not instead use Jiang Qisha to remove Tantai Xue, then afterwards remove Jiang Qisha? With that, there will be no more worries.

“As for disgrace? Hoh... When I kill Jiang Qisha tomorrow in front of all the forces in the Eastern Sea Region, who’s the one disgracing who?” Murong Mingtian said smugly.

“Ancestor, you are truly brilliant.” The joy on Murong Niekong’s face became even stronger.

The seemingly simple wedding was in reality an ambush of danger. But what was fated to arrive would arrive sooner or later. When the sun rose from in the east sea, when it was just dawn, the Misty Peak was already crowded because today was the day of the wedding.

The ceremony required an extremely vast area. Naturally, the Misty Peak was unsuitable.

Therefore, that area was set up outside the Misty Peak—an enormous floating Spirit Formation. Its only use was really to support the banquet and hold over a hundred million people.

At that moment, the ceremony had already began. Not only could guests from various areas enter, even the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago could. Other than a small portion of people who were still responsible for guarding, nearly everyone entered the gorgeous arrangement.

The wedding area also looked very special. It was not flat, and seemed more like stairs: the center was the highest, and the borders were the lowest.

Everyone could thus see the entire wedding event.

Those who sat on the tallest level were naturally the people with the highest positions and strengths in the Eastern Sea Region. For example, Murong Mingtian, Murong Niekong, and the chiefs from the Three Great Monstrous Clans. Only they were worthy to sit on the highest stage.

None were allowed to sit on that level other than them. Even people like the First Immortal could only sit on the second level.

“That’s Murong Mingtian? The ancestor of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, the one who controls them behind the scenes, the person who made the originally insignificant Immortal Execution Archipelago into the true overlord of the Eastern Sea Region?”

The person most focused upon was naturally Murong Mingtian. One must know that before the great battle at the Misty Peak, there had been simply no one who knew of his existence.

Murong Mingtian quite enjoyed the crowd’s discussions and their gazes of admiration, even adoration.

So, he was in quite a good mood. With a smile worn on his face, he stood up, and spoke some customary words representing the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

Though they were customary, after every single sentence, thunderous claps would follow. There was no one who dared to disrespect this several-hundred-year-old ancient monster.

“Next, please welcome the stars of today’s event!” After a brief speech, Murong Mingtian cast his gaze towards the Misty Peak.

At that instant, firecrackers were released, and gongs and drums resounded in the sky. A group of people wearing very festive clothing walked slowly over in the air as they held up an exquisite red sedan chair.

The person who led was in red, and he rode a flying horse over. It was Jiang Qisha.

As for the person within the sedan chair, without even guessing, they all knew it was Zi Ling.

At that moment, everyone held their breaths. Their gazes were fixed on Jiang Qisha, and on the sedan chair.

The carefully prepared wedding ceremony had truly began.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 956 - Madman

MGA: Chapter 956 - Madman

“Jiang Qisha! He’s the genius from the Holy Land of Martialism, Jiang Qisha!”

“He’s too powerful. At such an age, he’s already a rank four Martial King. This is a *true* genius! In comparison, not to mention Murong Xun, even Chu Feng can’t even be discussed equally with him!”

The people within the banquet cheered endlessly. All sorts of conversations rang out one after the other. Everyone was attracted by Jiang Qisha’s powerful strength. They had never seen a Martial King so young before, let alone one that was rank four.

They were all like frogs at the bottom of the well. They saw a new world—they saw a new world in Jiang Qisha. They were amazed.

Many young women couldn’t help but hold their hearts. Many were lovestruck by Jiang Qisha, and even their imaginations went wild. They wished the one in the sedan chair was them instead. They wished they could marry a man like Jiang Qisha. Even when Jiang Qisha glanced past them, their heartbeats would quicken, thinking he was looking at them directly.

Not to mention females, even many males, as they looked at Jiang Qisha, were filled with admiration. Naturally, they weren’t stunned by Jiang Qisha’s appearance, but by his strength.

Strength. In this world, strength was everything. The rest were useless. Strength was the only standard in this world.

Amidst the cheers and admiring gazes from various people in the Eastern Sea Region, Jiang Qisha kept a smile on his face since the very start. However, it was not a kind one—it was a disdainful one. Jiang Qisha held a mocking smile.

In his eyes, everyone here was only a bumpkin. They were trash who had poor cultivation aptitude yet still wanted to cultivate.

Due to that, when Jiang Qisha arrived at the very top level, he didn't say any customary words to the crowd. He instead, with an arrogant tone and a loud voice, asked, "Do you know of Chu Feng?"

"We do!" the crowd replied in unison.

"Then do you know of Zi Ling?" Jiang Qisha asked again.

"We do!" replied the crowd again loudly.

"Then, do you know Chu Feng and Zi Ling love each other, and are a pair of affectionate lovers?" Jiang Qisha suddenly asked with a smile.

"What? This..."

Everyone was shocked at those words. However, they *had* heard of the relationship between Chu Feng and Zi Ling.

On the invitation cards sent out by the Immortal Execution Archipelago, it had also stated Chu Feng and Zi Ling were lovers, so more or less everyone knew about them.

However, Zi Ling was the person Jiang Qisha prepared to marry! They couldn't understand why he suddenly mentioned this.

"Hoh..." Jiang Qisha faintly smiled at the crowd's bewildered and doubtful expressions. Then, he said, "This is the truth. If you don't believe me, I can call out Zi Ling and have her tell you about it.

"As for why I said this, it's because I want to tell you this: it doesn't matter what relationship Zi Ling has with Chu Feng—no one can stop me. I'm taking away his lover, and I'm forcibly marrying her. What is he going to do about it?" Jiang Qisha loudly laughed—it was quite a mad laughter.

Marriage was a day of elation. For good fortune, unpleasant topics were typically avoided. Where would one find a groom like Jiang Qisha who announced his evil acts?

Even if his words were the truth, he made everyone feel uncomfortable in an environment like this one. His announcement not only smeared on himself the

name of an evil person, it even made the ones, who came here from faraway places, accomplices.

But Jiang Qisha didn't seem to care about the crowd's feelings, nor did he want to stop there. After a burst of laughter, he said, "Do you know why I'm marrying Zi Ling? Her beauty? I do admit that Zi Ling is very beautiful. It would not be wrong to say she's the most beautiful woman I, Jiang Qisha, have ever seen.

"But this world is so big; there are plenty of beauties. Of course, I won't marry a woman based on her beauty alone. I'm marrying her because of her divine power.

"There's a Heaven Gripping Pellet in Zi Ling's body, and that had sealed her divine power. But when she reaches the age of twenty, as long as she makes love with another man, her divine power will be taken away by that man. As for me, I'm aiming for precisely that power.

"What if you ask me, what will she become after I take away Zi Ling divine power? I don't mind telling you that she'll become a piece of garbage who can't even cultivate.

"What if you ask me, what will I do to her after stripping away her power? I will tell you that I do hate to harm a beauty like this, but even if she's more beautiful, so what? What use is a person who can't cultivate? In the end, they'll only become a tool for venting lust! Hahahaha..." After speaking, Jiang Qisha once again madly laughed.

Everyone's face was wrinkled and they were extremely speechless. The former joyous atmosphere was completely shattered by Jiang Qisha's words.

No matter what one said, Zi Ling was still an acclaimed beauty in the Eastern Sea Region, yet Jiang Qisha made her into a "tool for venting lust". The people who heard that found it a bit difficult to endure.

"Ancestor, has this Jiang Qisha gone insane? Why is he saying these things on a day like this? He's not only making himself look bad, he's making us look bad. After all, we had helped him host the marriage," Murong Niekong couldn't help but say to Murong Mingtian mentally.

“He’s always been a madman, but he’s no fool. He can do whatever he wants to do; we’ll just watch along. I do want to see what sort of trick he’s playing.” In contrast to Murong Niekong, Murong Mingtian was quite a bit calmer.

“Why is no one saying anything? Do none of you think I’m an evil scum who lacks any bit of kindness?” Jiang Qisha suddenly asked.

“You and your mother are scum! You’re not worthy to marry Zi Ling, nor are you worthy to live in this world! Get the hell out of the Eastern Sea Region!” An old man suddenly stood up. He pointed at Jiang Qisha and threw out curses.

Jiang Qisha’s expression changed slightly. He struck out with his palm, and after an explosion, the old man was completely destroyed as he had become a pool of blood.

“Who else?” After killing that old man with a single attack, Jiang Qisha’s eyes glinted with chilliness as he once again swept his gaze over the crowd.

Everyone lowered their heads, silent. After seeing his ruthlessness, who would dare to say anything negative?

Martial God Asura - Chapter 957 - Humiliation

MGA: Chapter 957 - Humiliation

When no one dared to find any more faults with him, Jiang Qisha smiled smugly and nodded in satisfaction. He followed by loudly asking the crowd, “Then, tell me. Am I a good person?”

However, following this question, the crowd remained the same as before: the ocean of people with over a hundred million people were completely silent. No one dared to speak. In the end, the mass of people chose to remain mute.

“Tell me! Am I, Jiang Qisha, a good person?” When there were no responses, Jiang Qisha pointed towards a group of people in the distance. Judging by their clothing, they were likely from the same group—a small sect.

“This... this...” The person who seemed to be the leader stood out when questioned by Jiang Qisha. However, at that moment, he was trembling. He was terrified; he simply could not speak, nor did he know how to respond.

“Go to hell with your ‘this’! You don’t think I’m a good person?” Jiang Qisha was clearly unsatisfied with this person’s performance. Amidst his anger, he furiously attacked again.

BOOM—

When his palm struck down, an orb of light appeared. It instantly engulfed that sect’s people. However, when the orb disappeared, with astonishment everyone discovered that the sect had completely disappeared. What remained was only a large pool of blood on the floor.

“Huu—” Many people panicked. Many were terrified by Jiang Qisha’s actions. How was this even a marriage ceremony? They simply came to be killed!

Jiang Qisha was really too fierce. Was he truly preparing to annihilate the guests who came to join his marriage ceremony?

“Tell me, am I a good person?” After destroying the small sect with a single palm, Jiang Qisha pointed at another one.

“Yo-yo-you’re a good person! Lord Jiang Qisha is a good person!” Learning from the mistakes of the previous force, the people who were questioned this time didn’t dare to hesitate.

“Haha, not bad! I like your fake sincerity!” Jiang Qisha happily roared with laughter after hearing their reply. But after laughing, he looked at the crowd, and asked again, “However, I want to hear all of you tell me. Am I, Jiang Qisha, a good person?” As he spoke, strong bloodlust appeared in his eyes—it was a threat laid bare.

“Lord Jiang Qisha is a good person!”

“Lord Jiang Qisha is a true good person!”

Before such threats, the crowd no longer dared to stay silent. At first, only a small portion replied, and they were not all that loud either. But in the end, everyone was speaking in unison, and the sound was deafening, louder than even thunder, as if the words said were their true feelings.

“Haha, that’s right! I, Jiang Qisha, have done all sorts of bad things, but I am still a good person because no one dares to say otherwise.

“Let me tell you this: in this world, there is no true good person, nor is there a true bad person. What is kindness? What is evil? Hell, that’s all rubbish. It’s all nonsense.

“In this world, whoever’s fists are harder is the right one. The victor is the king, and the loser is the thief—that’s the only truth in this world.

“Today, I’m forcibly marrying Zi Ling, because I’m strong. If he, Chu Feng, has the ability to stop me, how could I have her as my bride?

“When all’s said and done, Chu Feng is trash. So trash he can’t even protect the one he loves.

“When all’s said and done, my fist is harder than his. So hard that he doesn’t dare to say anything, and can only pettily endure this humiliation.

“As long as I have strength, I’m the king. It doesn’t matter if there’s something I should have or shouldn’t have—as long as I want it, I will have it because no one has the power to stop me,” Jiang Qisha loudly shouted, his tone filled with arrogance.

His words didn’t invoke the anger of the crowd. Instead, it greatly diminished their fury. They even started feeling Jiang Qisha’s words were absolutely correct and very reasonable.

The winner was right, and the loser was wrong. The strong were the rulers. Was that not the only truth in this world?

He, Jiang Qisha, was powerful. So what if he did all sorts of evil things? Who dared to do anything to him? As he said, if Chu Feng were strong enough, how could he have allowed Jiang Qisha to take away his lover and forcibly marry her?

“Although this Jiang Qisha is ruthless, he is reasonable.”

“Yeah! I heard that Chu Feng, Lady Piaomiao, and Qiushui Fuyan had all safely left the Misty Peak. Chu Feng isn’t dead yet. Today, the Immortal Execution Archipelago has sent out invitation cards, so Chu Feng naturally knows about this marriage.

“If it were another person who dared to marry Zi Ling, judging by Chu Feng’s nature, he would definitely skin that person alive. However, if it’s Jiang Qisha,

he wouldn't have such thoughts, right? Not to mention coming to stop him, he doesn't even have the guts to show up."

"That's right. I even thought that Chu Feng was a person who dared to do anything and feared nothing. I thought he was a hero, but now, it seems that he's only a coward who's afraid in the face of strength."

"Yeah yeah yeah! Back then, when Chu Feng took away Zi Ling from the Flower Valley, how mighty was he! Yet, right now, when his lover's going to be married to another person, there's no news of him. He's pretending he doesn't know about it. It appears that this genius is quite disappointing. It's not that Chu Feng was too powerful, it's just that his opponents were too weak."

"Right now, when his opponent's Jiang Qisha from the Holy Land of Martialism, Chu Feng's courage is all gone! He's become a coward who trembles by mere rumours."

Not only did many people approve of Jiang Qisha's words, they even spoke to humiliate Chu Feng. They felt Jiang Qisha's very actions were very reasonable; on the other hand, Chu Feng became trash.

"Haha, everyone, my friend Jiang Qisha's words are very correct. In this world, what is evil? What is righteousness? Only those with hard fists have the right to judge. Only the words from the powerful matter." Murong Mingtian also stood up, and loudly said, "Chu Feng has not only killed members of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, he even dares to steal my Royal Armament. How arrogant of him. How impressive. The world even titled him as an unprecedented genius in the Eastern Sea Region."

"But is he truly that invincible? If he's that powerful, why did he escape when we attacked the Misty Peak, and why isn't he even showing himself when his own lover is being married off to someone else?"

"In the end, he only bullies others with someone behind his back. He only bullies the weak and is afraid of the strong. Now, without Lady Piaomiao's protection, who does he even think he is?" Murong Mingtian took that chance to humiliate Chu Feng. It could be seen that in his heart, he felt quite the resentment towards Chu Feng.

"Senior Murong is very correct. That Chu Feng is only a coward!"

“That’s right. He can’t even protect his own woman. Is he even a man?” After Murong Mingtian spoke, many people loudly added and started shaming Chu Feng as well.

“Murong Mingtian, are you certain that Chu Feng will truly not dare to come?” But just at that moment, there was a person who stood up and loudly questioned.

After that person spoke, everyone was shocked. That person not only called Murong Mingtian by his direct name, he even wore a long robe and didn’t reveal their appearance. The clothes that person wore and his actions made the people who mocked Chu Feng feel an indescribable uneasiness.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 958 - Endless

MGA: Chapter 958 - Endless

“Insolence! Who do you think you are to call my ancestor by name directly?!” The people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago were furious. They pointed at the person who spoke, and were about to make their move. That person’s actions meant they undoubtedly came here to stir up trouble.

“Wait.” However, just at that moment, Murong Mingtian stopped them. Moreover, he cast his lightly squinting gaze at the long-robed person, and sneered, “When my Immortal Execution Archipelago and the three clans arrived at the Misty Peak, Chu Feng wasn’t even capable of participating in battle. He could only stay on the side and watch. If it weren’t for Lady Piaomiao who sacrificed herself to bring Chu Feng and Qiushui Fuyan away, he would have already died. Do you think he will still dare to come?”

“That may not be so.” The person lightly smiled, then said, “Everyone knows Chu Feng is a member of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, and they always emphasize camaraderie. I’ve even heard the Crippling Night Demon Sect’s army has secretly gathered here.

“No one knows whether they’ve gathered to avenge Chu Feng or not.

“Besides, Lady Piaomiao was only injured. She hadn’t died. Are you certain after Lady Piaomiao recovers, she won’t join with the Crippling Night Demon Sect and return?”

As that person spoke, he pointed towards the crowd, and fiercely shouted, "And you, you despicable bastards! You don't talk about Jiang Qisha taking away Chu Feng's lover, you don't talk about him killing innocent, and instead, you're shaming Chu Feng! Do you not fear he'll bring the Crippling Night Demon Sect's army over and also cut your filthy mouths and take away your insignificant lives?"

"This..." After that person spoke, the people who were humiliating Chu Feng before changing their expressions greatly. An indescribable chilliness was born in their hearts.

Were they not afraid of Chu Feng? Of the Crippling Night Demon Sect? Of Lady Piaomiao?

They were. Of course they were. They were even more afraid after that person spoke. To dare to directly say Murong Mingtian's name in a place like this, and even words like those, meant he didn't come with kind intentions. He was likely one of Chu Feng's people.

"Haha, no matter the Crippling Night Demon Sect, or Chu Feng, whoever dares to come, I'll do the same to them as I will to you! Not even a trace of soul or corpse will remain!"

Murong Mingtian roared with laughter. Amidst that laughter, however, he suddenly waved his sleeve. A boundless Martial power was released, and after a boom, the long-robed person was destroyed.

The observers couldn't help letting out a relieved sigh. His actions were undoubtedly telling the crowd that with him here, even if Chu Feng and the others truly dare to come, it would be no more than committing suicide. No one could stir up trouble in this place.

"Not even a trace of soul or corpse will remain! Are you certain?" But just at that moment, the voice rang out again. At the same time, a figure quickly flew over. When it neared, everyone was astonished.

This time, the person did not wear a long robe, so his face was clearly shown before the crowd.

However, he had a very blurry complexion. Most importantly, his entire body was translucent, and it was shining with light. That was simply not a normal person's appearance, but more like a Consciousness.

“Consciousness? It’s a Consciousness?”

“That’s not right. Even if he is, it would have been destroyed. Just now, Senior Murong had clearly killed him. How could he possibly reappear?” Many people started panicking as they felt the oddness of that person.

“Hoh, no matter who you are and what sort of tricks you’re playing, I’ll leave you with a few words: If you appear once, I’ll destroy you once. No matter how many times you come, it’s useless.”

Murong Mingtian sneered and once again attacked. Like before, that person stood no chance against the strength of a rank seven Martial King. After a bang, he shattered.

rumble rumble rumble rumble rumble...

However, when that person exploded, violent rumbles came from the distance. A dense glowing mass flew over as they covered the entire sky.

“Heavens, that is?”

When the glowing figures approached, the already uneasy crowd paled from fright. Some even start trembling, because they discovered with terror that the glowing mass was formed by people. There were many—over ten million.

The most important thing, however, was that those people were the exact same as the person before. Though they appeared like Consciousnesses, their auras were very real. There were not only countless Martial Lords, there were even several Martial Kings.

“Murong Mingtian, didn’t you say if one appeared you’ll destroy one? Let us see how you will destroy us all!”

Suddenly, a cold laugh came from the crowd. At the same time, layers upon layers of horrifying martial skills shot out from the group of people. The army of ten million started mercilessly attacking everyone.

“Dammit, there’s so many, and there’s even a rank five Martial King! How is happening?” Not to mention the bystanders, even Murong Niekong and the chiefs from the Three Great Monstrous Clans were no longer calm.

“Illusions and deception! Let me see who exactly you are!” Murong Mingtian had leapt up, and with the powerful might of a rank seven Martial King, he dashed into the vast crowd.

He was really too strong. A rank seven Martial King was simply invincible. Every single strike could kill several people; numbers could not overwhelm such power.

“KILL—” After Murong Mingtian made his move, the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Three Great Monstrous Clans joined the battlefield under the command of respectively Murong Niekong and the chiefs.

The battle instantly began. Even though the army of ten million was powerful, with Murong Mingtian, a rank seven Martial King overseeing the situation, they simply could not even approach the marriage area. In just a blink, they were all destroyed and cleanly massacred.

However, before Murong Mingtian and the others even had a chance to enjoy the delight of victory, their complexions turned grave again.

In another direction, another large mass of people appeared. No matter numbers, or strength, it was the exact same as they ones they killed before.

“Let me see how many you can send!” Murong Mingtian was clearly enraged. He leapt forward and once again dashed into the vast ocean of people. As for the Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Three Great Monstrous Clans, they too quickly followed and joined the battlefield once again.

It was the same as last time. Due to the immense difference in strength, the battle had finished very quickly even though they had great numbers.

However, after the destruction of each wave, another one would appear quickly. The direction they emerged was different every time as well—at first, they had come from the same side, but in the end, they were coming from all directions.

That repeated again and again. Even though the Immortal Execution Archipelago was capable of dealing with it, they couldn’t help starting to panic. Even if they were more powerful, their stamina was still limited. If the enemy were coming over endlessly, they would fail to hold on eventually.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 959 - The Attack from a Great Enemy

MGA: Chapter 959 - The Attack from a Great Enemy

However, no one noticed, when the Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Three Great Monstrous Clans were fighting back the army of ten million of unknown origin, the First Immortal, as the core battle strength of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, had quietly left the marriage area.

He, at that moment, had come into the Misty Peak, and had arrived atop a very important peak. It was the area that held the Mysterious Technique Stone Tablet. Moreover, he was not alone—Chu Feng had also been brought up with him.

“Chu Feng, go. I will guard this place for you. Unless the master or ancestor comes, no one should even think of disturbing you,” the First Immortal said gravely after opening the Spirit Formation with the key.

“Senior First Immortal, didn’t you say you wouldn’t do anything to the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago? What’s with the change of heart?”

Chu Feng glanced at the two unconscious people by the First Immortal’s side. They were elders from the Immortal Execution Archipelago, and were responsible for guarding this place. However, they were knocked out just now.

“I do not like Jiang Qisha’s complete arrogance, his tyrannical attitude, and his absolute disregard for everyone else. I’m even looking forward to you cultivating this Immortal Transference Mysterious Technique and giving that bastard a good lesson,” the First Immortal said with a faint smile.

“Senior, don’t worry. When I finish, I’ll definitely make Jiang Qisha pay the price for his actions.” After speaking, Chu Feng stepped into the Spirit Formation gate and walked towards the stone tablet on the peak.

Although he had been within the Misty Peak, he heard every single one of Jiang Qisha’s words outside.

It was one thing humiliating him, but Jiang Qisha dared to speak that to Zi Ling. Bloodlust was already surging within Chu Feng’s body. His fury was rampaging. His spew of words was unforgivable.

boom boom boom boom—

Simply no one knew about Chu Feng arriving at the stone tablet within the Misty Peak, because the army outside was truly never-ending. The Immortal Execution Archipelago could not finish killing them.

Even as time elapsed, after countless battles, the Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Three Great Monstrous Clans started feeling a bit exhausted. With just a bit of carelessness, they would be destroyed.

After everything that had happened, there were already quite a few people injured. Some had died without even leaving a corpse behind.

The army of ten million would always end up in defeat after every battle, and on the Immortal Execution Archipelago's side, there were very few injuries. It was absolutely disproportionate.

However, there was a limited number of people on the Immortal Execution Archipelago's side. Even if there were even fewer people who were wounded during the battle, the numbers accumulated. After many battles, a thousand people had died, and several tens of thousands of people were injured.

"Dammit, what are these things? Why do they never end? Who's the leader of them?"

The Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Three Great Monstrous Clans all panicked. They knew this would not work if they continued this way. Not to mention insignificant people like them, even some Martial Kings would eventually not hold out.

As the proverbs said, "Dripping water can still pierce through stone." Yet this was an endless army of ten million that was a gathering of Martial Lords and Martial Kings! Even if they were even stronger, they would not survive if the current circumstances went unchanged.

"This is too terrifying. These things simply do not die. The Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Three Great Monstrous Clans' side will lose if this goes on."

"Heavens! If you ask me, the person who spoke before was likely a part of Chu Feng's group. In a while, if the Immortal Execution Archipelago falls, won't we follow them as well since we had insulted Chu Feng?"

Not only did the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago feel danger, even those observing who had spoken quite poorly of Chu Feng felt they were in peril as well.

They truly felt the extremes of fear. Those who had spoken scornfully regarding Chu Feng trembled. There were even a few whose *root of life* quivered once before they soaked their pants.

“Hoh, Murong Mingtian, you’ve truly gone foolish from age. All of them are created by a formation. Of course it will be ceaseless if you fight them like this.” The silent Jiang Qisha suddenly spoke.

“Created by a formation? What sort of formation can produce such realistic lives? Could it be... that witch has come?” Murong Mingtian only thought of that then.

Actually, he had suspected whether these endless lives were created from a formation, but he had never seen a formation like that within the Eastern Sea Region.

On the other hand, Jiang Qisha had seen similar techniques. So, Murong Mingtian felt if they were truly made by a formation, it wouldn’t be one from the Eastern Sea Region, but from the Holy Land of Martialism.

“I’m not certain on that, but no matter who it is, just find the source and remove it.” Jiang Qisha lightly smiled, then spread open his palms. A special talisman appeared within his hand, and then he threw it towards the army of ten million.

“Scatter!” Someone realized it was something bad as he saw it flying over. He hurriedly yelled as a warning, wanting to disperse everyone.

But, it was still too late...

jii jii jii—

The talisman was too quick; it passed through several people’s bodies, and after piercing through the crowd, the talisman became an odd fish several meters long with runes all over its body.

Immediately after it appeared, it flipped and rushed directly into the sea. Like light, it disappeared instantly.

Afterwards, the army of ten million was very quickly destroyed by Murong Mingtian and the others again. But the strangest thing was this time, the army hadn't reappeared for a very long time.

Murong Mingtian's eyes glittered. He couldn't help turning his head to look at Jiang Qisha.

Everyone also cast their gazes at him. They knew the army wouldn't have vanished for no reason. Jiang Qisha must have done something.

At that moment, he was standing in the air with his eyes closed. The hands held in front of his chest were endlessly changing in gesture. They were changing position so fast no one could even see it what sort of technique he was doing. However, what one could see were layers and layers of shock waves visible by the naked eye were continuously brimming out of his body like a violent gale.

BOOM— Suddenly, a huge explosion rang out in the distant sea. Jiang Qisha's eyes also slowly widened, and he said with a mocking smile, "A bunch of useless people want to fight *me*?"

"You found them? Who is it?" Murong Mingtian quickly asked.

"The formation is already broken. If they dare to come again, they would have to come with their own bodies. However, with their tiny bit of strength, they wouldn't dare," Jiang Qisha said disdainfully.

"Where? Where are they?" Murong Mingtian furiously asked. After being troubled for so long, he was full of anger. He wanted to completely kill them all and slice up their corpses.

"No rush. They are useless. They can be taken care of at any moment, so leave some strength behind to deal with the real enemy," Jiang Qisha said with a faint smile.

"Real enemy?" The crowd was taken aback. They didn't understand.

As for Jiang Qisha, he said quite calmly, "Tantai Xue, since you're here, why not show yourself?"

Martial God Asura - Chapter 960 - The Powerful Tantai Xue

MGA: Chapter 960 - The Powerful Tantai Xue

“Jiang Qisha, you’re truly a good person! You take away another person’s lover and do things that lower yourself beneath animals. How impressive of you!”

After Jiang Qisha spoke, the nearby air began squirming. At the same time, a person wearing a white long dress with a veil on her head appeared within their line of sight. That person was none other than Tantai Xue.

Many expressions changed after they saw her. Although they were unable to see her complexion, they could tell she was a young woman.

Such a youth was already a rank three Martial King. That was truly unimaginable. At least, in the Eastern Sea Region, there was no one who could accomplish such a feat. So, the crowd all knew that Tantai Xue too came from the Holy Land of Martialism. It was impossible for a person like her to have come from the Eastern Sea Region.

“Rank three Martial King! Not bad, but you seem to have rushed it a bit. Otherwise, with the thing you used back then, becoming a rank four Martial King shouldn’t be that much of a problem, right?”

“Your mind wouldn’t have been... disturbed because you’re in a hurry to save Zi Ling for that Chu Feng, right? That’s why you’re only a rank three Martial King?” Jiang Qisha said with a smile.

“It is sufficient to deal with you.” Tantai Xue’s voice was cold, and it was still filled with contempt.

“Tantai Xue, what the hell do you think you’re so arrogant for? Have you forgotten why you’ve come to this Eastern Sea Region? If you have, no worries, this young master can remind you. The infamous little witch of the Holy Land of Martialism was forced into a forbidden land when chased by us four brothers! That’s why you accidentally came here!” shouted Zhao Yuetian, Jiang Qisha’s junior.

“It’s one thing that four men were chasing a little woman like me, but four Martial Kings were chasing me, a rank nine Martial Lord! And you couldn’t even catch me! Are you announcing this to tell everyone the four genius disciples of the Cursed Soil Sect are all useless trash?” Tantai Xue sneered.

“You...” Zhao Yuetian was quite choked by Tantai Xue’s words, because what she said was true: the four of them were chasing Tantai Xue, yet they had failed. Telling that to everyone really wasn’t something glorious.

whoosh Suddenly, she flipped her palm, and a special box appeared on her hand. When she shook it slightly, Kuang Bainian’s voice rang out.

“Seniors, save me! Seniors, quickly save me!”

“Dammit! Witch, release my junior!” Zhao Yuetian’s voice turned agitated after hearing Kuang Bainian.

“If you want me to release Kuang Bainian, sure. Free everyone, otherwise don’t even think about it,” Tantai Xue said.

“You are not qualified to discuss conditions with me.” Jiang Qisha lightly smiled, then cast his gaze towards Murong Mingtian.

“Insolent witch, you dare to act so impudently just as a rank three Martial King? Do you truly think I’m here for nothing?” Murong Mingtian explosively shouted. The aura of a rank seven Martial King was released, and at the same time, he raised his palm and threw an attack at Tantai Xue.

boom rumble rumble

His strike, though not a martial skill, contained terrifying strength. The King-level Martial power was surging forth, visible by even the naked eye. At that moment, it was like a wild beast as it threw itself towards Tantai Xue with its destructive power.

However, just when his attack was about to strike, Tantai Xue’s eyes glinted. Instantly, the sky darkened. Layers of black clouds covered the sky, and a cold chill was the first thing to descend. Countless bone-piercing snowflakes soon followed, and became a violent snowstorm.

whoosh whoosh whoosh

The snowflakes appeared beautiful, but all contained very horrifying aura. Moreover, they would fly in accordance with Tantai Xue’s gaze. Not only did the snowstorm completely destroy Murong Mingtian’s attack, it even attacked him.

“HAA—”

Murong Mingtian didn't dare to be negligent towards the incoming snowstorm. He raised his hand, and palmed forward. Amidst bursts of roars, countless huge beasts formed by Martial power appeared. As they ran in the air, they ferociously dashed forward.

However, even though this was a fierce rank nine martial skill, it was unable to stop Tantai Xue's attack. When it clashed with the snowstorm, it was instantly shattered. It did not even put up a fight.

“It's that powerful?”

Not to mention bystanders, even Murong Mingtian's expression changed greatly. He was stunned. Even though he knew Divine Bodies were very powerful and had overwhelming fighting strength, he didn't expect her to be *this* powerful. She was clearly only a rank three Martial King, but such a casual attack was already so violent. He, a rank seven Martial King, was powerless against it.

“I do not believe I cannot deal with you!” But other than shock, Murong Mingtian felt furious. After all, he was still a rank seven Martial King. How could he be forced back by a mere rank three Martial King before the eyes of the crowd?

Amidst rage, he flipped his palm, and took out his Royal Armament. Instantly, the entire atmosphere changed due to its appearance. His aura was also soaring.

After a loud blast, the vast King-level Martial power engaged with the snowstorm. When the two collided, an explosion caused a shock wave to arise and it flew towards Murong Mingtian.

“So powerful. Who is this woman? How does she have such terrifying strength?” The observers couldn't help deeply breathing when they saw the shock wave spread in all directions.

They had seen Murong Mingtian's strength quite a while before. Many people felt that he was so powerful it went against reason itself, and he was even possibly the only person in the Eastern Sea Region who had a chance at becoming a Martial Emperor.

Yet, now, Tantai Xue simply struck out casually and forced Murong Mingtian, a rank seven Martial King, to use a Royal Armament in defense. He truly stood no chance against that special power.

hmm Just at that moment, the shock wave dissipated, and Murong Mingtian once again appeared.

His clothes were still undamaged, and it could be seen that he wasn't injured. With the power of the Royal Armament, he had successfully stopped Tantai Xue's attack. However, his complexion was not well.

But after organizing his emotions, Murong Mingtian actually laughed. He said, "As expected of a Divine Body, a genius who's obtained the protection of the heavens. It truly is the first time in my entire life that I've experienced such powerful strength. I really do lament at my inferiority."

He said that because he, as a rank seven Martial King, lost to a rank three Martial King—that was quite embarrassing. *However*, if the one he lost to was not a normal rank three Martial King, but one with a Divine Body, that would be much more acceptable.

After all, everyone knew those who had Divine Bodies were people who held divine power in their hands. No matter cultivation aptitude, or personal strength, ordinary people stood no chance against either.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 961 - Exchanging Hostages

MGA: Chapter 961 - Exchanging Hostages

"What? Divine Body? So she has a Divine Body?"

"Doesn't that mean she just used the legendary divine power?"

"I know! I remember! There was a wintry phenomenon that occurred over a week ago! That must have been caused by her."

"That's right. I even personally saw that phenomenon back then. Now that you mention it, it truly is very similar to the technique she's using right now. Doesn't that mean she really does have a Divine Body?"

"This is too powerful. Is this a real Divine Body? A rank seven Martial King must evade her attacks even though she's only a rank three Martial King?"

Indeed, after Murong Mingtian spoke, everyone came to a realization. As they looked at Tantai Xue, their eyes were of surprise and fright, which then turned to extreme fear.

Tantai Xue was different from Zi Ling. Zi Ling had the Heaven Gripping Pellet in her body, and from a young age, her divine power was restricted and she simply didn't have the power she should have had.

But Tantai Xue, on the other hand, had not been restricted. She had a true Divine Body; she was a true genius who had received protection from the heavens.

"Haha, as expected of the witch! It seems that you *are* qualified to discuss conditions with me." Jiang Qisha suddenly laughed. As he spoke, he cast his gaze towards Zhao Yuetian, and said, "Junior, release them."

Zhao Yuetian quickly rushed into the Misty Peak, and after an instant, when he reappeared, there was a large group of people behind him.

"This is?" After seeing them, many observers were taken aback. They recognized the ones behind Zhao Yuetian.

Of those people, the five disciples of the Misty Peak were included—Chun Wu, Xia Yu, Qiu Zhu, Dong Xue, Yan Ruyu—as well as many guardians of the Misty Peak.

Other than those, there were also Su Rou, Su Mei, Zhang Tianyi, Jiang Wushang—the ones close to Chu Feng.

However, Spirit Formation chains were tied all around their bodies. Moreover, they were all connected, and even though there weren't any injuries on them, they did look quite pitiful.

But when the observers discovered that *they* were the ones Tantai Xue wanted, they became aware of a problem: Tantai Xue was together with Chu Feng and Lady Piaomiao. Otherwise, she wouldn't be taking such a risk. That meant they, who had insulted Chu Feng before, were now at risk once again.

"Release my junior," Jiang Qisha said.

hmm Tantai Xue raised her hand slightly, and the box shone with radiance. A person then appeared amidst the light—Kuang Bainian.

However, after they saw him, no matter Jiang Qisha or Zhao Yuetian, their eyes glinted as strong rage surged into their eyes.

At that moment, he was not in a good condition at all. Not only were Spirit Formation chains tied all around him, there were bloody wounds all over his body. Other than those, there were also frightening scars. Even his aura was weak—everything that could be done to make him tragic was done.

It was evident he hadn't received any small acts of torture and cruelty when he was imprisoned.

After seeing Jiang Qisha and Zhao Yuetian, Kuang Bainian looked as if he saw his savior. He quickly shouted, "Seniors, help me—"

bang But before he even finished speaking, out of nowhere, Tantai Xue waved her hand and landed a loud and clear slap on Kuang Bainian's face.

The powerful strength not only spun Kuang Bainian a few times in the air, when he stopped, he opened his mouth and spat out some blood.

"Quiet!" Tantai Xue coldly shouted after the slap.

"Mmm—"

After Tantai Xue shouted at him, Kuang Bainian didn't retort and truly remained silent. That was very surprising as he'd always had a bad temper. It was as if he were a hungry wolf that saw a fierce tiger—he was simply abnormally obedient.

It could thus be seen that Tantai Xue had left an inerasable shadow in Kuang Bainian's heart.

"Tantai Xue, I damn your ancestors! You didn't keep true to your word! You dare to torment my junior like this?!" Zhao Yuetian was furious. He pointed at Tantai Xue and started loudly cursing at her.

"Word? I only said you weren't allowed to harm the ones close to Chu Feng. I never said I would do the same to Kuang Bainian," Tantai Xue sneered.

"You..."

"You bitch! Since it's like this, then I'll torture them right now! I'll let you know the consequences of harming my junior!" Zhao Yuetian was truly furious. As

he spoke, he clenched one of his fists and a whip made from Martial power was created in his hand. He then cast his icy gaze at Su Rou, Su Mei, and the others.

“If you dare to touch them, I’ll take your junior’s puny life right now, then I’ll take yours.” Tantai Xue was very calm, but her tone was full of killing intent.

“Tantai Xue, I know what you’re thinking. You just want to exchange hostages, then deal with us without any worries, right?”

“Actually, I have the same thoughts. Come, let us do that. Then, let me see what sort of abilities your so-called Divine Body possesses.” Jiang Qisha suddenly spoke, and he waved his hand at Zhao Yuetian.

Though Zhao Yuetian was unwilling to, he still released them all. However, he did not completely undo the binding around them.

“Wait.” However, Tantai Xue spoke once again. She pointed at the red sedan chair and said, “Release Zi Ling.”

“Heh, no problem.” Jiang Qisha lightly smiled, and waved his big sleeve. After a boom, the sedan chair was shattered, and as the fragments flew through the air, a beautiful person appeared.

She was wearing a red dress, and ornaments dazzling in gold adorned her body. Her perfect figure, in addition to such careful enhancements, made her look extremely gorgeous. Her beautiful complexion was even enough to enchant millions, and naturally, that person was Zi Ling.

“Waa—”

“Is this Zi Ling?”

“She’s too beautiful. She’s simply even more beautiful than Ya Fei and Qiu Zhu! She’s simply the most beautiful person in the Eastern Sea Region!”

“What a shame, what a shame. She’s such a beautiful woman, and even has a Divine Body, but is fated for... Ahh...”

After seeing Zi Ling, many people couldn’t help but deeply inhale. Admiration surfaced into their eyes, and some men even gulped, lacking a bit of control over themselves.

Zi Ling's beauty was truly devastating. There were very few who could compare to her, and to say she was the most beautiful woman in the Eastern Sea Region would not be exaggerating. Basically, if it were a man she had definitely moved their hearts.

Tantai Xue didn't waste any time on words after seeing Zi Ling. She pointed at Kuang Bainian, and said, "Scram. If you land in my hands again, I'll take away your life."

At that moment, he no longer hesitated. With large strides, he quickly went towards Jiang Qisha. However, since his cultivation was bound, even if he ran quicker than his current speed, it was still, in reality, not all that fast.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 962 - Shameless and Despicable

MGA: Chapter 962 - Shameless and Despicable

"Go. If you're too slow, watch out for my blade." Jiang Qisha swept his gaze over Su Rou, Su Mei, and the others from the Misty Peak. In the end, he stopped on Zi Ling, and said, "My beauty, don't be afraid. I will take you back."

"You shameless man! Chu Feng will not forgive you!" Zi Ling gritted her teeth, so much they creaked. There was also strong killing intent in her beautiful eyes.

"Haha, that trash? I'll be waiting for him. If he comes, I'll cut his flesh bit by bit in front of you. I'll have your Chu Feng beg for forgiveness... right before I kill him.

"Hahaha..." Jiang Qisha loudly laughed. His laughter was one of extreme madness, and extreme sinisteress.

Zi Ling clenched her fists in anger. An indescribable rage surfaced onto her face.

"Sister Zi Ling, let's go." Just at that moment, Su Rou, Su Mei, Zhang Tianyi, Jiang Wushang, Chun Wu, Yan Ruyu, and the others all ran over.

Only then did she discover that the others were running towards Tantai Xue with everything they had. In order to avoid burdening others, Zi Ling didn't

waste her breath on Jiang Qisha anymore and hurriedly ran towards Tantai Xue as well.

However, they were the same as Kuang Bainian. Since their cultivations were bound, though they could fly, they were rather slow.

But, despite their slowness, no matter Kuang Bainian, or Zi Ling and the others, their speed was about the same.

There weren't any unexpected incidents that occurred with the hostage exchange. When Kuang Bainian safely arrived at Jiang Qisha's side, Zi Ling and the others also safely arrived at Tantai Xue's side.

"Come behind me. They won't be able to harm you," Tantai Xue calmly said.

Zi Ling and the others didn't hesitate. Although they didn't know her, they had heard a bit about Tantai Xue as Jiang Qisha mentioned her quite a few times. They knew she was here to help them.

whoosh

However, just when one of the guardians of the Misty Peak passed Tantai Xue, he suddenly attacked her. Two glowing talismans filled with boundless power landed onto her body, catching her completely off guard.

"You..."

Even Tantai Xue did not expect something like that. The distance between him and her was really too short. When she felt something was wrong, the two talismans had already landed on her snow-white skirt.

bzzzz

boom rumble rumble rumble

In the instant of impact, they rapidly transformed. One became chains of lightning that tied Tantai Xue up, while the other talisman kept on exploding on her body.

"Old Man Liu, what are you doing? Have you gone mad?"

Chun Wu and the others changed their expressions greatly when they saw that. Chun Wu even pointed at the old man and loudly cursed. As she spoke, she was even about to attack him.

“Heh, Old Man Liu? Are you sure?” But just at that moment, the old man’s face suddenly changed? No one anticipated that. His complexion was not the only thing that changed—his height did as well.

“You... It’s you?!” Initially, Chun Wu and the others were filled with fury. However, after that transformation, fear immediately emerged onto their faces.

Only then did they discover the old man had been secretly swapped. This wasn’t Old Man Liu, a guardian of the Misty Peak, but Jiang Qisha’s junior, Wu Kunlun.

“Heh. You think trash like you can see through my disguise?

“I’ve had enough with all of you in these days. Other than Zi Ling, all of you will die today!” Wu Kunlun returned to his actual appearance, and he instantly revealed all of his fierceness. As he spoke, he released his rank three Martial King pressure, and was about to start slaughtering them all.

“The one who will die is you.” But just in that absolutely crucial moment, a hand was suddenly held out, which then grabbed Wu Kunlun’s head.

It was Tantai Xue. At that moment, blood was all over her body. Her veil was taken down, showing her ugly appearance. Moreover, her aura was extremely weak. In contrast to this weakness, though, she was releasing a very strong killing intent.

“No!” Jiang Qisha’s complexion changed greatly. He never would have anticipated Tantai Xue to live even after using two treasure-level talismans. Jiang Qisha quickly leapt forward, and flew towards Tantai Xue, hoping to change this horrible change in situation.

“No one will save him.” But before Jiang Qisha arrived, chilliness was released from Tantai Xue’s palm. It instantly enveloped Wu Kunlun, and immediately turned him into a statue of ice.

Afterwards, Tantai Xue’s palm shook, and the large piece of ice was shattered. Wu Kunlun’s aura disappeared completely—Tantai Xue had mercilessly killed him.

“You dare to kill my Junior Wu? I will have your life!”

Jiang Qisha was enraged when he witnessed Wu Kunlun’s death right in front of his eyes. His furious roar shook the world, and after a flip of his palm, a fiery red halberd appeared within his hand.

An incomparable ruler’s pressure enveloped the world in the instant it appeared. The might was even several times fiercer than Murong Mingtian, a rank seven Martial King.

“Despicable thing, the one who will die is you!” Tantai Xue, who fell into the trap, was similarly enraged. Her eyes glinted, and became snow-white.

boom

Simultaneously, the sky darkened, and a violent snowstorm came into existence. As it brought forth chaos, it engulfed everything in an instant.

swish After releasing her divine power, Tantai Xue leapt forward and fought the incoming Jiang Qisha.

boom boom boom

At that instant, the sky above a circumference of several thousand miles was pitch-black. One could only see the pale-white snowstorm and the blood-red blades of energy.

When those two clashed with each other, horrifying energy shock waves were sent out. Even space itself was shattered, and the sea underneath surged.

It seemed as if the sky had crumbled and the earth had collapsed. The world seemed as though it were to be destroyed by the two of them.

“This is too terrifying. These are the peak geniuses of the Holy Land of Martialism. This is true destructive strength.”

Everyone felt chills go down their spines when they saw such a terrifying battle. All of their hair stood on end; they were completely dumbstruck. Since they were at such a close distance, they were able to feel how powerful the two were.

If they truly used everything they had to fight, it was likely no one within a circumference of several thousand miles would survive. They would be crushed to death by the remnants they released.

But the two of them, when fighting in such a life-and-death situation, were able to prevent any injuries upon anyone despite the world-shaking might they exuded. That meant they had complete control over their strength, and had already grasped their respective power to the maximum.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 963 - The Terminator

MGA: Chapter 963 - The Terminator

The wintry gales howled, shaking the world.

Blades of light flew about, cutting the fabric of space itself.

Tantai Xue and Jiang Qisha both held the appearances of a genius. In comparison to the Eastern Sea Region's own geniuses, they were like gods. They were so unimaginably powerful.

They repeatedly traded attacks back and forth as the battle became increasingly intense. The crowd could only see the howling snowstorm and the ferocious blades of fiery energy. The bodies of the two combatants were a blur.

But even though they could not be seen, the mightiness from their martial skills, Royal Armament, and various techniques made everyone's heart surge with various emotions. They were both excited and frightened.

Excited, because they were witnessing the clash of peak geniuses.
Frightened, because that was a feeling that arose when beholding such terrifying power.

Admittedly, Tantai Xue and Jiang Qisha convinced everyone who was watching of their powerful strength. Even Murong Mingtian himself couldn't help but admit he was indeed inferior to these two monstrous youths.

But in the battle between two tigers, there would always be one defeated. In the clash between two dragons, there would always be a victor. Tantai Xue and Jiang Qisha were no exception.

“Ahh!” Suddenly, a painful cry rang out. A person also shot out from the fierce battlefield, and simultaneously, the devastating energy shock waves vanished instantly.

It was Tantai Xue. At that moment, not only was blood all over her body, she was coughing it out in large amounts. Moreover, her aura was several times weaker than before. Even her body was violently trembling. She could still stand in the air, but she was at the border of life and death, seeming as if she would fall at any moment.

Jiang Qisha also appeared. He not only held the red halberd in his hand, there was a fiery aura surrounding his body.

It rose endlessly into the air, and was even fiercer than flames. But the most terrifying thing wasn't the fiery aura visible to the naked eye—it was the invisible bloodlust he exuded.

“Tantai Xue, hand your life over!” Jiang Qisha's eyes were blood-red. He was akin to a demon. As he wielded the halberd in his hand, he flew towards Tantai Xue.

“Mm—”

Tantai Xue attempted to move. She wanted to dodge, but it was useless as she could not evade as she wished. Instead, she spat out a mouthful of blood. She was powerless to fight.

But even though Tantai Xue was in no condition to continue, Jiang Qisha didn't hold the slightest trace of care for her. The fiery-red halberd in his hand slashed down with an immense force. He prepared to cut Tantai Xue completely in half.

hmm

However, when everyone expected Tantai Xue to be dead, the space in front of her squirmed slightly, then after a tearing sound, it split open and a pitch-black sword shot out.

After it appeared, it was held horizontally above Tantai Xue, which it then struck Jiang Qisha's fiery-red halberd.

CLANG—

Sparks instantly flew in all directions in the instant of the collision. Simultaneously, Jiang Qisha's wrist trembled. His body quivered, and he sprang back. He was actually forced away by that power.

"What is that?"

Everyone was shocked. They had seen Jiang Qisha's strength, but right now, the pitch-black sword that appeared out of nowhere so fiercely forced Jiang Qisha away. How could they *not* be shocked?

"That sword... Could it be?" Murong Mingtian's sharp brows furrowed. An uneasy feeling arose from his heart, because that pitch-black sword looked very familiar.

"Who is it?" Jiang Qisha fiercely shouted with a bit of a frown.

"What, have you forgotten about me already?" Space itself split once again, and a person slowly stepped out, appearing before the crowd.

That person had long hair that fell onto his shoulders, and a large sword in his hand. Although he wasn't that handsome, there was a hint of a valiantness on his face. Moreover, there was some brilliance swirling around his body, making him appear akin to some sort of divine being.

Most importantly, such a young man like him was emanating the aura of a rank four Martial King.

"Chu Feng? It's Chu Feng?!"

Everyone was dumbfounded. It was not only because Chu Feng dared to appear in this place, nor was it because he was releasing the aura of a rank four Martial King. It was because the person who forced *Jiang Qisha* back was Chu Feng.

"What's going on? Wasn't Chu Feng a Martial Lord? Why has he suddenly become a Martial King, and even a rank four Martial King?"

"What happened? Why has Chu Feng's strength reached such a level, and why does the weapon in his hand look so familiar? It seems like the Crippling Night Demon Sect's treasure, the Royal Armament the former sect head used, the Demon Sealing Sword!"

“Demon Sealing Sword? That’s right, it is the Demon Sealing Sword! Chu Feng got his hands on it? He’s actually obtained this king of Royal Armaments? What is happening?” There were many surprised exclamations, but there were even more panic and fear.

“Chu Feng!” Zi Ling and the others were elated as they quickly ran up to Chu Feng.

When he saw them all safe and sound, Chu Feng’s heart was at ease. But he didn’t have time to chat with them as he hurriedly placed his palm on Tantai Xue’s forehead.

wuaoo—

When his palm touched Tantai Xue, an ear-piercing cry rang out. At the same time, one could see a red aura appearing from Chu Feng’s body, and it endlessly surged into Tantai Xue’s body.

As it was channeled into Tantai Xue, her wounds started healing, and even her aura started to turn for the better.

The reason this technique had such a mystical healing effect was because it was not an ordinary technique, but a Secret Skill—the Vermilion Bird Revival Technique.

“It’s a Secret Skill! I seems that I’ve underestimated you. This cultivation you have doesn’t belong to you. You must have gotten it from some sort of special technique, right?” Jiang Qisha coldly said.

However, Chu Feng simply ignored Jiang Qisha. He had kept on healing Tantai Xue, and only after she was saved from danger did he take a relieved sigh.

“Thank you...” With the Vermilion Bird Revival Technique, Tantai Xue had indeed survived. But after giving her gratitude, she closed her eyes, and fainted away.

“Zi Ling, you guys, take care of her.” Chu Feng passed the weak Tantai Xue over to them.

“Chu Feng, you...” Seeing Chu Feng, whose expression was calm but heart was bursting with rage, Zi Ling and the others were a bit concerned. They knew Chu Feng well; they knew he wouldn’t leave this matter alone.

“Don’t worry, I won’t be rash.” Chu Feng lightly smiled, and as he spoke, he stood up. He then cast his gaze swirling with killing intent and fury towards everyone else and said indifferently, “I just want to finish this battle.”

Martial God Asura - Chapter 964 - The Battle Begins

MGA: Chapter 964 - The Battle Begins

“Finish this battle? You’re quite courageous to dare and say that. You truly think you can defeat us alone?” Murong Mingtian sneered. Although Chu Feng was a rank four Martial King, any person who had some experience with battles could see that Chu Feng had obtained this cultivation with some sort of special method.

Murong Mingtian, who had cultivated on the Misty Peak, knew quite well how Chu Feng obtained his current cultivation. But even though Chu Feng was a rank four Martial King, he wasn’t afraid because he didn’t think Chu Feng was any match for Jiang Qisha. Besides, Chu Feng was alone, while they still had an army of dozens of millions.

“Hoh. Murong Mingtian, if you truly think I’m alone, you are absolutely wrong.” Chu Feng lightly smiled, then rumbles starting resounding from the distant.

Very soon, over ten million people wearing long black robes appeared within their line of sight, where they then quickly arrived on the battlefield.

Those people were naturally the Crippling Night Demon Sect’s army. Not only them, Qiushui Fuyan and Taikou were within their ranks as well.

“The Crippling Night Demon Sect? Their members have truly gathered, and they’re truly coming to attack this place?”

Many people felt astonished when they saw such a scene. Everyone knew who of the Crippling Night Demon Sect. So, even though the formation, in terms of strength, was the exact same as the mysterious army that came in waves before, the deterrence brought forth by the one now was completely different.

It was especially so for the Four Protectors of the Crippling Night Demon Sect—Qiu Canfeng, Fu Liansheng, Xue Xiyue, and You Mingdeng. Which one of them wasn't an infamous great demon in the Eastern Sea Region?

As for the Five Elemental Kings—Gold, Wood, Water, Fire, and Earth—they too were more than they seemed.

The formation they made was tantamount to the gathering of the Crippling Night Demon Sect's peak experts. Other than the lack of sect head, all the true experts were present.

"WE GREET LORD SECT HEAD!" But just at that moment, an even more astounding scene occurred: the entire army of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, including the Four Protectors, all half-knelt orderly and paid their respects to Chu Feng.

"What? Sect head? Chu Feng's the head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect?"

The already stunned crowd were now all dumbfounded. They were stupefied. No matter what, they would not have expected that Chu Feng had become the head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

But after a bit more thinking... the Demon Sealing Sword in his hand was the sect's most valuable treasure, and in addition, Chu Feng's cultivation aptitude had always been immensely powerful. Now, his cultivation had soared, so, really, he was qualified to become the head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

"Hoh, so the ones who used the formation before were all of you.

"Although you are merely useless soldiers in my eyes, you are all still willing to die just for Chu Feng. This is quite unexpected."

Murong Mingtian sneered. No matter how they appeared in the eyes of others, in his own eyes, they were a group of trash he could kill himself. Numbers? That was meaningless.

"Hoh, you're looking down on the Crippling Night Demon Sect? If you and Jiang Qisha don't do anything, do you think your Immortal Execution Archipelago is any match for us?" Chu Feng coldly asked.

“This...” Many people’s hearts felt like drums beating. Although the Immortal Execution Archipelago’s experts were as common as clouds, the Crippling Night Demon Sect was not weak at all. Moreover, the crowd knew the Crippling Night Demon Sect was the former overlord of the Eastern Sea Region. Even though it had been split up for many years, the legend they left behind made others feel they were terrifying powerful.

Without Murong Mingtian, this rank seven Martial King old monster, not to mention the Immortal Execution Archipelago alone, even if the Three Great Monstrous Clans joined up with them, they still might not necessarily defeat the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

“What a joke. Do you truly think your Crippling Night Demon Sect is invincible? Even if I don’t do anything, your Crippling Night Demon Sect is no match for the Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Three Great Monstrous Clans.”

Murong Mingtian sneered. He was not afraid. Putting aside the fact that they, the union of four forces, were in an advantage in terms of battle formation, they were in a huge advantage in terms of numbers.

“Since you’ve said that, I don’t mind letting you see whether your alliance army is stronger, or my Crippling Night Demon Sect’s experts are stronger.” As Chu Feng spoke, the Demon Sealing Sword in his hand shone with light. An invisible ripple then swept out.

hmm When it passed through the Crippling Night Demon Sect, their auras rapidly soared. Although their cultivation levels were unchanged, the feeling they exuded was completely different from before.

“The Crippling Night Demon Sect’s Slaughtering Formation?” Murong Mingtian frowned slightly. He knew the Crippling Night Demon Sect had something that raised everyone’s strength—the Demon Bestowal Slaughtering Formation.

However, it was a very complicated formation. Only in their territory would such a formation exist, yet right now, this was within his Immortal Execution Archipelago’s borders. How could there possibly be a formation like that? Moreover, judging by the increase in their strength, he could tell that the power from the formation was extremely strong.

“Could it be... the Demon Sealing Sword? This brat laid the formation on his body?” Murong Mingtian thought. However, when he imagined such a possibility, even he couldn’t help but feel shock.

“My brothers, attention! Today, I will have the Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Three Great Monstrous Clans annihilated! No matter who it is, those who block me die!” Chu Feng suddenly pointed his sword down—towards the Immortal Execution Archipelago’s army.

“KILL—” The Crippling Night Demon Sect were like awakened demons after Chu Feng’s words. All of them burst with bloodlust. They used all sorts of ferocious skills, and slaughtered their way towards their enemy.

“KILL—” Of course, the Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Three Great Monstrous Clans would not show any cowardice. Amidst furious roars, they fought the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

boom boom boom boom

When two armies of millions clashed, shock waves instantly arose. The might was truly shocking, and extremely frightening. This time, it was not only an army of ten million fighting, it was an army of ten million actual lives fighting. Every fall of a body represented the disappearance of a life.

But there had to be one victor from the confrontation of two armies. The battle formation of both sides was roughly the same—the Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Three Great Monstrous Clans’ side was actually in an enormous advantage in terms of numbers.

But when they truly battled, the one with the edge instantly surfaced—it was the Crippling Night Demon Sect’s army. With absolute strength and perfect coordination, they overcame their disadvantage in numbers and gained the upper hand!

Martial God Asura - Chapter 965 - The Slash that Destroys Everything

MGA: Chapter 965 - The Slash that Destroys Everything

Duels demanded individual strength.

Group combat demanded mutual understanding of each other.

When millions of people were fighting, all varying in cultivation strength, taking care of one another would greatly reduce the degree of injury and the number of dead.

At that moment, the Crippling Night Demon Sect was attacking the Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Three Great Monstrous Clans. Although there was a vast disparity in numbers, no matter individual strength or collective strength, the Crippling Night Demon Sect was far superior to their opponents.

This was like dozens of millions of cultivation experts in comparison to ten million trained elites. The one weaker and the one stronger was absolutely evident.

“AHH—”

A never-ending stream of painful cries resounded in the sky. An endless number of people fell dead from the air within the battlefield. However, amongst ten dead there were at least nine and a half who were from the Immortal Execution Archipelago or the Three Great Monstrous Clans. In the exchange just now, the Immortal Execution Archipelago's army had already entered a very perilous situation. If nothing were changed, their defeat was inevitable.

“This is too terrifying. It's said the Crippling Night Demon Sect's army not only holds horrifying strength, they are very well trained as well. That seems to be absolutely true. Even though the Immortal Execution Archipelago allied with the Three Great Monstrous Clans, they are no match for the Crippling Night Demon Sect.” As the observers watched the brilliant coordination, they were very amazed.

“No, that's not all. There's no doubt that the Crippling Night Demon Sect is powerful, but who would dare to say the Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Three Great Monstrous Clans are weak?”

“The reason for such an oppressing advantage is partially due to the commands of the Four Protector, but the most important thing is still because the entirety of the Crippling Night Demon Sect rose in strength.

“And the reason for that is because of the Demon Sealing Sword. Just now, I felt it. The power it released has made the Crippling Night Demon Sect fierce; however, the person who grasps the Demon Sealing Sword is Chu Feng!

“So, in the end, the reason for their overwhelming advantage is Chu Feng!” explained a shrewd person to the crowd.

“Chu Feng?!” After hearing those words, several hundreds of millions of people couldn’t help casting their gazes towards Chu Feng. Only then did they discover he remained as calm as the very beginning, looking as if he knew he would win. Such absolute confidence was worn on his face.

“Using a formation to raise their strength... Truly shameless.” Murong Mingtian’s complexion was very unsightly. After a furious roar, he raised his palm, and pushed it forward. Layers of King-level Martial power flew towards the Crippling Night Demon Sect. In the end, he couldn’t help himself from attacking.

whoosh However, in the instant Murong Mingtian made his move, Chu Feng suddenly waved the Demon Sealing Sword in his hand. A black blade of energy sliced through the air, and also through Murong Mingtian’s attack.

“Murong Mingtian, do you not want face? Didn’t you say you would allow them to fight, and you wouldn’t do anything? Do you not know what ‘keeping true to your word’ is after living for several hundred years?” Chu Feng mocked after cutting through the attack.

“Keeping true to one’s word? I, Murong Mingtian, do not do anything like that to enemies. I only know the victor is king, and the loser is the villain. The world only remembers the side that won,” Murong Mingtian shouted, and as he wielded the Royal Armament in his hand, he attacked Chu Feng.

“The victor is king, and the loser is the villain. However, that does not mean nothing else matters. Today, I will openly defeat you!” Chu Feng brought a smile to his face as he faced Murong Mingtian, who held a Royal Armament and exuded the pressure of a rank seven Martial King. He was not the slightest bit afraid.

whoosh

Suddenly, slight movements came from Chu Feng’s body, then he instantly disappeared. When he reappeared, he had already come up to Murong Mingtian. Moreover, the Demon Sealing Sword was mercilessly slicing down.

Even though Chu Feng had already shown extremely powerful strength, Murong Mingtian was not afraid. Waving the Royal Armament in his hand, he

slashed towards Chu Feng's Demon Sealing Sword. He was meeting force with force—Royal Armament with Royal Armament. With this, he was going to display his strength of a rank seven Martial King to guard his dignity.

clang

Finally, the two collided, but after a huge explosion, Murong Mingtian's wrist actually trembled, and his body quivered slightly as well. Like an arrow, he was shot back.

"How is this possible? This..."

Murong Mingtian was stupefied. He could very clearly feel the Royal Armament in his hand violently trembling. It was not just a simple fear—it was very deep fear, so much it lost its will to fight.

The reason for such a reaction was naturally because of the Demon Sealing Sword in Chu Feng's hand. The king of Royal Armaments—it wasn't as simple as just a mere title. The deterrence it exuded would truly make other Royal Armaments fear it.

At first, Murong Mingtian even thought he could compensate for the Royal Armament's disadvantage with his rank seven Martial King strength and thus suppress Chu Feng. But no matter what, he would not have expected that he underestimated Chu Feng—a very severe underestimation. With the assistance of the Demon Sealing Sword, Chu Feng's strength had far surpassed his own.

whoosh

When Murong Mingtian was shocked back, light shone beneath Chu Feng's feet, and he once again flew over and came up to Murong Mingtian. The Demon Sealing Sword had been emanating pressure. It was prepared to attack Murong Mingtian again.

"Brat, don't underestimate me!"

Even though he knew of Chu Feng's strength, Murong Mingtian was furious—Chu Feng was not cautious at all as he continued to chase after him. He was clearly looked down on him.

Amidst bitterness, he too attacked. Although he held the Royal Armament in his hand, he did not wave it. Instead, he waved his sleeve, and released a boundless Martial power.

It immediately started coalescing, became innumerable weapons.

Blade, spear, sword, halberd, hatchet, axe, hook, fork, dagger, rod, lance, club, whip, truncheon, hammer, claw...

Every single one of the myriad weapons contained strength no inferior to a Royal Armament. When over ten thousand weapons equal to Royal Armaments gathered together, one could imagine its power.

This was not a simple attack—it was a martial skill. It was not a simple martial skill either—it was a very profound rank nine martial skill.

Its might was very frightening, and everyone was deeply drawn towards this martial skill's strength.

But the most shocking thing was Chu Feng's lack of intention to stop, even when facing a martial skill like that. He wasn't even planning to use a martial skill of his own to counterattack. He was aiming to use the Demon Sealing Sword to meet these weapons equivalent to Royal Armaments.

whoosh

Finally, Chu Feng made his move. The Demon Sealing Sword in his hand quickly slid through the air, and a black blade of energy flew out.

It was simple invincible and unstoppable. It brought forth destruction in all the areas it passed. It was absolutely devastating as it shattered all the Royal Armaments made by the martial skill.

With just one strike, Chu Feng destroyed Murong Mingtian's rank nine martial skill.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 966 - As Powerful as Before

MGA: Chapter 966 - As Powerful as Before

boom

The energy slash released by the Demon Sealing Sword was unstoppable. It broke through Murong Mingtian's rank nine martial skill without any trouble, and after a violent collision, the slash erupted into an explosion, whereupon the remnant shock wave flew towards Murong Mingtian.

"Dammit!"

Murong Mingtian cursed when he saw the incoming shock wave. At such a distance, he could not cast a martial skill in time, nor could he dodge it. Since he could do nothing to completely avoid this dangerous situation, he could only raise the Royal Armament in his hand to meet force with force. He prepared to block Chu Feng's attack.

bang

But what he didn't expect was despite being only a remnant shock wave, its power was still incomparably ferocious. Although he had successfully blocked it, he was still thrown several miles back.

Most importantly, when he stopped, not only did the Royal Armament in his hand tremble even more violently, his arm trembled violently as well. Large amounts of blood flowed down toward his palm—Murong Mingtian had been injured, and it was no light injury either.

"Dammit. Why is this brat's strength so horrifying?"

Murong Mingtian's complexion was ashen as he tightly furrowed his brows. He was finally aware of how serious this was because he had never expected Chu Feng to be so strong.

In his eyes, the strength Chu Feng showed was not the slightest bit weaker than Tantai Xue before she was ambushed. At least, Murong Mingtian would have a difficult time fighting Chu Feng with the strength he currently had.

"Murong Mingtian, rank seven Martial King? You are quite disappointing."

Chu Feng sneered, and simultaneously, he waved the Demon Sealing Sword in his hand again. Layers of darkness enveloped the sky, Chu Feng attacked Murong Mingtian once again. This time, the might he released was even stronger than before.

"This brat?!"

Murong Mingtian's expression changed greatly as Chu Feng rushed over again. Within his eyes of guile, wariness, and fearlessness, there was a very rarely seen fright. He knew only death awaited him if he continued fighting Chu Feng in his present state.

"Murong Mingtian, how long are you going to wait until you use the Talismanic Pellets?" said Jiang Qisha, who had remained silent all this time.

Murong Mingtian felt he had a revelation. Flipping his palm, the several Talismanic Pellets Jiang Qisha gave him appeared on his hand. He unhesitatingly swallowed them all.

boom An odd shock wave rippled from the inside of Murong Mingtian's body to the outside. Moreover, runic markings started appearing on him.

They looked like dragons and snakes as they were all interconnected with each other. They were very strange, but most importantly, after those markings appeared, Murong Mingtian's eyes caved in. He was akin to a bloodthirsty beast as bloodlust swirled around him. It was very horrifying.

At that very instant, his aura was climbing rapidly. It had infinitely neared a rank eight Martial King, and his fighting strength was even several times stronger than before.

"Can't win, so you use the pellets? Hoh, that's fine. Today, you will die completely convinced of my strength."

Although Murong Mingtian's power had risen, Chu Feng was still not fearful at all. He didn't just continue on, he even sped up. As he wielded the Demon Sealing Sword, he fought Murong Mingtian who had used the Talismanic Pellets.

BOOM—BOOM—BOOM—

The exchange of blows this time was even more frightening than before. However, Murong Mingtian was not forced into a passive state; he could now put up a fight against Chu Feng but he still remained no match for him. After several trades back and forth, he was once again in the disadvantage.

"This isn't true, is it? Murong Mingtian used so many powerful Forbidden Medicines yet he still stands no chance against Chu Feng?"

“Even a rank seven Martial King cannot defeat Chu Feng? Has his strength become this horrifying? Doesn’t this mean he can even stand on equal ground with Jiang Qisha?”

The entire fight between Chu Feng and Murong Mingtian were all caught by the observers. Chu Feng, from the very start, had suppressed Murong Mingtian completely. He even used Talismanic Pellets, yet that didn’t change the outcome. Everyone once again witnessed Chu Feng’s strength.

So actually, Chu Feng’s fighting strength was not only powerful when he was a Martial Lord, he was similarly powerful when a Martial King. No matter how Chu Feng acquired this cultivation of rank four Martial King, right now, Chu Feng had indeed suppressed Murong Mingtian, a rank seven Martial King.

The ancestor of the Immortal Execution Archipelago had lived for several hundred years, yet he was still no match for Chu Feng. How could the observers not be stunned?

At that instant, the ones who mocked Chu Feng to be a coward and trash held various emotions in their hearts: some timid, some trepidation, some a mix of varying feelings.

Right now, Chu Feng had slaughtered a way over. And he wasn’t alone—he brought with him the Crippling Night Demon Sect’s army of ten million. Not only did he become sect head, he even had the cultivation to suppress Murong Mingtian.

Was such a strong youth a coward? Trash?

No, he was neither. Chu Feng acted the same as he always had. He did things no one else dared to do. They had all held an incorrect perspective of Chu Feng, and they were also regretting because of their mistaken words.

Chu Feng possessed such powerful strength, so they knew very well if he wanted to kill them, it was simple as easy as stepping on ants. There was no doubt they would die.

BOOM— Just at that moment, Chu Feng and Murong Mingtian had another intense clash. Though Murong Mingtian was successful in blocking Chu Feng’s attack, there was a frightening wound on his body—he had been injured.

“Jiang Qisha, how much longer are you going to keep watching for? Quickly deal with Tantai Xue and the useless Crippling Night Demon Sect army!” Finally, Murong Mingtian couldn’t stand it any longer. He fiercely shouted at Jiang Qisha, who was standing in the air, doing nothing.

“Heh, old trash, you can’t go any longer already? I even thought you could hold on until that brat’s mysterious cultivation disappeared.”

Jiang Qisha made a disappointed smile on his face. He too had seen that Chu Feng’s current cultivation did not truly belong to him. No matter how long it would remain on his body, there was a limit, and he, Jiang Qisha, was waiting for Chu Feng’s cultivation to fade away.

“Don’t waste your breath! I can still deal with this brat. Take this chance to remove Tantai Xue, and the trash from the Crippling Night Demon Sect!” Murong Mingtian shouted again.

“Heh, no worry. Everything is within my grasp. Crippling Night Demon Sect? That’s just a group of clowns. I can kill them at any time. As for that Tantai Xue... Indeed, she cannot be kept alive.”

Jiang Qisha wore a cold smile on his face, and his gaze suddenly turned chilly. At the same time, he jabbed out with the fiery-red halberd in his hand. Finally, he made his move.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 967 - Sneak Attack

MGA: Chapter 967 - Sneak Attack

boom

The flame-like pillar of light released by Jiang Qisha’s halberd radiated boundless power as it shot towards Zi Ling and the others behind the Crippling Night Demon Sect with unimaginable speed. The target of this attack was clear: it was aimed not at Zi Ling, but rather the unconscious Tantai Xue in her embrace.

“Crap!”

The incoming attack evoked great change in everyone’s expression. Bound by the pressure of the pillar, they were petrified as they could not evade the attack.

The strength of the halberd was truly immense. It clearly wasn't a simple Royal Armament. Be it the aura it radiated or the power of its attacks, it was far superior to other Royal Armaments and could stand on equal ground with Chu Feng's Demon Sealing Sword. If Tantai Xue were unable to dodge this strike, her death would be inevitable.

whoosh

However, just as the crowd felt there was no hope, a black wave of energy sliced through the air and collided into the halberd's attack.

boom rumble rumble—

In the instant they collided, flames rose into the sky and spread out into surging waves of fire. Strangely, the remnants of the halberd's attack did not manage to harm Zi Ling or the others as the blazes halted immediately when they approached ten meters of the group.

Even though the black energy slash also dispersed into an energy shock wave, it seemed as if it had a will of its own and protected Zi Ling and the others.

Jiang Qisha frowned slightly when he saw such a scene unfold. He knew Chu Feng sent out the energy slash which stopped his attack. Therefore, he couldn't help but cast his gaze towards Chu Feng.

Only then did he discover even though Chu Feng was fighting Murong Mingtian, Chu Feng had shot glimpses over in his direction. Moreover, Chu Feng's gaze was filled with disdain. In his current eyes, he actually looked down on Jiang Qisha.

"It seems I've truly underestimated you." Although Jiang Qisha replied with a light smile, such a gaze of contempt had still invoked his fury.

In his heart, Chu Feng was no different from the others in the Eastern Sea Region. He too was trash. He was trash unqualified to even cultivate. Yet, such trash dared to look down on him, who could still be considered a peak genius in Holy Land of Martialism. That was intolerable.

whoosh

Suddenly, a gale arose; Jiang Qisha had attacked. With the fiery-red halberd, he rushed into the intense battlefield. He joined up with Murong Mingtian, and started sending fatal attacks towards Chu Feng.

“You’ve come at the exact right moment.”

But even though Jiang Qisha had entered, Chu Feng remained calm. The Demon Sealing Sword simply sliced through everything. Nothing could stop him. Not only did Murong Mingtian not dare to use his Royal Armament to block the attacks, even Jiang Qisha’s fiery-red halberd was unable to defend against the Demon Sealing Sword. Every time they clashed, his halberd would be forced back by Chu Feng’s Demon Sealing Sword. When Chu Feng fought two alone, he still occupied the advantage.

“This is unbelievable! Chu Feng’s actually fighting two people alone, and he’s even winning! That Jiang Qisha is no match for Chu Feng either!”

“Heavens! Doesn’t this mean Chu Feng’s strength is even above Jiang Qisha’s? Even the genius from the Holy Land of Martialism cannot defeat Chu Feng! He truly is a monster.”

If it was somewhat understandable that Murong Mingtian stood no chance against Chu Feng, it was absolutely unimaginable that Chu Feng could suppress Jiang Qisha in the same manner.

“I do not believe I will lose to trash like you!”

Jiang Qisha’s complexion turned more and more unsightly as the whispers rang out around him. His calm smile had vanished, and replacing it was sinisterness that became increasingly clear.

After being pushed back again by Chu Feng’s Demon Sealing Sword, Jiang Qisha no longer blindly fought. He flipped his palm and raised it in the air.

“Mortal Taboo—Soul Sealing Runes!”

Countless runes flew out from his palm. They were made by Martial power, and contained horrifying strength. It was not a simple martial skill—it was Mortal Taboo martial skill.

Jiang Qisha's fighting strength was already shocking. After wielding the fiery-red halberd, his strength had risen to a stage that even a rank seven Martial King stood no chance.

In such conditions, let alone a Mortal Taboo martial skill, normal attacks were already terrifying with the strength he possessed!

When the attack was cast, the sky lost its colour, and the sun and moon were stripped of their light. Only on his battlefield was one able to see anything. Based on this attack alone, it wasn't an impossibility to completely wipe out the Crippling Night Demon Sect's army of ten million.

"White Tiger Slaughtering Technique!" But when Jiang Qisha cast that Mortal Taboo martial skill, Chu Feng too raised his palm. He cast the supreme Secret Skill, the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique.

aoowuu—

A world-shaking tiger's roar rang out when he struck out with his palm. At the same time, a glittering white tiger that appeared alive shot out from his hand.

It was simply unstoppable when it appeared. It opened its mouth, and gave a roar that could even shatter space itself. When its claws waved, it seemed as if it could break down everything.

Before the white tiger, Jiang Qisha's Mortal Taboo martial skill stood absolutely no chance—it was torn apart. More importantly, the white tiger was merciless. After destroying Jiang Qisha's Mortal Taboo martial skill, its power was only cut in half. It didn't disappear, and instead, ran in the air towards Jiang Qisha as it bared its fangs.

"How is this possible? It's a Secret Skill! He can cast such a powerful Secret Skill! So powerful that it's able to destroy my Mortal Taboo martial skill?"

Jiang Qisha was very experienced, so he instantly knew that the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique Chu Feng cast was not an ordinary martial skill but a Secret Skill.

It was a mysterious ability that changed in accordance with the master's strength. If the master was strong, the Secret Skill would be strong. Likewise, if the master was weak, the Secret Skill would be weak.

Jiang Qisha was shocked exactly because of that. Such power coming from the Secret Skill Chu Feng cast didn't just mean the skill itself was powerful, it indirectly meant Chu Feng's aptitude was powerful, which led to the strength of the Secret Skill.

"I do not believe I will be suppressed by trash like you!" Jiang Qisha gritted his teeth and retreated. Overlaying his palms, he cast another Mortal Taboo martial skill—Spiritual Beast Destruction.

aoo— An extremely horrifying Martial power was released, and as the ferocious power surged, it released furious roars. In the end, it became a black-coloured tiger.

It was over a hundred meters long, and was several times bigger than the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique. Moreover, the might it had with it was no weaker than the Secret Skill.

boom The black and white tigers, though abilities, seemed to possess intelligence. They did not confront each other directly, and instead cleverly fought against one another. It was not only intense, it was very wondrous. It truly did seem like two lively beasts fighting for their lives.

When those two tigers fought each other, Chu Feng and Jiang Qisha also closed their eyes. They seemed to be channeling power into their respective abilities. The intelligence displayed by the martial skill was controlled by the two of them.

"Heh, good chance." Murong Mingtian sneered when Chu Feng was stalled by Jiang Qisha. Suddenly, he waved the Royal Armament in his hand towards Chu Feng, and with radiance shining everywhere, an enormous sword in the sky filled with destructive power shot towards Chu Feng amidst surging might.

This was the Immortal Execution Archipelago's Mortal Taboo martial skill—the Illusory Sword Technique.

Murong Mingtian was despicably launching a sneak attack as Chu Feng and Jiang Qisha were fighting it out.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 968 - Biting to Death?

MGA: Chapter 968 - Biting to Death?

“Crap! Murong Mingtian is sneak attacking Chu Feng!”

The members of the Crippling Night Demon Sect furiously cursed. They gnashed their teeth in anger and their faces turned blue. They felt Murong Mingtian was really too despicable and shameless. He didn’t care about honour.

As a senior expert, perhaps it was forgivable that he joined up with another person to attack Chu Feng alone. *However*, he used a Mortal Taboo martial skill to launch a sneak attack when Chu Feng was preoccupied.

“This...”

In reality, not to mention the people from the Crippling Night Demon Sect, even the observers were rather speechless. When Jiang Qisha joined in the battle before, allying with Murong Mingtian to fight Chu Feng, at least he made it clear about that.

Yet now, Murong Mingtian was sneakily attacking when Chu Feng and Jiang Qisha were fighting. That was a bit unacceptable.

“Heh, Murong Mingtian, you really want to die, huh?”

But when the Illusory Sword Technique was about to strike Chu Feng, he suddenly opened his eyes, coldly chuckled, and used another White Tiger Slaughtering Technique after the raise of his palm.

aooo— It held the exact same strength as the first White Tiger Slaughtering Technique, but it was clear that Murong Mingtian’s Illusory Sword Technique was far inferior to Jiang Qisha’s Soul Sealing Runes.

Thus, when the Secret Skill was cast, it did not exhaust much of its power to break through Murong Mingtian’s Illusory Sword Technique—just one-fourth. After doing so, the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique widened its mouth filled with pointed spikes, and bared it towards Murong Mingtian.

“Illusory Sword Technique.” Murong Mingtian was not flustered. Once again, he stabbed forth with the Royal Armament in his hand, and cast another Mortal Taboo martial skill.

Before this martial skill even reached the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique, it exploded, becoming an extremely violent lump of energy that instantly enveloped the Secret Skill.

“Illusory Sword Technique, Illusory Sword Technique, Illusory Sword Technique!”

Murong Mingtian then cast three more Mortal Taboo martial skills consecutively in the instant the lump of energy appeared. Moreover, every single one of them merged into the lump, doubling its power. After three consecutive explosions, the lump of energy was extremely horrifying. It was akin to a small sun as it stood within the air, emanating deterrence.

Murong Mingtian’s line of thought was actually very simple: he knew his Illusory Sword Technique was no match for Chu Feng’s White Tiger Slaughtering Technique, so that was why he planned out something like this. He wanted to use the power of the four Illusory Sword Technique to cancel out Chu Feng’s White Tiger Slaughtering Technique and protect himself in such a manner.

“Chu Feng, your Secret Skill is indeed powerful, but sadly, you’re too juvenile.” Murong Mingtian wore a cold smile as he watched the exploding lump of energy and felt the disintegrating White Tiger Slaughtering Technique. He muttered to himself, “I am a *real* rank seven Martial King. You? You only have this cultivation because you used the Immortal Transference Mysterious Technique. Forbidden Medicines are useless to you, and any other pellets or techniques to strengthen yourself are useless. You can only rely on Lady Piaomiao’s tiny bit of cultivation. How long do you think you can last in this battle of endurance?”

“Even if my martial skill isn’t as powerful as your Secret Skill, with my cultivation foundations alone, I can just wear you out! Brat, with this bit of battle experience, you want to fight me? You are too young!”

wuao—

But just when Murong Mingtian felt his plot had succeeded, a tiger’s roar suddenly rang out. Quickly following that was a white figure shooting out from the lump of energy. It was an entirely new White Tiger Slaughtering Technique; Chu Feng had actually used a Secret Skill three times in a row.

“H-h-ho... How is this possible?” Murong Mingtian, who had a smirk on his face earlier, paled instantly when he saw the fierce white tiger.

No matter what, he did not expect Chu Feng to cast the Secret Skill a third time after two back-to-back casts earlier.

The power drained by the Secret Skill was huge, no weaker than if it were a Mortal Taboo martial skill. Especially since Chu Feng’s Secret Skill was so powerful, it meant the strength it exhausted was even more enormous. Even if Chu Feng could cast one Secret Skill, the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique, while casting another Secret Skill, the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique, to do so continuously truly defied logic.

But now, he didn’t care about all that. He quickly turned around, and used a bodily martial skill to flee. The appearance of this white tiger was too sudden; he no longer had any chances to cast a Mortal Taboo martial skill, so his only choice was to escape.

aoo— However, the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique was truly too quick. Even though the bodily martial skill Murong Mingtian cast was very strong, he was still unable to rid himself of the Secret Skill. The distance between the two was becoming increasingly small.

“Jiang Qisha, save me!” begged Murong Mingtian. He was out of options in this poorly developing situation.

“Trash! You used so many of my Talismanic Pellets yet you only have strength like this. What’s the use in keeping you alive?”

But as Jiang Qisha watched Murong Mingtian chased fiercely by the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique, he just smiled mockingly. He actually ignored Murong Mingtian, and chose to leave him for dead.

“Dammit! Jiang Qisha you bastard! As an ally, you decide to abandon me?!” Murong Mingtian gnashed his teeth in anger and couldn’t help but curse at Jiang Qisha.

aoo— The White Tiger Slaughtering Technique had arrived. With its widened mouth, it engulfed Murong Mingtian entirely.

“Ahh—” A painful cry instantly rang out, and following that was the sound of teeth grinding and chewing from the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique.

It did not directly kill Murong Mingtian. Instead, it chose to torture him first, granting him a painful death.

“Heavens! Senior Murong, he’s actually...”

Seeing the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique that used its own mysterious power to chew madly, nearly everyone’s face went pale.

However, Murong Mingtian wasn’t a simple person. When the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique tortured him, he was using his own technique to fight back and exhaust the power of the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique. As a result, its body was gradually splitting apart.

“Ancestor—”

The White Tiger Slaughtering Technique started turning into light which shone in every direction. Its power became weaker and weaker, and when its body turned translucent, panic arose, especially from the Immortal Execution Archipelago. They couldn’t help crying out loud.

At that moment, blood was all over Murong Mingtian’s body. His arms and hands were gone, and there was even a bite to his brain. More importantly, his ruined body lost its aura completely. Murong Mingtian had been bitten to death by Chu Feng’s White Tiger Slaughtering Technique.

BOOM—

Just at that moment, the remaining power from the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique, in accordance to Chu Feng’s will, made an explosion. It completely destroyed Murong Mingtian’s remains, and didn’t even leave anything behind.

The mastermind behind the rise of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, the old monster who had lived for several hundred years, was killed by Chu Feng in such a pitiful manner.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 969 - An Attack akin to a Natural Disaster

MGA: Chapter 969 - An Attack akin to a Natural Disaster

“ANCESTOR—” The expression of the Immortal Execution Archipelago’s members turned ashen. They were completely stupefied, unable to come back to their senses until a brief moment later, which they began to heart-wrenchingly lament.

Murong Mingtian was simply too important to them. In their hearts, he was akin to a god—one that led them and one that ruled over the world.

Yet now, their god was killed. How could they accept such an outcome? Like a believer who lost their faith, they lost a direction in life.

“We will avenge Ancestor—”

Amidst such devastating sorrow, the Immortal Execution Archipelago felt their rage and woe merge. They started pouncing towards the Crippling Night Demon Sect in a complete disregard for their own lives. They started trading deaths and paid no heed to what they did so long as they killed.

However, though power arose from their blend of emotions, the Crippling Night Demon Sect too rose in might after seeing Murong Mingtian’s death. They weren’t scared by the suicidal Immortal Execution Archipelago, and instead, they began even more ruthless slaughters.

In a situation like that, it was very difficult for the already suppressed Immortal Execution Archipelago and Three Great Monstrous Clans to hold on.

“This feeling... Could it be...?”

However, after Murong Mingtian’s body exploded, there was a faint power that poured into Chu Feng’s body. However, Chu Feng frowned after it entered. A hint of suspicion flashed into his eyes.

aoo— In Chu Feng’s moment of distraction, Jiang Qisha took that chance to cast his Mortal Taboo martial skill. He wanted to pass Chu Feng’s White Tiger Slaughtering Technique and launch a sneak attack as well.

boom— However, he had greatly underestimated the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique. Even though Chu Feng hadn’t been focusing completely, the Secret Skill still had its own will. It once again broke Jiang Qisha’s Mortal Taboo martial skill.

aoo— The white tiger then let out a furious roar, and leapt towards Jiang Qisha.

whoosh Jiang Qisha started quickly flying backwards in the air. He didn't choose to continue releasing Mortal Taboo martial skills to forcefully meet Chu Feng's attack. He instead chose to escape.

But the white tiger kept chasing tenaciously and it was very quick. Even though Jiang Qisha had used a bodily martial skill, the distance separating the two continued to gradually shrink.

"Is this real? The genius who comes from the Holy Land of Martialism, and even defeated a Divine Body, is being forced to flee because of Chu Feng?" The observers were exclaiming endlessly at such a sight.

If the act of killing Murong Mingtian made them acknowledge Chu Feng's strength, then the act of Jiang Qisha forced to flee in such a pitiful state by Chu Feng's Secret Skill made them approve of Chu Feng's abilities, as, after all, everyone knew Jiang Qisha was much more powerful than Murong Mingtian.

So even though Chu Feng had suppressed Jiang Qisha, many people still held in their hearts a sliver of hope. They felt the genius Jiang Qisha was unfathomable. There existed an infinite number of possibilities on him, so Chu Feng might not truly defeat him.

But many people's sliver of hope had started to break. The situation before their eyes did not make it appear that Jiang Qisha had a trump card to deal with Chu Feng.

"Hmph." But just when many people thought Jiang Qisha was defeated already, he coldly snorted as a hint of resolution surfaced in his eyes.

He then flipped his palm and several Talismanic Pellets appeared on his hand. He opened his mouth and swallowed them all.

hmm

After consuming the pellets, Jiang Qisha had the same reaction as Murong Mingtian: runes and patterns appeared on his skin and his aura soared.

bang Jiang Qisha suddenly turned around and punched the incoming White Tiger Slaughtering Technique.

boom That fist was not to be underestimated. It simply contained the power to destroy this land, and that punch alone blew apart Chu Feng's White Tiger Slaughtering Technique.

"So powerful—"

"As expected of a genius from the Holy Land of Martialism. It seems that *this* is his real strength."

"This is too horrifying. Has he finally brought out his true abilities? It seems that Chu Feng's going to have something heading his way!"

Many people deeply gasped at the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique dissipating in the air. At the same time, many people who wished for Chu Feng's death had an eased smile on their faces.

"Heavens! Jiang Qisha is this terrifying! How will Chu Feng stop him?" As for those who wished Chu Feng to live, they couldn't help but worry about him.

Regardless how much power remained in the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique, it was still a powerful ability that could destroy Mortal Taboo martial skills.

Yet, at this moment, Jiang Qisha had broken through it with his fist. That illustrated Jiang Qisha's current strength. At least, his former self was not even comparable to him right now.

"Chu Feng, the number of people who can force me to this state are countable by my fingers even within the Cursed Soil Sect.

"I admit. I, Jiang Qisha, have underestimated you. I underestimated the strength that would come out of a bumpkin like you. However, it's time for this to end. I'll let you see what a true genius is! I'll let you see what a true technique is!" Jiang Qisha sneered as he looked at Chu Feng, then his expression changed and he released an explosive shout.

"DIE—"

He struck with his fist, palm, foot, and leg, all at the same time. Four fierce bursts of Martial power rushed out from those four places.

The strength those four bursts of power contained was very fierce. Typical martial skills simply could not compare to them; it was even several times stronger than the Mortal Taboo martial skill Jiang Qisha used before.

He was now not only casting four martial skills at the same time, he was casting four different Mortal Taboo martial skills at the same time.

boom

Then, they merged together in the air, and became a body of energy that enveloped the sky.

The body of energy traveled through the air. It was like an enormous wave as it surged forward, yet also like a horrifying black mass of clouds. It not only had four different colours, it brought with it lightning and a storm. It was akin to an apocalypse that would destroy the world.

“My gods! Jiang Qisha has actually cast such a terrifying technique! Is this still a martial skill? Is this still a technique of a human? This is simply more like the work of a god!”

As they gazed upon the body of energy covering the entire sky and surging towards Chu Feng, everyone was stunned. Regardless if they wished for Chu Feng’s death, they were dumbfounded by Jiang Qisha’s move. This was most definitely the strongest technique they had seen up until now. It was simply a natural disaster that could destroy everything!

Martial God Asura - Chapter 970 - Earthen TabooSlaughter of the Blood Moon

MGA: Chapter 970 - Earthen Taboo—Slaughter of the Blood Moon

Four different Mortal Taboo martial skills merged together. The power was absolutely not as simple as the sum of four typical martial skills.

It was a combination of martial skills, and they weren’t even normal martial skills, but Mortal Taboo martial skills. Such a technique held a very great difficulty, and its power was naturally very strong well.

The body of energy made by the combination of four Mortal Taboo martial skill was incomparably fierce. Although its target was Chu Feng alone, its pressure had enveloped a circumference of a thousand miles.

No matter Zi Ling and the others who hid behind the army, or the fighting Crippling Night Demon Sect and Immortal Execution Archipelago, or the hundred million observers, they were bound by that powerful pressure and lost any ability to move.

They felt dread never experienced before in their lives originating from an attack so powerful it was incomparable to anything they had witnessed in the past. After being bound in place by the pressure, everyone lost the ability to speak. The respect and admiration they felt before had long been gone, and in replacement was trepidation of death.

The pressure itself was already so powerful. They did not know whether Chu Feng—and them—would be killed by Jiang Qisha.

“Hoh...” However, just when everyone was terrified by Jiang Qisha’s combination attack, Chu Feng made a faint smile. Though the horrifying pressure bound many people, Chu Feng was not one of them.

“It’s merely a combination technique. Do you truly think you’re the only one who knows it? You dare be so arrogant with a mere combination of Mortal Taboo martial skills? How about I show you the combination of Secret Skills!”

With a light smile, Chu Feng willed a shock wave to burst outward. Simultaneously, with a roar, four enormous beasts of various shapes but same ferociousness surged out of his body.

The four beasts were not only huge in size, they were very overbearing. The aura they emanated was even incomparably holy.

The beasts were not ordinary creatures. They were the four holy beasts: the Azure Dragon, White Tiger, Vermillion Bird, and Black Tortoise.

aoo—

The four supreme Secret Skills all had their own abilities, but right now Chu Feng was not using a normal technique. It was an entirely new technique after obtaining the power of the Vermilion Bird Revival Technique—the Four Symbols Slaughtering Formation.

aoo—

They possessed extremely powerful might, and they were very quick as well. After they appeared, the observers couldn't even begin to process what was happening when the four holy beasts had already merged together to form a formation.

However, the Four Symbols Formation was completely different from the one that bound Qiu Canfeng before. That was a binding formation, while this was a slaughtering formation. Moreover, the power this had was incomparable to the one before. It could simply suppress anything; this was the Four Symbols Slaughtering Formation.

After they merged together, creating the aforementioned Four Symbols Slaughtering Formation, the pressure emanated by Jiang Qisha's attack instantly vanished. The pressure that bound everyone vanished as well.

"Heavens, what is that?"

"It's Chu Feng's technique! I saw it, it's something Chu Feng cast! He's actually combined the legendary Secret Skills, and it's even *four* Secret Skills!"

"What? Even Secret Skills can be combined? I've never heard of this before!"

Although the millions and millions of people had freedom restored to them, no one was willing to shift their gazes away because they were all drawn towards Chu Feng's Four Symbols Formation. Their eyes were filled disbelief and shock, because they could feel the power within this Four Symbols Slaughtering Formation was even more powerful than Jiang Qisha's combination of four Mortal Taboo martial skills.

boom rumble rumble rumble—

Just at that moment, the two attacks had woven together. Instantly, a boundless pressure and shock waves surged outward, in layer after layer.

They were really too fierce, and simply no one could withstand that. No matter the Immortal Execution Archipelago, the Crippling Night Demon Sect, or the hundred million observers, no one dared to stay on the spot. They all fled into the distance, afraid they would be engulfed by the pressure and lose their lives within it.

“AHH—”

“AHH—”

However, even though the pressure had no intent to kill, many people were unable to make it out in time. They were swallowed by the pressure, and amidst bursts of painful cries, they were crushed and became blood.

aoo—

But when the pressure wreaked havoc, within it came a furious roar. The Four Symbols Formation also appeared.

The four holy beasts were in the air and running around in a circle on a special path. They were putting power into the Four Symbols Formation, and forcing it towards Jiang Qisha. The might was incomparable, and Jiang Qisha had no escape.

“Senior, don’t keep anything hidden. Use *that* to destroy him!”

Zhao Yuetian’s and Wu Kunlun’s faces changed greatly. They couldn’t help but shout at Jiang Qisha. Even though they felt it to be inconceivable, they couldn’t help admitting that the Four Symbols Slaughtering Formation Chu Feng cast was too horrifying. If Jiang Qisha still held anything behind, he would very possibly die because of that.

“You’ve actually forced me to this state. But that’s fine, today, I’ll widen your horizons.

“You trash from the Eastern Sea Region, open your filthy eyes and watch! This is an Earthen Taboo martial skill, the Slaughter of the Blood Moon!”

After speaking, Jiang Qisha overlaid his hands, and allowed the Four Symbols Formation to press its way forth. He closed his eyes uncaringly as space itself before him shattered while his clothes fluttered noisily.

boom

Suddenly, a mystical wave swept out from Jiang Qisha’s body. When it blew past the Four Symbols Formation, it instantly froze.

Moreover, the mystical wave was extremely fast. It very quickly rushed past everything and enveloped an area within the circumference of a thousand miles.

hmm More importantly, after encompassing everything with its instantaneous speed, the world started changing.

The surging sea underneath became so calm it was like a mirror, lacking even the slightest trace of a wave. The initially clear and chaotic sky turned into night, countless glittering stars appearing.

A rush of peace washed into the world, creating a very rarely seen scenery.

“How magical... Is this the legendary Earthen Taboo martial skill?” Many people sighed in admiration at everything that had changed. How did that even look like a martial skill? Simply the world itself transformed.

“An illusion of the Earthen Taboo rank? No, it doesn’t look that simple.”

But just when everyone was attracted by the serenity before their eyes, Chu Feng frowned. He could see that it was merely an illusion, but he knew amidst this illusion was definitely an extreme danger. After all, this was an Earthen Taboo martial skill that came from the Holy Land of Martialism.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 971 - Earthen TabooFirmament Slash

MGA: Chapter 971 - Earthen Taboo—Firmament Slash

rumble rumble rumble...

Suddenly, in a certain place within the serene world, a peculiar rumble sounded. Simultaneously, the space within a circumference of a thousand miles started violently trembling. The tranquil waters surged again, in an even greater degree than before.

Before such changes, an enormous round moon gradually rose from the distant sea surface, appearing in front of the crowd’s eyes.

The moon was truly very large, and it was the colour of blood. Its redness was very strange, looking as if it were truly made from blood. Most importantly, after its emergence, an unprecedented pressure enveloped the world.

“This aura—” Many people couldn’t breathe. Some even suffocated, and other than Martial Kings, everyone else’s face turned purple. Even though the Martial Kings’ conditions weren’t as severe, their complexions were quite a bit distorted from the difficulty of withstanding the horrifying pressure.

“As I thought, there’s a killing technique within this illusion—it kills by pressure. So this is the critical part of this martial skill, right?”

“This Slaughter of the Blood Moon is truly not simple. With such powerful strength... As long as Jiang Qisha wants to, it takes no more than a thought to kill everyone here an instant.

“In terms of area of effect, my Firmament Slash is indeed far inferior to this Slaughter of the Blood Moon. But sadly, if I want to use it to break this moon, it will not be difficult.”

Chu Feng wore a smile on his face. He had already detailedly analyzed Jiang Qisha’s Earthen Taboo martial skill. Moreover, it felt it was time to let the world know of his Firmament Slash.

So, when the Slaughter of the Blood Moon left everyone completely struck with terror, amidst their absolute fear of death, Chu Feng slowly closed his eyes. Simultaneously, an extremely strong power started invisibly coalescing within his body.

“Hoh, you’ve given up?”

A sneer arose onto Jiang Qisha’s face when he saw Chu Feng seemingly accepting his fate. In Jiang Qisha’s eyes, even if Chu Feng resisted, it was useless. Since he had cast the Slaughter of the Blood Moon, Chu Feng was dead. In his perspective, Chu Feng was preparing to give up since he closed his eyes.

“Wait, this is?” But just at that moment, Jiang Qisha’s pupils shrank abruptly. He furrowed his brows tightly, because he discovered Chu Feng seemed a bit off.

At that moment, the space around Chu Feng started to tremble lightly. Yet, it was completely different from the tremors that arose from the casting of the Slaughter of the Blood Moon.

The tremors shook more and more violently from its initial weak state. Cracks had already appeared in the fabrics of space, and an extremely powerful aura was even going to shatter space itself.

Before such changes, the boundless Martial power in the world started converging onto Chu Feng like a hurricane. Facing such immensity, even Jiang Qisha's expression changed greatly. From the flow of Martial power, he could feel that it was extremely pure.

boom

Just at that moment, Chu Feng suddenly opened his eyes. Simultaneously, an extremely fierce aura emerged within his eyes.

“Hell!”

Jiang Qisha instantly panicked. He quickly willed the Blood Moon to rise quicker. At the same time, the horrifying pressure started gathering in one area and slashing towards Chu Feng. Jiang Qisha was preparing to send an attack at Chu Feng. He was preparing to use the Slaughter of the Blood Moon to crush Chu Feng to death.

But it was already too late. Before his attack had finished gathering together, bursts of blood-red aura shot out from Chu Feng's body.

They were very strange—shape akin to sharp blades, yet akin to swimming snakes. Not only were they concentrated, there were countless. They even made frightening howls and very terrifying noises, as if they were ghosts from hell.

More importantly, after those blood-red auras appeared, the sky instantly changed colour. Those auras not only contained horrifying power, their speed was terrifying. In just a blink, they completely enveloped every corner of the sky.

And at that moment, Chu Feng's lips were moving. With clear emphasis on every single word, he said: “Earthen—Taboo—Firmament—Slash!

“First slash!”

BOOM

Such words were like the order of a lord. A string of the strange and horrifying auras charged towards the direction of Chu Feng's gaze with their destructive power.

Finally, after a cracking sound, a blood-red slash landed onto the moon in a cross shape.

boom Cracks appeared on the moon that contained boundless power.

"Second slash!"

Quickly after, Chu Feng yelled out lightly again. Another blood-red slash landed on the moon. Most importantly, the power contained within this slash was double the strength of the previous one.

The blood-red moon instantly collapsed. Amidst an explosion, it shattered.

The sky, following the moon's shatter, was akin to a broken mirror. It too started crumbling.

After many pieces of the sky fell, it returned to its initial state. The Earthen Taboo martial skill Jiang Qisha cast had been destroyed by Chu Feng.

"This... How is this possible? He actually destroyed my Earthen Taboo martial skill?!"

Jiang Qisha's face was ashen as he beheld that sight. His eyes were roundly widened, because he didn't dare to believe it. He didn't dare to believe in such a desolate place as the Eastern Sea Region, there was someone who also grasped an Earthen Taboo martial skill, and with such a skill destroyed the strongest trump card he took pride in.

If it was said Jiang Qisha right now was in terror, perhaps a bit disbelieving of his eyes, then he would definitely be stupefied after the next scene.

In reality, what made him fearful was not being suppressed by the Earthen Taboo martial skill. It was that the pressure became more terrifying even after those two strikes.

"Third slash."

bang bang bang bang bang

Chu Feng let out another explosive yell. Instantly, explosions rang out endlessly and countless blood-red slashes started appearing in the air.

All the peak experts from the Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Three Great Monstrous Clans were all killed with the third slash alone. Murong Niekong and the chiefs of the Three Great Monstrous Clans were all dead.

These powerful people within the Eastern Sea Region, before Chu Feng's Firmament Slash, lacked any strength to counterattack. Even in the moment before death, they couldn't even make any sound before they were completely destroyed.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 972 - You Will Die

MGA: Chapter 972 - You Will Die

The might of the three slashes broke through the Taboo martial skill. They killed millions of people, and deterred the world.

But Chu Feng clearly wasn't prepared to stop just there. The Firmament Slash was the strongest card he held in his hand. Either he didn't use it, or used it fully to guarantee victory.

"Fourth Slash."

Finally, Chu Feng yelled lightly again. The fourth appeared in the air; however, only two slashes appeared, landing on Zhao Yuetian and Kuang Bainian.

Without any surprise, when the blood-red slashes landed on their bodies, they were no different from the others before—they were slashed open. Their death was even more direct. Even though they had died, many people couldn't even begin to process the swiftness of their execution.

"DAMMIT—"

Finally, Jiang Qisha came to his senses. He finally witnessed Chu Feng's terrifying strength. Even though he, Jiang Qisha, had exceptional aptitude and was considered a peak genius in the Holy Land of Martialism, he was indeed no match for Chu Feng right now.

Knowing this was a horrible situation for him, he said nothing else as he turned around and cast an extremely profound bodily martial skill. He wanted to flee.

However, beyond his expectations, his legs were abnormally heavy. Even though he could walk in the air, the speed was incomparably slow. He simply could not escape.

“Chu Feng, you insolent and ignorant bastard! You dare kill my juniors? Do you know who we are? Do you know who my master is? If you dare to kill me, not to mention yourself, even the entire Eastern Sea Region will die because of you!” When all escape routes were sealed off, Jiang Qisha turned around. He mentioned his master to threaten Chu Feng with a roar.

“Hoh...” But Chu Feng merely gave a light smile at Jiang Qisha’s threats, then said, “Jiang Qisha, you shouldn’t have done it. You shouldn’t have interfered with the enmity between me and the Immortal Execution Archipelago, nor should you have attacked the Misty Peak. What you shouldn’t even thought of doing was displaying intention to marry Zi Ling.

“You can humiliate me however you wish, but I cannot tolerate humiliation towards the dearest ones to me. Today, I don’t care where you come from. I don’t care where your master comes from. I don’t care what cultivation your master has. I will kill you.”

Chu Feng’s expression suddenly turned icy. Simultaneously, blood-red bodies of light appeared. Amidst frightening howls, they flew towards Jiang Qisha.

The power contained within them was several times stronger than the four slashes before. Because this was the Firmament Slash’s fifth slash.

“Chu Feng, don’t kill me!”

Feeling the horrifying bodies of light flying from every single direction, Jiang Qisha was completely terrified. In this instant separating life and death, he suddenly yelled. There was no more arrogance and pride within his voice, and instead a trace of pleading.

Chu Feng willed the blood-red lights to stop a hundred meters away from Jiang Qisha, then asked, “What else do you want to say?”

“Chu Feng, don’t kill me. As long as you spare my life, I can give you anything you want. I can also feign ignorance about my juniors’ death. I can even bring you into the Holy Land of Martialism and give a recommendation to join the Cursed Soil Sect.

“With your cultivation aptitude, you will definitely receive my master’s approval. He will also bring you in as a direct disciple, and at that time, you can be in an equal position with me. You can get whatever you want. You will have no problem soaring in strength,” Jiang Qisha said with a face filled with sincerity and subserviently.

“Jiang Qisha is actually begging Chu Feng...” His words were caught in everyone’s ears. When they saw the genius from the Holy Land of Martialism actually asking Chu Feng for forgiveness, the crowd’s emotions were very complicated.

At first, because of Jiang Qisha’s appearance, they felt they had witnessed a true genius. They felt, in comparison to Jiang Qisha, Chu Feng was no more than trash.

But now, they discovered they were wrong—absolutely wrong. They had all underestimated Chu Feng’s ability. So, as it seemed, Chu Feng was not only a peak genius in the Eastern Sea Region, even against a genius in the Holy Land of Martialism, Chu Feng remained a horrifying existence.

Discussions arose within the crowd. Everyone felt they overrated Jiang Qisha. Though strong, the genius from the Holy Land of Martialism was only so-so.

But Jiang Qisha didn’t care anymore how others looked at him. He only wanted to do one thing now—survive.

So, he once again said with sincerity, “Chu Feng, before I just wanted to get the Misty Peak. I didn’t want to introduce animosity between us, and actually, what happened today is only a misunderstanding.

“Although I had said those words to mock you and Zi Ling, that was only a bait. I just wanted Tantai Xue to come out, and I had never planned to harm Zi Ling and the others. In fact, if it weren’t for me, they might not have even survived up until now.

“I, Jiang Qisha, am a person who treasures people with talent. As long as you forgive me today, I can pretend nothing ever happened. To be honest, with

your aptitude, if you enter the Cursed Soil Sect, it's very possible that you will even lead the sect in the future!

"But without me, even if you can enter the Holy Land of Martialism, it will be very difficult to enter the Cursed Soil Sect. Even if you could, to acquire the acknowledgement of the patriarch will be similarly difficult.

"As they say, 'If you take a step back, you behold a greater world.' I, Jiang Qisha, can disregard my juniors' death. Why must you continue pressing forward?"

"Hahahaha..." However, something no one expected was after Jiang Qisha spoke those words, Chu Feng suddenly laughed. His laughter shook the world and became the only sound one could hear.

Many people tightly frowned. They felt very uneasy. After all that happened, Chu Feng had proven, with no doubt, that he was the ruler of this place. It was an easy action for him to kill any person. Even Jiang Qisha feared him, so who wouldn't?

But on the topic of fear, naturally Jiang Qisha feared him the most. Because he was arrogant, because he was conceited, he felt his life was the most precious. Similarly, he was a person who feared death the most.

"Jiang Qisha, do you think I'm a fool, or are you a fool? You're saying such unrealistic things to me?" Finally, Chu Feng stopped laughing, but a mocking sneer remained on his face.

poof Jiang Qisha knelt down after hearing those words. He raised his arms and loudly said with a face full of solemnness, "I, Jiang Qisha, swear to the heavens every single word I said today is true! If there's even half a word of lie, let lightning strike me and grant me a horrid death!"

"Hahaha..." But Chu Feng once again roared with laughter. He said, "Jiang Qisha, first of all, no matter what you do, I won't believe you. There's no need to so painstakingly beg.

"Furthermore, even if everything you've said is true, so what? You've already crossed my bottom line. Let alone only a disciple from the Holy Land of Martialism, even if you were the disciple of god, my actions remain the same!

"Today, you will die! Even god cannot save you!"

After speaking, Chu Feng's gaze turned cold. At the same time, the halted blood-red lights in the air flew towards Jiang Qisha extremely quickly.

BANG—

When the blood-red lights gathered together, a horrifying blood-red slash landed on Jiang Qisha's body with the shape of a cross.

His body split in an instant. No matter limbs or soul, it all vanished. It was true absolute destruction.

The peak genius from the Holy Land of Martialism had been killed by Chu Feng!

Martial God Asura - Chapter 973 - Long Live Sect Head

MGA: Chapter 973 - Long Live Sect Head

Having finally killed Jiang Qisha, the pressure of the Firmament Slash disappeared and receded into Chu Feng's body, returning the world to its former serenity.

Silence permeated the sky. Everyone quietly looked at Chu Feng and remained wordless.

Chu Feng, with his strength alone, killed the peak experts from the Immortal Execution Archipelago and even killed the three geniuses from the Holy Land of Martialism. His strength shocked others, and his actions had a devastating impact on the outcome of the battle

Everyone became convinced of Chu Feng's power. Not only would they never forget his actions today, everyone else in the future—the Eastern Sea Region's successors—would discuss this for years to come because his accomplishments were destined to be recorded in the books of history. He was fated to become a figure of admiration and worship.

However, while the people from the Crippling Night Demon Sect were celebrating inside, the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Three Great Monstrous Clans were terrified. As the hundred million observers from various areas in the Eastern Sea Region sighed in admiration, Chu Feng opened his palm, and a boundless suction power surged out.

Despite its power, the suction force did not affect anyone. However, before such force, Jiang Qisha's fiery-red halberd, Zhao Yuetian's and the others' Royal Armaments, and their Cosmos Sacks, all landed into Chu Feng's hands.

More importantly, Chu Feng didn't just strip away their belongings. An invisible power was also surging into Chu Feng's body—Source Energy. Although Chu Feng killed their bodies and souls, he retained their Source Energy. Right now, he was absorbing it and feeding it into Eggy.

"Lord Chu Feng, spare us!"

"Lord Chu Feng, spare us!"

Just at that moment, an expert from the Immortal Execution Archipelago knelt onto the ground, kowtowing and asking for forgiveness. Quickly following that, many experts from the Three Great Monstrous Clans also knelt and begged for forgiveness.

Everyone else was no exception. Even people like Jiang Qisha and Murong Mingtian were killed, so how could *they* possibly stand a chance against Chu Feng? Begging was their best option.

hmm Seeing that, Chu Feng willed a boundless pressure to spread out. It enveloped the members of Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Three Great Monstrous Clans.

bang bang bang bang... After enveloping them, there were bursts of muffled explosions that started sounding within the sea of people. Every single explosion meant the death of a life as it became a pool of blood.

Chu Feng, in a mere instant, with his own strength, killed several dozen thousand people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

"Lord Chu Feng, spare us! Give us another chance!"

"Lord Chu Feng, I have the old to look over and the young to care! They are still waiting for me in my home! Without me, they won't be able to survive! Please spare me!"

"Lord Chu Feng, spare us—"

The people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Three Great Monstrous Clans were all stupefied. Those who hadn't knelt now did and started kowtowing as well while they too begged Chu Feng.

"Hoh..." However, as he faced their tragic cries, Chu Feng merely let out a light chuckle. Then, he said, "In the clash of two armies, each serves their respective master. You've done nothing wrong.

"But the winner is the king, and the loser is the villain. To be softhearted towards one's enemy is to be cruel towards oneself. If I were the one defeated today, I'm sure no one would sympathize with me. So... I do not care how great your desire is to live. I will not allow any to survive.

"If you must blame someone, you can only blame yourself for following the wrong master. If you must blame something, you can only blame your own actions for making me an enemy."

After speaking, a chilly glint emerged into Chu Feng's eyes. Then, he yelled, "Crippling Night Demon Sect, attention! The Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Three Great Monstrous Clans are to be all killed. Leave none alive!"

"KILL—"

After he spoke, the Crippling Night Demon Sect's army once again became bloodthirsty demons. They released their boundless bloodlust as they all used various techniques, rushing again into the formation of the Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Three Great Monstrous Clans. They started slaughtering.

The people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Three Great Monstrous Clans wanted to fight for their lives. Even if they were to die, they were going to bring a few along with them. But it was useless, as they had no chance with Chu Feng there.

Chu Feng's pressure froze them in their kneeling state. They couldn't even take half a step, let alone defending. Awaiting them was only a merciless annihilation.

For a brief while, endless painful cries rang out in the sky. Countless bodies started falling, and large amounts of blood sprayed down like a rain of blood. It entered the sea beneath, causing it to be dyed crimson.

Terror filled everyone who was unrelated to Chu Feng, such as the observers. They would have never thought he would be this ruthless. They didn't expect he would truly completely kill off the Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Three Great Monstrous Clans.

They were worried—worried whether Chu Feng would be consumed by blood and kill even them. After all, they had come here today to participate in the wedding of Jiang Qisha and Zi Ling. In the end, their actions were a type of humiliation towards Chu Feng.

But their worry was redundant. Although he was cruel towards his enemies, Chu Feng wasn't insane. He wouldn't kill the innocent. Even though the observers were detestable, it was not to the degree that they deserved death.

Just in such a manner, the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Three Great Monstrous Clans were completely annihilated by the Crippling Night Demon Sect's army. Not a single person was left alive.

Although they did not have too great of a strength, there was, after all, a large number of people. Thus, Chu Feng did not abandon their Source Energy. He absorbed it all and gave it to Eggy.

At that moment, the members of the Crippling Night Demon Sect stood orderly in the air. They paid their respects towards Chu Feng and at the same time, and shouted simultaneously, "LONG LIVE SECT HEAD!"

"LONG LIVE SECT HEAD!"

"LONG LIVE SECT HEAD!"

"LONG LIVE SECT HEAD!"

Those four words thunderously resounded endlessly. The people from the Crippling Night Demon Sect were truly excited because the powerful strength Chu Feng showed them was something even the former sect head couldn't do.

His strength let everyone know that their decision was right: Chu Feng not only had the qualifications to become their sect head, they even felt he would surpass all former sect heads and become the greatest existence in the history of the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

At that instant, Zi Ling, Su Rou, Su Mei, Jiang Wushang, Zhang Tianyi, Chun Wu, Qiushui Fuyan, Taikou, Qiu Canfeng, and the others...

Those dear to Chu Feng were brimming with a joyous smile on their faces. They felt happiness from the bottom of their hearts. They felt pride for Chu Feng.

Chu Feng's strong performance astounded others; those who could have befriended him yet missed the chance felt intense regret. Their emotions were very complicated.

Xia Yu and Dong Xue were the representatives of those people. Although Chu Feng wouldn't do much to them, they knew very well that making Chu Feng an enemy was their largest failure in life.

They knew Chu Feng would become very strong. So strong it'd be unimaginable. At that time, from what they knew of him, he would definitely help the ones close to him. Chun Wu and the others were within that group. However, Xia Yu and Dong Xue... they... they would never be qualified to receive Chu Feng's assistance.

They and Chun Wu were already on two different levels. On the road of cultivation, Chun Wu would leave them further and further behind. They had been put into the exact same situation as Chun Wu, but... they just chose the wrong path.

So, at that very moment, they truly hated themselves. They hated their ignorance. They hated their failed judgement. Not only did they give up a huge opportunity to befriend Chu Feng, they even made him an enemy. If they had...

But sadly, there was no medicine for regret in this world. They were fated to pay the price for their very actions. What they could do was represented by two words: eternal regret.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 974 - What Kind of Method?

MGA: Chapter 974 - What Kind of Method?

But just when everyone felt everything was settled, Chu Feng suddenly cast his fierce gaze towards the Misty Peak. He loudly said, "Just watching as your younger generation is being killed, huh? You truly have quite the tolerance."

They all felt confused at Chu Feng's words because other than the faraway Misty Peak in the direction of Chu Feng's gaze, there was no one. Not even half a shadow.

"Hoh, so you already knew I hadn't died? I really can't underestimate you."

Just when the crowd was feeling puzzled, an aged laughter rang out. Simultaneously, an old person showed himself and appeared before the crowd.

"How is this possible? It's him?"

After seeing that person, not to mention the Crippling Night Demon Sect, Zi Ling, and the others, even the observers were very taken aback. Their faces were filled with shock as they felt this to be unbelievable.

At that very instant, the person who stood in the air was none other than Murong Mingtian. The ancestor of the Immortal Execution Archipelago hadn't died.

"I admit you've made a good attempt. You're a very skillful old cunning fox, and I was almost tricked by you.

"But since you haven't fled and dare to appear in front of him, I'm sure you have some sort of new technique to fight against me, right?"

"Since you've already finished preparing, why be so secretive? Just bring it out and let me see what method you've been preparing for so long. Show me why you didn't show yourself even though all your successors were being killed," Chu Feng said with a light smile.

The expressions of Zi Ling and the others instantly turned grave. After looking at one another, they started backing away slowly with the entire Crippling Night Demon Sect's army.

They knew Murong Mingtian was very cunning: he was not only ruthless, he was very calculative. As Chu Feng said: since he dared to show up even after Chu Feng defeated Jiang Qisha, it meant the reason he was fearless was

because he had backup. It would only make sense that he had something to deal with Chu Feng.

They stood no chance against Murong Mingtian before, and to an even greater degree, they stood no chance against Murong Mingtian now. They had to quickly leave this battlefield between the two, otherwise they would distract Chu Feng.

“Haha, interesting! You know I have something I can use to deal with you, yet you still dare to call out so arrogantly to me! It seems that you also have quite some confidence. I, Murong Mingtian, have been in the Eastern Sea Region for so many years, but you’re the first one who’s been able to force me to this state.

“But Chu Feng, the Earthen Taboo martial skill you used before was so powerful, so I’m guessing that you too had paid quite a huge price, right? Don’t think I can’t tell. Right now, you appear fine, but you’ve actually exhausted quite a bit of power. Your strength is lesser than before,” Murong Mingtian said with a smile.

“Hoh... You are correct, but it is still more than enough to deal with you,” Chu Feng sneered. Even though Murong Mingtian was very correct, he remained unafraid because he had already decided. Whether he himself would live or die, Murong Mingtian would not live to see another day.

Actually, after killing Murong Mingtian, Chu Feng had tried absorbing his Source Energy, but he couldn’t even find a single trace of it. So, at that time, he confirmed that Murong Mingtian hadn’t died, and had instead used some sort of special technique to escape.

Chu Feng also knew very well that Murong Mingtian could have just fled. But, he didn’t. After killing Jiang Qisha, Murong Mingtian dared to appear again.

That meant he now had something even more powerful than Jiang Qisha. No matter what it was, without a doubt it was greater than Jiang Qisha’s total strength.

Chu Feng was no god. Even though he could make many guesses, he could not be certain what Murong Mingtian grasped within his hands that gave him the courage to stand here. Even though Chu Feng held a certain amount of confidence, he could not be definite he could defeat Murong Mingtian.

So, Chu Feng didn't escape, and instead calmly faced the situation. What he relied on was not only confidence, but also determination—determination to fight Murong Mingtian to the very bitter end.

Chu Feng knew if Murong Mingtian had a way to defeat him, even if escape were successful, that applied only to himself. Zi Ling and the others would not make it out. If he left, they would die. So, he could not escape. Today, their lives were shared.

In the same vein of reasoning: if Murong Mingtian couldn't reign victorious, then Chu Feng could thoroughly remove this old monster. Although his aptitude wasn't as good as Jiang Qisha's, he was too scheming. Moreover, he knew some secrets regarding the Misty Peak. Leaving him alive would stem countless troubles in the future. He had to be removed, and it had to be now.

"Chu Feng, oh Chu Feng, I truly feel a bit of admiration for a young man like you. How good would it have been if you weren't my enemy." Murong Mingtian actually nodded his head in appreciation towards Chu Feng's decision. However, he wore an odd smile quickly on his face and said, "To be honest, right now, you are more powerful than me. With the strength I currently possess, no matter what I do I am no match for you.

"But the reason you are stronger than me right now isn't only because your aptitude is good and your strength exceptional. The more important reason is because of Lady Piaomiao's cultivation. However, I understand the Immortal Transference Mysterious Technique very well. No matter how much better your talent is, no matter how long you can keep Lady Piaomiao's cultivation on you, there will be a day that it disappears. On that day, killing you will require me barely any strength.

"However, I did not escape. I did not choose to deal with you after you lose Lady Piaomiao's cultivation. Instead, I chose to stand before you when you're at your strongest. Do you know why?"

Chu Feng didn't respond to Murong Mingtian's question. He knew his method would be absolutely not simple. However, Chu Feng didn't only have strength to deal with Jiang Qisha. He had kept some backup. If he put forth his all, defeat might not be unavoidable.

Besides, if he could truly do nothing, he still had a monster from the Asura Spirit World within his body. The worst result was to *truly* use everything he had, regardless of the consequences. So, Chu Feng was not afraid.

“Hoh, Chu Feng, I’ll tell you honestly: I dare to stand in front of you right now, at a moment like this, is because there’s no doubt to your death if I use this. Who you will face will not be me alone. It will be an even more terrifying existence.”

Suddenly, Murong Mingtian made a smile. His gaze also started to change—his eyes turned dark-green. But the most significant change was an odd mark appearing on his forehead.

It squirmed around, as if it were alive. It was sinister and horrifying, seeming akin to a demon.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 975 - Killing One's Own

MGA: Chapter 975 - Killing One's Own

After the appearance of the strange mark, Murong Mingtian’s aura became completely different. It was simply not the aura of a man. It seemed as if there were a demon housed within his body. It was sinister, horrifying, and exuded bloodthirsty killing intent.

Although he had a very odd aura, so odd it was terrifying, his strength wasn’t actually increased. That was why the changes occurring to him were so peculiar.

But even so, Chu Feng didn’t dare to be at ease. He noticed that Murong Mingtian’s change in aura was due to his preparations in casting a special technique.

hmm

Indeed, just when Chu Feng felt something was off, Murong Mingtian made his move. He laid a Spirit Formation in front of him—it was a Teleportation Formation. It could send special objects within a short distance to his side.

“Master, Senior Taikou, Sister Fuyan, quickly bring Zi Ling and everyone in the Crippling Night Demon Sect away from here,” Chu Feng hurriedly sent a mental message. He knew this was likely the method Murong Mingtian had to deal with him.

Qiu Canfeng and the others didn't dare to hesitate after receiving Chu Feng's words. They started to retreat orderly. However, even though they were very far away, they didn't escape.

They just didn't want Chu Feng to be distracted but they would not abandon him and leave. In this battle, if Chu Feng won, then they won. If Chu Feng lost, everyone lost.

Though Chu Feng hadn't personally seen their actions, he was aware of them. However, he didn't say much because he knew Zi Ling and the others wouldn't listen to him regardless. So, he didn't bother. He turned pressure into power—it was not an option to be defeated. He had to kill Murong Mingtian.

After seeing the members of the Crippling Night Demon Sect stay quite far away, the observers also quickly left. There were even many timid people who didn't stay behind. They started flying towards the Teleportation Array, preparing to leave.

They knew very well that the upcoming battle would be horrifying. With a slight bit of carelessness, they could become the sacrifices to the fires of battle.

However, since there were timid people, there were, of course, fearless people. Although many people had started to leave, there was still quite a few who chose to stay behind. They wanted to personally witness this frightening battle.

Everyone cast their gazes towards the Teleportation Formation behind Murong Mingtian. They all knew the thing it was about to summon would not be simple at all. It would definitely be something exceptional and would most likely be related to the secrets of the Misty Peak.

rumble rumble rumble

Before the gazes of the crowd, a tremor rang out from the formation. As the formation shook, a rectangular black object appeared in front of them.

It was made out of wood. Two and a half meters wide, three meters long. There were chains tied around everywhere, and on the chains, there were binding runes engraved. It was a coffin.

But most importantly, there was a mark in the center of the coffin. That mark was squirming and releasing an extremely horrifying aura.

Even though the size of the mark was different, no matter aura or shape, it was the exact same as the one on Murong Mingtian's forehead. It was the same mark.

"This... It's him?!"

Chu Feng had used the Heaven's Eyes because he knew there was something within the coffin. But after he saw what was inside, his expression changed greatly. Surprise and discomfort emerged onto his face.

whoosh

Just at that moment, Murong Mingtian's hands overlapped each other. After casting a spell, the mark on the coffin started glittering faintly. Simultaneously, the chains surrounding it loosened before the coffin opened up completely. A person then slowly appeared before the crowd.

It was a man. He was big and large, and exuded an exceptional aura. As his long hair fluttered to and fro in the wind, his handsome face appeared occasionally. On it was evidence of his vast experience in the years. Most importantly, there was also this flame-like scar on his forehead.

That man was no stranger. He was the formerly strongest genius in the Eastern Sea Region, the person who had defeated the former head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, Huangfu Haoyue.

"Haoyue?" Many people's faces changed greatly when they saw that person, but the one with the most complex emotions was Qiushui Fuyan.

The relationship she had with Huangfu Haoyue was not simple at all. After knowing Huangfu Haoyue had gone insane, she even searched the Eastern Sea Region but was unable to find him again. No matter what, she would not have thought that Huangfu Haoyue had been captured by Murong Mingtian.

So, at that very instant, after she saw him again, she lost control of her emotions. As she yelled, she ran towards Huangfu Haoyue.

"Sister Fuyan, don't come over!" Chu Feng suddenly shouted at that moment, then he said mentally, "This is indeed Senior Huangfu Haoyue, but he is not the person you know. If I'm not mistaken, he has already been controlled by Murong Mingtian with some sort of sinister method."

Qiushui Fuyan went into a slight daze after hearing Chu Feng's words, then carefully examined Huangfu Haoyue. Only then did she discover that he did look a bit odd.

Back then, when she saw Huangfu Haoyue, he was in a very rough state. Moreover, he was muttering to himself, his actions were odd, he seemed randomly frightened by something... He looked like a madman. There had clearly been some heavy injuries dealt to his mind, leading to his loss of reason.

But now, though he lacked any expressions to his face, there was fury in his eyes as he emanated a powerful bloodthirsty aura. Right now, he was even more terrifying than his previous state because now, it seemed that he now had absolutely no awareness. As Chu Feng said, Huangfu Haoyue really did seem controlled by someone.

"Haoyue, it's me! I'm Fuyan! You don't recognize me? You don't even recognize me?" But even so, Qiushui Fuyan was unwilling to give up. She called out Huangfu Haoyue's name and mentioned things that had happened in the past.

She could already imagine what Murong Mingtian was going to use him for. He was going to fight Chu Feng until one of them died. This was something she never wanted to see because both Chu Feng and Huangfu Haoyue were very important to her. She didn't hope anything to happen to either one of them.

But sadly, Huangfu Haoyue was cold and expressionless. He gave no reactions, as if he couldn't hear Qiushui Fuyan's words.

"Is this truly Huangfu Haoyue? The former number one genius in the Eastern Sea Region? Didn't he go to the Holy Land of Martialism? Why is he in the Eastern Sea Region? Has he come back?"

"What is happening? He should have a very close relationship with Qiushui Fuyan, but now, he is not only ignoring Qiushui Fuyan, he is instead standing with Murong Mingtian. Could it be... he's been controlled?"

Those watching were no fools. After hearing Qiushui Fuyan's calls fail, they had confirmed Huangfu Haoyue's identity. But amidst the shock they felt, they deduced the reason why he was ignoring Qiushui Fuyan: Huangfu Haoyue

had been controlled by Murong Mingtian, and *he* was the strongest method Murong Mingtian possessed to deal with Chu Feng.

They were truly very shocked. They had imagined all sorts of methods Murong Mingtian would use to deal with Chu Feng, but they didn't expect it to be this. Murong Mingtian was simply making Chu Feng kill his own.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 976 - Demonic Soul Seizing Technique

MGA: Chapter 976 - Demonic Soul Seizing Technique

"Haoyue, you truly don't recognize me anymore? You don't remember those things?"

"Then... Do you recognize him? He's Chu Feng, the child you carried out of the Heavenly Road! He's become an adult now; do you still not recognize him? Did something happen in the Heavenly Road? Have you forgotten about that too?"

Qiushui Fuyan ignored the crowd's discussions and continued trying to communicate with Huangfu Haoyue. Since she couldn't make him recall anything with her own stories, she attempted to recall his members with Chu Feng's stories. But sadly, it was still useless.

"Haha, Qiushui Fuyan, there's no use. If it were that easy to summon Huangfu Haoyue's memories, do you think I would bring him out so easily? If he remembers, doesn't that mean I'm digging my own grave? You underestimate me too much." Murong Mingtian suddenly laughed oddly, then he mockingly said, "I'll be honest. The method I'm using to control Huangfu Haoyue is viewed as a forbidden technique on the Misty Peak—the Demonic Soul Seizing Technique. This technique is something even Lady Piaomiao doesn't know of. I accidentally found it in Master's residence.

"As for its usage, it's very special as well. The technique is not something cast with just a simple Spirit Formation. It is a formation that can only be created with the blood and flesh of live people as catalyst and the bones of infants as medicine. The more people alive refined within this formation of flesh, the stronger the binding power created.

“To bind Huangfu Haoyue, I have killed over a million cultivators and several dozen thousand infants! Huangfu Haoyue is my puppet. If I tell him to go west, he will not dare to go east. If I tell him to stand, he will not move.

“If I want him to kill someone, he will kill that person. Even... if it’s his former lover, he will not be merciful.”

“Nonsense! Haoyue has a firm will. How could he possibly be controlled by the likes of you?!” Qiushui Fuyan cursed.

“Haha, it seems that you still don’t believe me! But that’s fine. If you don’t, I can test it out.” Murong Mingtian’s smile turned stranger and stranger. He pointed towards Qiushui Fuyan and yelled, “Tear this bitch’s corpse into a million pieces!”

hmm Immediately after Murong Mingtian’s command, Huangfu Haoyue’s body trembled. His eyes emitted a dark-green light the exact same as Murong Mingtian’s.

More importantly, after the green light appeared, the mark on Huangfu Haoyue’s forehead changed instantly. It became a lump of flame, whereupon a boundless pressure engulfed Qiushui Fuyan.

“Heavens, this aura...”

Everyone’s faces changed when they felt that. They trembled despite the lack of coldness, and they felt chills go down their spines. Because, right now, the aura Huangfu Haoyue emanated was rank eight Martial King.

Although Huangfu Haoyue had been powerful, he was not a rank eight Martial King before. Yet, he was right now. Such powerful strength made everyone fearful. Rank eight Martial King... that was a realm near Martial Emperor, a level they had never seen before in their lives.

And Huangfu Haoyue was even so young. If he continued cultivating, becoming a Martial Emperor was not something impossible. Imagining that someone in the Eastern Sea Region could become a Martial Emperor... that truly brought forth shock.

“Haoyue, you...”

But in comparison to the fear and shock the observer felt, Qiushui Fuyan was frozen. As she felt the incoming pressure that even shattered space itself, her eyes reddened.

Even though she knew Huangfu Haoyue had been controlled and wasn't intentionally attacking her, she still felt heartbroken. An indescribable sorrow washed over her heart.

Amidst such sadness, she had even forgotten about escape. Though, in reality, she couldn't even escape due to the great difference in cultivation.

boom

As the surging pressure was about to collide, a black slash suddenly appeared. It was incomparably fierce and even the pressure could not withstand it—it was slashed open, and the attack was stopped.

It was Chu Feng who made his move. With the Demon Sealing Sword in his hand, he stopped the horrifying pressure.

“Sister Fuyan, stay farther away! Believe me. No matter the strength of the formation, there will always be imperfections. I can rid Senior Huangfu Haoyue of Murong Mingtian's control,” Chu Feng said mentally after cutting open the pressure.

Qiushui Fuyan calmed down. Although she still held doubts in her heart, she had to believe in Chu Feng. Right now, he was the only person who could fight off Huangfu Haoyue, and also the only person who was worthy of trust.

boom rumble rumble

But, beyond any expectations, after failing the first strike, Huangfu Haoyue once again attacked Qiushui Fuyan. Moreover, this time, it was not just a simple attack of pressure—it was a punch.

That single punch gathered the King-level Martial power within the circumference of several miles. Its power was terrifying, and it was simply not something an ordinary martial skill could stop. Even Chu Feng's Demon Sealing Sword could not.

“White Tiger Slaughtering Technique.” Chu Feng opened his Heaven’s Eyes to analyze and decide on a defensive technique. He gave no hesitation as he immediately used the Secret Skill to block that single punch.

The White Tiger Slaughtering Technique’s power was limitless, but it was dependent on the opponent. Huangfu Haoyue only sent a normal punch—it wasn’t even a martial skill. However, he was not a typical rank eight Martial King. Even putting aside cultivation, his aptitude and fighting strength was superior to Murong Mingtian and Lady Piaomiao.

Thus, even though the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique successfully stopped the power of the punch, it had still dissipated. Huangfu Haoyue, with a mere punch, destroyed Chu Feng’s Secret Skill.

“AHH—”

Seeing his own attack blocked once again, Huangfu Haoyue violently roared. As it rang out, layers of ferocious flames started appearing around him and they pressed towards Qiushui Fuyan.

“Chu Feng, run! Those are the Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven!

“Huangfu Haoyue is the only person who’s been able to master the Burning Heaven Mysterious Technique within the Burning Heaven Church! You won’t be able to block these flames!”

Qiushui Fuyan’s face instantly turned as pale as paper. She started to yell loudly, and she, who didn’t want Chu Feng to be affected by that attack, ran towards him.

“Sister Fuyan, don’t come over! Believe me. No matter how much more powerful these flames become, I can withstand them. Leave! Go towards Senior Taikou and the others.”

But what Qiushui Fuyan didn’t expect was as the Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven fiercely pounced over, Chu Feng turned his head around with a light smile. On his face, there was no fear. Instead, there was a hint of confidence.

Qiushui Fuyan couldn’t help but be taken aback when she saw Chu Feng. Even though she felt it was inconceivable, she suddenly felt that he *could* truly block these terrifying flames.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 977 - A True Monster

MGA: Chapter 977 - A True Monster

BOOM—

The speed of the Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven was extremely quick. In the instant Qiushui Fuyan entered a daze, it had already arrived. It was akin to a fiery-red enormous wave of flames, yet also like a ferocious army formed by Monstrous Beasts. With a destructive might, it arrived before Chu Feng.

In front of the Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven, Chu Feng was akin to an ant in a flood. He simply could not resist as he was instantly flooded by the flames.

Moreover, after engulfing Chu Feng, the horrifying fire did not stop. Its heat soared into the sky and as it surged, it continued towards Qiushui Fuyan and the others. This was because the flames' goal was originally Qiushui Fuyan. She was the person Huangfu Haoyue aimed to kill.

"Hahaha, ignorant brat, who do you think Huangfu Haoyue is? With this borrowed cultivation, you think you want to defeat him, a rank eight Martial King? You're simply committing suicide!"

Seeing the Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven that enveloped the entire sky as it surged in the air, seeming as if they could burn through everything, Murong Mingtian roared with laughter. He knew how terrifying the Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven were. He knew even more how terrifying *Huangfu Haoyue's* Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven were.

The Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven could burn through all creatures in this world. Those words were not just meaningless talk. Huangfu Haoyue's Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven could truly do that because he had already mastered the Burning Heaven Church's most precious treasure, the Burning Heaven Mysterious Technique. The mark on his forehead was the proof of that.

So, after Chu Feng was submerged within the inferno, Murong Mingtian felt Chu Feng was absolutely dead. How could a rank four Martial King possibly defend against the Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven?

But in contrast to Murong Mingtian's secret joy, Qiushui Fuyan and Zi Ling and the others instantly fell into an icy bottomless hole. An indescribable sorrow started flowing within their hearts. They couldn't even make out any crying sounds but their eyes were already red.

They felt Chu Feng hadn't been able to block the ferocious Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven. Although its power was limited, they could feel it was actually much more terrifying than the Earthen Taboo martial skill Jiang Qisha cast before.

boom rumble rumble rumble—

However, just when everyone felt Chu Feng had possibly lost his life, a deafening explosion rang out amidst the Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven. The blazing flames themselves suddenly stopped as well as they stagnated in the air.

boom The strangest thing was after another explosion, the Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven started swirling on the spot. Moreover, they seemed to be shrinking, as if there were a black hole in the center of the sky absorbing the fierce flames.

Finally, the flames disappeared completely. At that moment, a person also appeared within the crowd's line of sight. That person was not big or large, but was very imposing. He was none other than Chu Feng.

"Chu Feng! It's Chu Feng! He hasn't died yet and not only that, he even withstood the Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven!"

"Heavens, how powerful is this Chu Feng? As a rank four Martial King, facing Jiang Qisha and Murong Mingtian is one thing but he's even able to face Huangfu Haoyue, a rank eight Martial King? Does logic no longer apply to this person?!" The crowd was shocked when they saw that and felt great disbelief.

"No, wait, look! Look at the lightning covering Chu Feng's body! It's not simple at all, and he isn't a rank four Martial King right now. His cultivation has risen! Right now, he's a rank five Martial King!" But some sharp people discovered the changes that occurred to Chu Feng.

At that moment, there was a blinding lightning armour covering Chu Feng's body. As it surged, his aura had changed. He was now a rank five Martial

King. And this... this was the origin of Chu Feng's confidence because rank four Martial King was not his limit.

"Impossible! How is this possible?"

But when Murong Mingtian saw the changes to Chu Feng, his complexion turned quite interesting.

Actually, he already knew Chu Feng had a technique to raise his cultivation. However, the reason he remained so fearless and confident was precisely because of the Immortal Transference Mysterious Technique.

He knew quite a bit about the technique, so he knew, after the using the technique to obtain another person's cultivation, no matter Forbidden Medicine or other methods of cultivation raising, both were useless. It was impossible to raise one's cultivation after using the Immortal Transference Mysterious Technique. It was impossible.

Yet, right now, Chu Feng was using that lightning armour to do exactly that. How could Murong Mingtian not be shocked? When Chu Feng was a rank four Martial King, he was able to defeat a rank seven Martial King. So, when Chu Feng was now a rank five Martial King, who knew whether he'd be able to defeat Huangfu Haoyue, a rank eight Martial King?

"Surprised? Indeed, I used the Immortal Transference Mysterious Technique to borrow Senior Piaomiao's power. That's why I'm at this rank. In such a situation, I cannot raise my cultivation by Forbidden Medicines or special martial skills.

"But, I don't mind telling you that this lightning armour isn't a Forbidden Medicine, nor a martial skill. It is my own ability. It will not give me any backlash, nor any restrictions. Even the Immortal Transference Mysterious Technique cannot restrict it," Chu Feng said with a mocking smile. He knew what Murong Mingtian was thinking, but he also knew his own ability.

"What? His own power?" Everyone was shocked again. An ability that could raise one's cultivation by one rank, regardless of the realm. That was really quite powerful.

At that instant, everyone looked at Chu Feng with fiery gazes. They finally knew why Chu Feng was so monstrous. This person did not seem like a

normal person. At least, judging by his lightning armour ability, Chu Feng grasped something that others did not have.

“Hmph. You can raise your cultivation. So what? You have powerful fighting strength, but does Huangfu Haoyue not? You are the genius in the Eastern Sea Region right now, but when Huangfu Haoyue was famous you were still in your mother’s womb!”

Although he felt it was quite inconceivable, Murong Mingtian was not too afraid. He pointed at Chu Feng, and loudly said, “Kill this brat! It doesn’t matter what you use, but I want to see nothing remaining!”

BOOM—

After Murong Mingtian spoke, Huangfu Haoyue once again attacked. Again, it was the Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven, but this time, no matter area or fierceness, it was several times more horrifying than before.

Even though the observers were quite far away, they still felt the heat wave slam over from afar. It was very difficult to withstand, and they couldn’t help but retreat. The flames were really too terrifying, and before such a blazing temperature, even if the flames were far away, they were still enough to burn them into ashes. Huangfu Haoyue was serious now.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 978 - The Pope of the Burning Heaven Church

MGA: Chapter 978 - The Pope of the Burning Heaven Church

“Actually... I’ve always wanted to spar with Senior Huangfu Haoyue. After all, he was someone who defeated the former head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

“Although I don’t wish for the current situation, it is a rare opportunity for me to experience Senior Huangfu Haoyue’s techniques.”

However, even though anyone could tell that the Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven were several times fiercer than before, Chu Feng remained, unexpectedly, fearless. Instead, there was a hint of yearning surging within his eyes.

Huangfu Haoyue was very powerful—of course Chu Feng knew that. Huangfu Haoyue was the strongest person he had seen, and he was even more sure of that after hearing Qiu Canfeng talk about what had happened in the Eastern Sea Region.

Chu Feng knew very well that the strongest person when the Crippling Night Demon Sect was at its peak era wasn't the head of the sect, whose name alone brought forth fear. It was Huangfu Haoyue because when he was thirty years old, he was already equal to the head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect. Now, he was far superior.

Right now, Chu Feng too was named as the strongest genius in the Eastern Sea Region, but Huangfu Haoyue was an undefeated legend. So, Chu Feng, with the cultivation gained from the Immortal Transference Mysterious Technique, wanted to experience just how powerful this legend was.

"Chu Feng, you must be careful. There's a total of nine levels for the Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven. What Huangfu Haoyue used just now was only the first level. Right now, it's the fifth.

"The power of every level is multiplied by ninefold. The power of the fifth level is dozens of times the first. You cannot be careless," shouted Qiushui Fuyan. She saw Chu Feng was not preparing to dodge and instead planned to face it with force, so she made sure to remind Chu Feng of its power.

"The Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven Huangfu Haoyue grasps is this powerful? It's simply several times more terrifying than the pope himself!" The elders of the Crippling Night Demon Sect such as Qiu Canfeng were shocked.

To think the former head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect was titled the strongest in the Eastern Sea Region, and in everyone's eyes the only person who could hold him back wasn't Lady Piaomiao, but the pope of the Burning Heaven Church...

Although, strictly speaking, the pope of the Burning Heaven Church was possibly inferior to the head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, the pope was still very strong.

His Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven was first-grade. Most importantly, his Royal Armament, the Fan of the Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven, was very powerful. If added to the Burning Heaven Church's Burning Heaven

Mysterious Technique, it would be unstoppable. Even no inferior to the Demon Sealing Sword.

But right now, the Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven Huangfu Haoyue cast was not with any external power, yet it had still surpassed the pope of the Burning Heaven Church. If he had the Fan of the Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven to strengthen his cast, it would be unimaginable how powerful it'd become.

whoosh However, when the crowd was stunned by the Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven, it had arrived onto Chu Feng. In such a critical moment of life and death, he made a shocking move: he put the Demon Sealing Sword behind him and punched the boundless flames.

boom

Before that punch, gales arose. The waves flew into the skies and everything turned into chaos. The most important thing, however, was that the horrifying flames were all pushed back.

boom rumble rumble

However, Huangfu Haoyue's eyes glinted, and the flames that were pushed back surged towards Chu Feng again. Its power rose by several times and its area was endlessly enlarging as it swept everywhere.

But even so, Chu Feng remained fearless. This time, he threw out nine punches continuously. Every single one would be fiercer than the previous, and before such a perfect, destructive, and disastrous power, Huangfu Haoyue flames were pushed back.

However, Huangfu Haoyue was no simple person. As Qiushui Fuyan said: the Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven truly had levels to them. If the sixth didn't work, then the seventh. If not, the eighth. Every single stage's power would be ninefold the former.

In the end, even Chu Feng felt enormous pressure. Especially when Huangfu Haoyue used the ninth level of the Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven, the power it released twisted even space itself within the circumference of several thousand miles. The sea below even boiled.

If it weren't for the many experts amongst the observers who laid Spirit Formations to protect the crowd, the heat from the flames alone could turn everyone into ashes.

So, before such horrifying flames, Chu Feng could only use the Demon Sealing Sword. It was the king of Royal Armaments, and its power was not to be underestimated. When Chu Feng became a rank five Martial King, the power of the Demon Sealing Sword rose accordingly as well.

"This is a true stunning battle. I never thought I would be able to see such a fight. I can now die without regrets."

When Chu Feng and Huangfu Haoyue traded attacks back and forth, alternating between offense and defense, the people hiding within defensive Spirit Formations felt their bloods boil with passion. They were all astonished by the two's powerful strength.

In the Eastern Sea Region, Martial Kings were already the peak. There hadn't been a Martial Emperor for at least ten thousand years. So, no one had seen the glorious battle between Martial Emperors.

But today, after they saw the battle between Chu Feng and Huangfu Haoyue, they felt shocked. They had never seen such an intense battle before.

Even though they knew this was still very far off from the battle between Martial Emperors, they already felt very honoured to be witness to it. Even risking their lives to personally behold such a sight was worth it.

whoosh However, just at that moment, Huangfu Haoyue flipped his palm. A white fan appeared.

It was very lengthy: a meter and a half long. It was entirely white, and a bit glowing. It was not made out of paper, but more like translucent jade.

whoosh Suddenly, Huangfu Haoyue flipped his wrist, and the enormous fan opened up. Afterwards, from his palm, flames appeared.

The flames looked very strange, as if they were a fire serpents as they squirmed up the white fan. At that moment, a boundless aura was also released from Huangfu Haoyue body. This was a Royal Armament, and absolutely not a normal Royal Armament.

“It’s the Fan of the Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven!”

“Does this mean Huangfu Haoyue has become the pope of the Burning Heaven Church?”

After seeing that fan, everyone inhaled a deep breath. They recognized Huangfu Haoyue’s fan. It was the Royal Armament only the pope of the Burning Heaven Church could possess.

It was very similar to the Demon Sealing Sword. Not only was its power strong, it held a special meaning—it represented the pope. In other words, the person who held this fan was the pope of the Burning Heaven Church.

So, to be more precise, the person who was fighting Chu Feng was not only Huangfu Haoyue, but also the pope of the Burning Heaven Church.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 979 - Deciding the Outcome

MGA: Chapter 979 - Deciding the Outcome

whoosh

Suddenly, Huangfu Haoyue’s eyes emitted a chilly glint as he waved the Fan of Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven.

The flames that Chu Feng suppressed once again arose and this time, the flames essentially strengthened. Their very nature changed.

At that moment, the flames were truly fierce, and even Chu Feng felt enormous pressure.

However, in spite of that, he did not back away. Instead, with a thought, he shouted, “Four Symbols Slaughtering Formation!”

wuaoo—

Instantly, four holy beasts dashed out of Chu Feng’s body. They madly ran towards the Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven and merged together. They circled around a formation, and as they ran forth, the Four Symbols Slaughter Formation arose.

boom rumble rumble rumble

Its power was limitless. After entering the Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven, they threw the raging flames into chaos. In the end, they completely vanished.

After they disappeared, however, the Four Symbols Slaughter Formation did not stop. With its incomparable divine might, they pressed their way towards Murong Mingtian. Exactly, Chu Feng's target was not Huangfu Haoyue, but Murong Mingtian.

Right now, Huangfu Haoyue was being bound by the Demonic Soul Seizing Technique. To break it would be very difficult.

However, Chu Feng's Heaven's Eyes were not there for nothing. On the surface, he was fighting Huangfu Haoyue quite intensely, but in reality, he had been searching for a method to break the binding formation.

Finally, Chu Feng reached a conclusion. It was actually very simple if he wanted to break the Demonic Soul Seizing Technique: just kill Murong Mingtian. As the proverbs said, to defeat the thieves, one must first capture their leader. As long as Murong Mingtian was dead, the Demonic Soul Seizing Technique would naturally be destroyed.

"Dammit. This brat is actually..."

"Kill him, kill him! No matter what you use, he must be dead!"

Indeed, Murong Mingtian panicked when he saw the overwhelming Four Symbols Slaughtering Formation pressing towards him. As he backed away, he started howling madly.

The killing intent in Huangfu Haoyue's eyes became even stronger. The fan in his hand trembled slightly, and after some odd cries, the fiery-red fire serpents on the fan all rushed out.

When the fire serpents were in the fan, they were indeed very small. However, after they left, they were like released demons as they instantly became thick fire serpents several thousand meters long.

There were thirty-eight of such fire serpents. The power every single one contained was unimaginably horrifying.

After they appeared, they immediately attacked the Four Symbols Slaughtering Formation. They started surrounding it and biting in madness. Then, completely beyond their expectations, the Four Symbols Slaughtering Formation was instantly torn into pieces by the thirty-eight enormous fire serpents. Chu Feng's formation was so easily destroyed.

"Dammit, this is the strongest technique in the Burning Heaven Church, the Burning Heaven Fire Serpent Formation!" Seeing the ferocious fire serpents, Qiushui Fuyan let out an exclamation. Her already nervous face now filled with uneasiness.

"It's the Burning Heaven Fire Serpent Formation? Huangfu Haoyue has summoned thirty-eight Burning Heaven Fire Serpents to create the formation?"

Qiu Canfeng's and the others' face changed greatly as well. Their already nervous eyes were covered with a layer of strong fear and uneasiness as well.

The Burning Heaven Fire Serpent Formation was a Mortal Taboo martial skill, but not just any ordinary one. It was a Mortal Taboo martial skill cast together with the Burning Heaven Mysterious Technique and the Fan of Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven.

In other words, if one wanted to cast this martial skill, the absolute necessities were the Burning Heaven Mysterious Technique and the Fan of Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven. Neither could be lacked and the requirements were extremely high. It was very difficult to cultivate.

It was exactly due to the existence of the Burning Heaven Mysterious Technique and the Fan of Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven that the Burning Heaven Fire Serpent Formation was so abnormally powerful. It was even titled as the strongest Taboo martial skill in the Eastern Sea Region.

Back then, the pope of the Burning Heaven Church had used this to shock the world and annihilate a race. He turned a preposterous Monstrous Beast race into an eternal sea of fire.

Qiu Canfeng and the others had personally witness the scene of the former pope of the Burning Heaven Church cast the Burning Heaven Fire Serpent Formation. All of them, after seeing such a technique, approved of it. They approved of this formation, and agreed it was the strongest Mortal Taboo martial skill in the Eastern Sea Region.

However, to know when the pope of the Burning Heaven Church could only summon three Burning Heaven Fire Serpent with all his power. After summoning, he lost all his strength and paid quite a price for it.

Yet now, Huangfu Haoyue had actually summoned thirty-eight Burning Heaven Fire Serpent. If they were to become a Burning Heaven Fire Serpent Formation, then its power would simply be unimaginable. It would possibly even surpass an Earthen Taboo martial skill. After all, this was not a normal Mortal Taboo martial skill.

rumble rumble rumble rumble rumble

As they say, "The greater one worries, the more likely it comes." When Qiushui Fuyan, Qiu Canfeng, and the others were all concerned about the creation of the Burning Heaven Fire Serpent Formation, the serpents did start to merge together, which they then created a boundless formation of flames.

The formation's flames rage and the runes on it shone. It was extremely large, and as it stood vertical in the air, not only did it emit a blinding fiery-red light, it emanated an aura that made the formation seem it could burn through everything. It simply appeared like the sun had fell down the sky.

At that instant, the fabrics of space no longer twisted. Instead, they started to merge together.

At that instant, the sea not only boiled, it started steaming.

At that instant, a powerful pressure engulfed the world. Other than the Misty Peak that glittered in light, not moving in the slightest, nearly everything visible to the naked eye was being twisted.

Even the people hiding within the Spirit Formations felt restless. Those with slightly weaker cultivations actually exploded, unable to withstand the power of the Burning Heaven Fire Serpent.

In a situation like that, even Qiu Canfeng and the others were forced to increased the defensive strength of the Spirit Formation as they led the crowd back. They knew very well if the Burning Heaven Fire Serpent were to explode, its power would simply be unimaginable.

When those far away felt such a pressure, one could imagine how much pressure Chu Feng felt, as he was so close.

At that moment, fire permeated the air around Chu Feng. It was in complete chaos, and everything in his surroundings changed. How did he even look like he was standing in the air? It seemed more like he was standing in an endless oven.

Droplets of sweat unceasingly appeared on Chu Feng's skin. They slid down his skin, but before they even made any sizable distance, they were evaporated. Before such high temperature, Chu Feng's face turned red.

But even so, he remained calm. With a smile worn on his face, he said calmly, "In the end, it seems that I still have to use this to finish it off."

Martial God Asura - Chapter 980 - The Curtains Fall

MGA: Chapter 980 - The Curtains Fall

"Chu Feng, are you really going to use the Firmament Slash? Do you want to cripple yourself?" Eggy, who had been remaining silent, suddenly spoke.

This queen had watched Chu Feng grow up and she had experienced everything that Chu Feng experienced. There was no one who knew him more than her.

She knew well that Chu Feng's strongest killing blow was the Firmament Slash; however, it was a double-edged sword. As it gave Chu Feng power, it exhausted his strength. It wore Chu Feng's body down. The Firmament Slash was a martial skill that did such a thing.

Before, although there were no problems on the surface when Chu Feng used the Firmament Slash to deal with Jiang Qisha, various issues had begun springing up in his body. He was now only enduring.

If he used the Firmament Slash slash once again right now, then the damage dealt to his body would be even larger, perhaps even become permanent. This was not just harm dealt to his body, it was harm dealt to his entire future in cultivation.

"Eggy, I know you're worried for me, but if I can't even live pass today, what's the point about talking tomorrow?"

"Come, give me a hand. Let us finish this battle together and kill that bastard Murong Mingtian," Chu Feng said.

“Ahh, is there truly no other way?” Eggy asked in a probing manner.

She knew of Chu Feng used the Firmament Slash again, his body would definitely be injured. Huangfu Haoyue was much stronger than Jiang Qisha. He would not be defeated by just the fifth slash; perhaps there would be a need to use all nine.

The pressure from every single slash of the nine slashes was completely different. The ninth was the most powerful, but at the same time its demand in power was the most horrifying. So, that meant Chu Feng had to pay a huge price in order to be victorious.

“There can only be gains when there are losses. Where would harvests come if not for the investment? I cannot lose this battle, and only with this will my chance in victory be the greatest. So, I can only put everything I have into this,” Chu Feng said.

“Whatever. Since you’ve decided on this, then let us bear through this together.” Suddenly, Eggy gave a sweet smile, and as she spoke, she closed her eyes.

“Eggy, you...”

At that instant, Chu Feng’s expression changed. He could feel an extremely strong power surging into his body from Eggy’s—it was power from the Asura Spirit World.

Actually, Chu Feng did want to borrow Eggy power to raise the strength of his physical body. With that, using the Firmament Slash would reduce the damage dealt to himself.

But right now, the reason he was so shocked was because Eggy not only helped Chu Feng strengthen his physical body, even his fighting strength was increased with Eggy’s channeling of power. She once again touched upon a taboo and helped Chu Feng by exhausting her own life.

Chu Feng did not approve of Eggy’s current actions, but the present battle did not only relate to his and Eggy’s life. Everyone else’s life was related as well. So, Chu Feng didn’t raise any objections. He allowed Eggy to use this sort of method to help him.

hmm Suddenly, Eggy's power surged out of Chu Feng's body. The black flames became a pair of black wings. When they extended outward, everyone could feel Chu Feng's power increasing in strength.

"Bastard, what the hell are you looking at? Why aren't you killing that brat?" roared Murong Mingtian once again when he saw that.

boom rumble rumble rumble After Murong Mingtian's command, Huangfu Haoyue unhesitantly attacked. With his channelling of power, the incomparably horrifying Burning Heaven Fire Serpent Formation pressed towards Chu Feng.

After the formation moved, everything within the borders of the entire Misty Peak started violently trembling. Not only trembling—nearly everything was being burned by the surging flames.

"Crap, run—"

Everyone felt the upcoming disaster. They had truly witnessed the terror of the Burning Heaven Fire Serpent Formation. They knew even though they were very far from the battlefield, there was no doubt to their death when the formation thoroughly exploded.

Actually, at that very instant, of the hundred million observers, one-tenth were already unable to bear the blazing aura. They were exploding and dying; the slaughter had already begun...

So, other than a few observers who chose to remain here, continuing to watch this frightening battle with no regards to their life, a large number of observers had already started to turn around and escape, aiming to protect their own lives.

However, even though the observers were fleeing, the members of the Crippling Night Demon Sect and Zi Ling and the others didn't. Not one left. They all stood in the air, and allowed the ferocious waves of air to slam onto the Spirit Formation that protected them. In spite of the danger, there wasn't a single person who backed away.

Everyone focused on Chu Feng. They had already entrusted all their hope onto him and even threw their lives onto him.

In this battle, if Chu Feng lived, they live. If Chu Feng died, they would die with him.

“Earthen—Taboo—Firmament—Slash!

“Nine Consecutive Slashes!”

Chu Feng finally made his move. After spitting out those words, a pressure that seemed it could destroy the world was released from Chu Feng’s body and it swept outward.

The horrifying aura from the Firmament Slash instantly engulfed everything and everyone. It actually froze the fierce waves of air.

whoosh whoosh whoosh whoosh whoosh whoosh

Quickly after, countless blood-red energy slashes appeared and all struck the Burning Heaven Fire Serpent Formation.

boom rumble rumble—

When the blood-red slashes blended into the formation, they heard a huge explosion. Their vision then became filled with fiery-red.

A ferocious might had covered their eyes, preventing them from seeing what was happening. However, the horrifying shock waves wreaking havoc let them know how horrifying the energy of the explosion was.

But when those shock waves were invisibly blocked, averting harm to the crowd, many people knew that it was Chu Feng who protected them. It was he who used his own power to stop the horrifying shock waves.

Before such changes, no matter the ones escaping or the ones observing, they didn’t move. They looked down. Other than the people beside them, they couldn’t see anyone else; however, the rumbles that echoed next to their ears became more and more thunderous.

Only after a long while did that start to subside. First, the rumbles faded away, then the violent shock waves stopped. In the end, the fiery-red light that blocked their vision and even Spirit power vanished.

“This...” And when their sights were clear, everyone was taken aback.

But soon after, Zi Ling, Qiu Canfeng, and the members of the Crippling Night Demon Sect all brimmed with indescribable excitement and joy.

After experiencing continuous battles, cheers finally rang out again in this world. Not only were the ones on the Crippling Night Demon Sect's side cheering, even those with no relation to Chu Feng were cheering.

The curtains of this terrifying war finally fell.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 981 - Let Me Try

MGA: Chapter 981 - Let Me Try

The shattered fabric of space were akin to the broken fragments of a mirror. However, unlike a mirror, the pieces slowly reassembled, striving to restore itself to its once complete state.

Space was something perceivable but untouchable. Only with sufficiently powerful strength could one crack or even shatter it, leading to an endless void.

But even if space were completely fragmented, it would soon return to its original state. This natural phenomenon was very mystical and unexplained.

One could say that though space was intangible, it was actually interactable. There seemed to be a limit, and so long as one's power surpassed that limit, it would shatter. But due to its restorative properties, space could not be destroyed.

Even if one could destroy mountains with a single palm, shatter clouds with a single fist, cut off rivers with a single stamp, nearly no one could truly destroy space itself.

For instance: the sea beneath them right now. In the battle before, both it and the fabric of space received the same destruction but at present, the latter already returned to normal while the former still boiled as heat and steam soared into the sky. The sea level was now several hundred meters lower compared to the beginning of the battle. Even some shallower regions revealed the mud and rocks from their previously submerged seabeds.

However, even in the regions where the sea was deeper, enormous corpses still floated above its water. These were the bodies of sea beasts. Despite

being hidden within the depths, they too were unable to avoid disaster and ended up being killed by the power of the Burning Heaven Fire Serpent Formation.

“Chu Feng!”

“Chu Feng!”

“Chu Feng!”

...

However, no matter what destruction or disaster occurred to the world around them, Chu Feng’s name reverberated in his surroundings.

Nearly everyone was shouting his name. Even the observers were cheering in endless excitement.

At that very instant, in the distant battlefield, Chu Feng still remained standing in the sky. As for Huangfu Haoyue, he was hugging his head and half-kneeling. The demonic aura emanating from his body vanished. At that moment, he was trembling slightly and appeared like a tiger whose teeth were pulled out: he was of no threat to Chu Feng. In reality, he was rather terrified of his opponent.

Huangfu Haoyue, the former strongest genius in the Eastern Sea Region, had been defeated by Chu Feng.

As for Murong Mingtian, his body remained floating in the air. His lifeless eyes were wide open and his mouth agape. His face was frozen with fear and bitterness. The combination was quite a terrifying sight to behold.

Despite his unsightly expression, he exuded no aura because of the frightening wound on his chest. The wound spread havoc within his body, destroying everything inside, including his dantian.

Not only were his organs destroyed, even his Source Energy was being extracted. Indeed, Chu Feng not only killed Murong Mingtian, this monster of several hundred years of age, he was still absorbing this old monster’s Source Energy—one of a rank seven Martial King.

Murong Mingtian was defeated. The Immortal Execution Archipelago was gone. Even the Three Great Monstrous Clans were removed and all of this was due to Chu Feng.

However, the reason for such thunderous cheers was not only because Chu Feng won this battle, nor was it only to boot-lick, these were cheers that stemmed from the bottom of their hearts. They were sincerely cheering for Chu Feng.

He not only won this battle, he even saved everyone's lives. Judging by the momentum of the battle, if it weren't for Chu Feng, then Huangfu Haoyue would have burned everyone here into ashes with the Burning Heaven Fire Serpent Formation.

"Eggy, you have to hold on! Look, I'm absorbing Murong Mingtian's Source Energy for you! He's a rank seven Martial King; as long as you refine his Source Energy, your cultivation will soar! Haven't you always been strong? You have to hold on!"

But no matter how fervent the cheers, Chu Feng tightly frowned. His complexion was quite poor, and even his usual firm and fierce gaze was filled with unstable emotions. He lost his former steadiness as he was in a panic.

Even though he won this battle, he had paid a painful price. Not only was Eggy unconscious, even he himself had received visible injuries—extremely severe injuries.

"Mm—"

Suddenly, Chu Feng's cheeks bulged and he started swaying in the air. Blood was rushing up his throat, but he forced it back down.

However, a hint of red flowed out of the corner of his mouth as his lips trembled, unable to contain all the blood. However, he didn't bother with that. As he tightly gnashed his teeth, he continued absorbing Murong Mingtian's Source Energy.

Finally, all of it entered his body. But also at that moment, his eyelids gradually shut, and his body leaned to the left as he lost the ability to fly, thus dropping down from the air.

Moreover, no matter the black wings behind him, or the lightning armour surging around him, both disappeared instantly. They returned to his body and even his aura rapidly shrank. Very quickly, he returned to being a rank eight Martial Lord from a rank five Martial King.

“No—”

At that instant, the crowd was still cheering. However, when they saw Chu Feng fall from the sky, they were all frightened. As for Qiu Canfeng and the others, they quickly rushed towards Chu Feng.

Finally, it was Qiu Canfeng who arrived first and caught Chu Feng in his arms. Only then did he discover that Chu Feng had lost consciousness. Moreover, his aura was extremely weak. The most alarming thing was that Chu Feng's aura still shrank. Though it was at a very slow rate, if it continued, Chu Feng was going to die.

“Dammit, nothing is working!” Qiu Canfeng was attempting to heal Chu Feng, but no matter what he did, it was all useless. He couldn't even tell what part of him was injured.

“Let me try.” Qiushui Fuyan took Chu Feng from Qiu Canfeng's arms. She laid a formation and put Chu Feng on top of it. Then, she started using a special healing technique.

Her method was very profound; it was one from the Misty Peak. Although she was from the Burning Heaven Church, she was still the daughter of Lady Piaomiao. Naturally, she had gotten quite a few techniques from her.

But even though such techniques were from the Misty Peak, they remained useless. Chu Feng appeared like a person fated to die as he walked into the gates of hell one step at a time. It seemed as if no one could stop him. That truly made everyone anxious.

“Chu Feng, you have to hold on!”

“Chu Feng, you can't leave us behind!”

At that moment, Zi Ling and the others all surrounded him. Seeing Chu Feng whose aura was truly as weak as it could be, and whose body was still icy despite the treatments, Zi Ling, Su Rou, Su Mei, and even Chun Wu and the

others had reddened eyes. Tears streamed down like rain as they started crying uncontrollably.

In reality, not to mention those close to and cared about Chu Feng, even those who had nothing to do with Chu Feng, the observers, felt their hearts ache. After all, they had been saved by Chu Feng. No matter if he intended it or not, he had indeed saved their lives.

Besides, Chu Feng had shown them his strength today. Regardless where his cultivation came from, at least he had great aptitude in cultivation. No one hoped death to befall a genius like him.

There would be one day when Chu Feng would enter the Holy Land of Martialism representing the Eastern Sea Region. If, one day, Chu Feng were to make a name for himself in the Holy Land of Martialism, he would become the pride of the Eastern Sea Region. They would feel proud of Chu Feng.

Unless it were a person who hated every single part of Chu Feng, or someone who had a grudge against him, why would someone hope for his death?

But sadly, when even Qiu Canfeng and the others were out of methods, who could save Chu Feng?

“What you’re doing is useless. How about you let me try?”

When everyone ran out of ideas, an aged voice, one that seemed as if the speaker was smiling, rang out above the hundred million crowd.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 982 - Unfathomable

MGA: Chapter 982 - Unfathomable

“Who? Who dares to speak such arrogant words? Do you think *you* can do something even my sect’s Protector cannot?” shouted someone furiously within the Crippling Night Demon Sect’s army.

In their eyes, the observers were merely garbage onlookers. It was a humiliation towards Qiu Canfeng and the others when someone dared to say something like that.

“Young man, you must watch your words. The world is vast. Do you truly think if your Protector is unable to do something, no one is? If that were true, then

who was the one who forced your sect head into this state?” That aged voice rang out again, but this time, with a bit of ridicule.

“Insolence!” The already enraged members of the Crippling Night Demon Sect were naturally even more irritated by the old man’s words. They seemed as if they would rush into the throng of observers and grab the speaker at any moment.

“Everyone, shut your mouth!” All of a sudden, Qiu Canfeng shouted angrily.

After his words, the people from the Crippling Night Demon Sect were like deflated balloons; no one dared to say even half a word.

“Sir, may I ask who you are? Can you show yourself to speak?”

After berating the crowd, Qiu Canfeng clasped his hands very politely towards the vast sea of people. He discovered even though he had locked onto that person’s voice, his location was still indeterminate. That meant the speaker was not simple at all.

“My name is not worth a mention, but destiny has brought me and Chu Feng together once, so I am willing to give him a hand today.”

That voice rang out again, and at that moment, an aged figure slowly walked out of the sea of people, and his appearance thus appeared before the crowd.

That old man had hair as white as snow. It was very long and it was akin to a silvery waterfall. It drooped down straight to his heels.

But the most shocking thing was that the old man’s eyes were shut—he was blind. Furthermore, he was in the eighth level of the Heaven realm.

Qiu Canfeng and the others knitted their brows as a hint of suspicion and confusion surfaced into their eyes. That old man was blind in the eyes, but not in the heart. Every single step was calm as he walked towards Chu Feng and the others in the air. That simply did not seem like something a blind could do.

Most importantly, after that old man appeared, regardless of their observations, Qiu Canfeng and the others received a single result: he was in the eighth level of the Heaven realm. There was no doubt to that. However, the seemingly less doubt they had regarding his strength, the more they felt

the old man was not simple at all because it meant he had concealed his cultivation too perfectly.

The old man did not care as he was gazed upon by such complicated eyes. He walked straight up to Chu Feng and put his hand onto Chu Feng's chest.

Actually, when the old man held out his hand, Qiu Canfeng and the others were very nervous because they could not be certain whether he was an enemy or ally. So, when he was making his move, Qiu Canfeng and the others were surrounding him, staying well on guard.

But their tense expressions very soon turned into joy. The old man had only placed his palm on Chu Feng's chest and simply nothing could be felt radiating out of it.

However, in a situation like that, Chu Feng's aura had truly turned for the better—at a very quick speed as well. He soon entered a stable condition and his complexion was much better too.

“He was injured internally—his Consciousness and Source Energy. But he will be completely healed after a few months' rest,” said the blind old man after taking his hand away.

“Thank you for saving our sect head!”

The Crippling Night Demon Sect didn't dare to dally in their act of appreciation. Even their own Protector was clasping his hands towards the old man, so how could they possibly dare to hesitate? They quickly expressed their gratitude, and those who were yelling here and there felt even more ashamed.

However, the blind old man just waved his hands at those thanks and said, “It cannot be considered saving. Chu Feng has a strong body. Even if I do nothing, he would have been fine. At most, he would stay in slumber for another year or so, but in the end, he would still awake.

“As I said, I'm only giving him a hand and shortening his time asleep. Don't worry, the day he awakes is the day his body is healed. While he's unconscious, just take good care of him.”

Qiu Canfeng and the others felt even more complicated emotions when they heard the blind old man's words. They simply did not know what the issue was

with Chu Feng, yet the old man already knew his injuries before he even came into contact with him. That was further proof of this old man's unfathomability.

“AHH—”

But just at that moment, Huangfu Haoyue was still hugging his head and painfully howling as if he was enduring the most painful torment.

“Haoyue!” Qiushui Fuyan panicked. She leapt forward and wanted to rush over.

“Fuyan, it's dangerous! Don't go!” Taikou quickly held Qiushui Fuyan back.

“Father, let me go! I cannot leave him alone!” Qiushui Fuyan wanted to escape Taikou's hold.

“Fuyan, calm down! Right now, Huangfu Haoyue is not awake. Who knows whether he'll attack you!” Taikou painstakingly begged, unwilling to let go.

“Lady Qiushui, don't blame me for speaking too much, but your father is correct. Huangfu Haoyue's mind is not in a normal state. He's still very dangerous; it will be best to stay a bit farther away,” advised Qiu Canfeng.

“Let her go. The formation controlling that person has already been deactivated by Chu Feng. He's doing this right now only because he's frightened. There's not much wrong with him.”

But just at that moment, the blind old man suddenly spoke. Moreover, after speaking to Taikou, he looked at Qiushui Fuyan and said, “Have him take this pellet and let him rest for a few days. He'll be fine by then.” After speaking, the old man spread open his palm. A pellet that looked quite insignificant appeared atop his hand.

That pellet truly did look insignificant. No light came from it, nor any fragrance. It seemed like a pellet that could simply not be any more normal. Who knew if it even did anything?

However, after seeing that blind old man's skill, Qiushui Fuyan did not hold any bit of hesitation. She held out her hand took the pellet.

However, in the instant she took it, Qiushui Fuyan's face changed. When she looked back at the blind old man, there was unavoidably a few more traces of respect.

She discovered with astonishment that the pellet was nothing special even after Spirit power detection, yet when she grasped it within her hand, there was an unspeakable feeling. If it must be described, one word was sufficient: "mystical".

Qiushui Fuyan's confidence soared and Taikou and the others didn't stop her anymore. They let her near Huangfu Haoyue. After seeing what the blind old man did to Chu Feng, more or less trust arose.

Just like that, Qiushui Fuyan carefully approached Huangfu Haoyue, and as he was howling, she took the chance to throw the pellet into his mouth.

Shockingly, it melted and was refined instantly in his mouth. Huangfu Haoyue then closed his eyes, his body went limp, he lost his ability to stay in the air, and started falling.

Qiushui Fuyan quickly flew up and held him in her arms. Only then did she discover that Huangfu Haoyue had a face of serenity, as if he entered a sweet dream after some extremely tiring matter.

"Thank you sen..." There was no need to mention how happy Qiushui Fuyan felt. She turned her head around and wanted to thank the blind old man.

But only then did she see only Qiu Canfeng and the others remained behind her. As for the blind old man, he had disappeared. There were no signs of him ever being here.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 983 - After Awakening

MGA: Chapter 983 - After Awakening

"Eggy, Eggy, Eggy..."

A chaotic world presented itself before his eyes. Blurred figures appeared unceasingly. Calls for Eggy left Chu Feng's mouth again and again.

He knew this was a dream. He had a long, long dream, and in here, he could do absolutely nothing. It wasn't even up to him when to wake up.

But he still kept on calling out Eggy. He hoped calling out for her would be useful. He hoped Eggy, who bore a serious injury because of him, could persevere and survive.

Amidst this dream, the notion of time was very hazy. Even Chu Feng himself didn't know how much time had passed. Regardless, his calls for Eggy had never stopped because in the dream, he had no need to sleep, nor could he feel lethargy. What he could feel was only worry for Eggy.

"Stop calling me! I was sleeping quite comfortably, yet I was forcibly awakened by you." Finally, Eggy's mellifluous voice rang out. There wasn't a trace of weakness in those words and instead there was a hint of naughtiness.

"Eggy, you're okay?"

Chu Feng was elated. Eggy's voice not only seemed like a person's who wasn't injured at all, it was even filled with energy. But he still held a trace of doubt. After all, this was a dream. He couldn't even be certain if the voice just now truly came from Eggy.

"I've been fine since a long time ago. On the other hand, you should stop sleeping; they're waiting for you! Quickly wake up." Eggy's voice once again rang out, but disappeared very quickly.

Suddenly there was a flash, then complete darkness. When he opened his eyes again, he was lying on a comfortable bed. This familiar environment and feeling of safety other places did not bring led him to know it was the Misty Peak. He was now on the Misty Peak.

"Haha, you've finally woke up!" Eggy voice then rang out again.

"Eggy, you're truly fine! This is great!" Chu Feng's power of judgement was very strong. In the instant he woke up, he knew he had left the dream. Moreover, he knew that his and Eggy's injuries had been healed completely. They were completely fine now.

More importantly was Eggy's cultivation. She was now a rank eight Martial Lord—the same as Chu Feng. Such a change was naturally because she refined the Source Energy of Jiang Qisha, Murong Mingtian, and the members of the Immortal Execution Archipelago and Three Great Monstrous Clans.

Eggy was very special. There was a seal on her that restricted her true cultivation. So even though she could absorb the Source Energy of humans and thus regain cultivation, there were many restrictions.

These restrictions showed themselves with greater clarity as her cultivation grew stronger. The Source Energy she required increased in size, but the harvests she'd gain from such enormous quantities were very small—just like Chu Feng.

Yet, she was different from him. Chu Feng could strengthen himself with all sorts of Natural Oddities, but Eggy could only rely on Source Energy.

So, since Eggy was a rank eight Martial Lord, Chu Feng was certain it was the result from refining all the Source Energy he absorbed and nothing else.

Although she only reached such a level after so much Source Energy, Eggy's fighting strength was still far above Chu Feng's. So, in that perspective, rank eight Martial Lord was already quite a good result.

One could even say the person who'd gotten the most out of this battle was Eggy.

"Mm, it seems that someone hiddenly helped us. Otherwise, we wouldn't have healed up so quickly." Eggy nodded, confirming the fact that she was completely recovered.

"Someone helped us?" Chu Feng was slightly taken aback. He suddenly recalled that in the dream, he had indeed felt a gentle power. However, he just didn't know what was with that power. After all, within the dream, he had no clue what was true and what was not.

"Chu Feng, you've woken up!" A familiar voice rang out. Looking towards the speaker, Chu Feng saw Qiushui Fuyan quickly walking over with a joyous face.

"Sister Fuyan!" Chu Feng also revealed joy when he saw Qiushui Fuyan. He discovered that her complexion was very spirited, which meant nothing happened to everyone. Otherwise, she wouldn't be this happy.

"Chu Feng, don't get up yet. You just woke up, so you should be resting." Qiushui Fuyan quickly went to stop Chu Feng when he attempted leave his lying position.

“Sister Fuyan, don’t worry. I’m filled with energy and there are no wounds on me.” Chu Feng lightly smiled, and still sat himself up. He knew his body very well, and right now, he had indeed completely recovered.

“It seems that the senior was truly correct. The day you awake is the day you’re healed entirely.” After carefully examining Chu Feng and discovering nothing wrong with me, the smile on Qiushui Fuyan’s face became much wider.

“Senior?” Chu Feng expression changed.

“On that day when you bore a serious injury and was unconscious, we could do nothing to help you. In the crucial moment, there was a senior who came out and saved you.

“That senior had hair as white as snow, and he was also blind. He said he had met you once, so that’s why he decided to give you a hand.

“Ah, that’s right. Someone said that senior had wandered back and forth in the Everlasting Sea of Blood for many years. Do you have any recollection of him?” Qiushui Fuyan said.

“It’s him?” Chu Feng came to a realization. He naturally remembered the blind old man in the Everlasting Sea of Blood. He was the person who narrated the legend regarding the Fate Primogenitor which still remained fresh in Chu Feng’s mind.

At that time, Chu Feng already felt that the old man was not simple at all, but he didn’t expect him to be this powerful. Not only was Chu Feng himself saved, Eggy was saved at all.

Back then, Chu Feng could feel how weak Eggy was—she was even weaker than him and in an even more dangerous spot. Yet now, Eggy was not only this lively, she even refined all the Source Energy. It was definitely due to the old man that she was able to. So, at that moment, Chu Feng was truly filled with gratitude towards that person.

“Chu Feng, you’re awake?” Just at that moment, another sweet voice rang out. A beautiful person was slowly walking towards Chu Feng.

Not only did he know that person, he was very familiar with her. This was Chu Yue of the Chu family. Right now, on her beautiful face, there was a smile of joy. She was also bringing over delicious dishes on her hands.

They were very special. Although small in amount, the dishes were filled with nutrients. Moreover, there were healing medicines included within the ingredients; clearly, they were prepared just for Chu Feng.

“Chu Yue, why are you also here?”

Chu Feng felt very happy when he saw Chu Yue. Back then, when he was facing various difficulties in the Chu Family and poorly treated, Chu Yue was the only person other than his father and elder brother who meant well for him.

But being happy was being happy—Chu Feng felt confused now. He had safely put Chu Yue and the others on one of the eastern continents. Yet why had she appeared here now?

Martial God Asura - Chapter 984 - Curing Zi Ling

MGA: Chapter 984 - Curing Zi Ling

“Chu Feng, not only have I come, many people who were in the continent of the Nine Provinces—even the Jiang Dynasty and the World Spirit Guild—have come. They’ve all been situated in the Misty Peak. We can live together like we did in the past!” Chu Yue’s eyes squinted into two crescent moons as she gave a very beautiful smile.

“Sister Fuyan, what is going on?” Chu Feng didn’t celebrate too soon; instead, in his eyes, there was a hint of anxiousness.

“Chu Feng, don’t worry, it’s like this...” Qiushui Fuyan seemed to know what Chu Feng was concerned about, so she quickly explained, “After Tantai Xue awoke, she immediately left. However, before departing, she told us we can continue living here because it was only an accident that she and Jiang Qisha and the others came to the Eastern Sea Region.

“It isn’t that easy to come to the Eastern Sea Region from that place. Actually, it can be said to be impossible. Moreover, there won’t be anyone in the Holy Land of Martialism who will want to come to a place like the Eastern Sea Region because in their eyes, this is no more than a landfill that has nothing.

“Moreover, no one knows about Jiang Qisha and Tantai Xue coming to the Eastern Sea Region, so there won’t be anyone else from the Holy Land of Martialism who’ll disturb us.

“After knowing about this, my mother decided to bring all our friends and families to the Misty Peak. Here, we can not only protect them, we can provide even better cultivation conditions. We can even borrow the Misty Peak’s power to prolong their lives.”

“I see.”

Chu Feng now understood what had happened. So, his nervous heart was finally at ease. As Qiushui Fuyan said, what he worried was the Cursed Soil Sect’s members coming to the Eastern Sea Region. At that time, they will most definitely know Jiang Qisha and the others were killed by him. And judging how the Cursed Soil Sect acted, anyone related to him would meet disaster.

However, if what Tantai Xue were true—the Cursed Soil Sect wouldn’t come to the Eastern Sea Region—then everyone was fine. Moreover, as Qiushui Fuyan said, it would most definitely be many times better to have those with quite good relations with him to live in the Misty Peak rather than in the eastern continents.

“Sister Fuyan, how are they right now?” Chu Feng asked.

“With the assistance of your Crippling Night Demon Sect, is it not an easy task to build some floating palaces? Don’t worry, everything’s been set up well. Senior Qiu Canfeng has also led the Crippling Night Demon Sect to eradicate the remnants of the Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Three Great Monstrous Clans. He’s also rebuilt the Crippling Night Demon Sect, and now, they’ve returned to their former prosperous era. They’ve become the overlord of the Eastern Sea Region once again and their positions are nearly unmovable.

“Even your position of sect head is recognized by all to be more powerful than the former sect head.

“It’s because your potential is unlimited. Right now, it’s even said that you’re the person who’s the most promising to become a Martial Emperor,” Qiushui Fuyan said with a smile. There was even a hint of pride as she spoke those words.

“So many things have happened? How long was I asleep for?” Chu Feng asked.

“You’ve slept for three months and sixteen days,” Qiushui Fuyan said.

“Three months and sixteen days?! Doesn’t that mean the Heavenly Road that leads to the Holy Land of Martialism will open soon?” Chu Feng was clearly quite amazed as he had planned to go forth to the Holy Land of Martialism this year whenever the Heavenly Road opened.

“Yeah! It will open very soon. You were asleep for so long and we even thought you were going to miss it! But it seems that you don’t need to wait another year.

“Also, I have another good news. After you learn of it, you will definitely be very happy.” Qiushui Fuyan’s smile became even more dazzling, and Chu Yue by her side was the exact same.

“What good news?” Chu Feng asked after giving the two of them a smile.

“Take a guess.” Qiushui Fuyan’s raised her brows lightly and her smile was even more beautiful.

“Eh... I got it.” Chu Feng rolled his eyes a bit in a thinking manner before giving them a faint smile, seeming as if he already knew the answer.

Qiushui Fuyan very rarely played a joke. Yet, right now, not only was she doing exactly that, she was even smiling so beautifully. Chu Feng thus immediately thought of a possibility.

“Oh? Tell me what good news it is. If you’re right, you’ll get a prize!” When she saw Chu Feng’s face of confidence, Qiushui Fuyan was instead a bit suspicious as she questioned him.

“If I’m not mistaken, Senior Huangfu Haoyue must have recovered his memories,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“Heavens, you truly did get it right!” Qiushui Fuyan’s face changed after hearing Chu Feng’s response. There was a hint of surprise on her smiling complexion.

“That means Senior Huangfu Haoyue has truly recovered his memories! Has he said anything about my ancestry?”

Chu Feng was also elated. Although he was confident with his answer, he was still quite ecstatic when Qiushui Fuyan gave him the confirmation. Huangfu Haoyue’s memories were really too important to Chu Feng. This related to where he came from.

rumble rumble rumble rumble—

But just at that moment, rumbles came from the outside. Simultaneously, the white sky instantly turned pitch-black. Quickly after, purple layers of light flashed outside.

“She’s succeeded.” Qiushui Fuyan didn’t hold a hint of worry when she saw that. Instead, she looked at Chu Feng and said, “Chu Feng, quick, let’s go out and see.”

Qiushui Fuyan first flew out and arrived at the entrance to the Misty Peak, heading outside. As for Chu Feng, he quickly followed her.

Only after coming outside did Chu Feng discover there were indeed several floating palaces built. They were not gorgeous, but they exuded a natural and essential feeling. It went quite well with the Misty Peak.

However, right now, what grabbed Chu Feng’s attention the most was a single exquisite floating tower. There were many layers of people surrounding its exterior, and of those people, many were familiar faces.

Su Ruo, Su Mei, Jiang Wushang, Zhang Tianyi... nearly everyone Chu Feng knew was below the floating tower.

At that moment, the crowd’s gazes were fixed on it. Moreover, there were expressions of surprise, admiration, and joy brimming from their faces.

At that very instant, the powerful strength emanating from the floating tower affected the world itself. The bright day turned into endless night.

The layers of purple glows also came from the floating tower. It was being unceasingly emitted and nearly filled the entire sky. Amidst that blinding and beautiful purple glow, one could faintly see something—a huge bell.

“Zi Ling cursed herself of the Heaven Gripping Pellet?”

There was also an indescribable excitement surging within Chu Feng’s eyes. This was a phenomenon. Very clearly, the person who initiated this was Zi Ling. The Divine Body that had been sealed from birth was now, finally, unsealed.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 985 - A One-on-One Chat

MGA: Chapter 985 - A One-on-One Chat

The initial bright sky was now a shade of black.

However, it was not completely black because there were purple glows lingering in the sky. They were very dazzling.

They nearly covered the entire sky and one could simply see no end to them. The most important thing, though, was the faintly visible enormous bell within the glows. It gave people a feeling of destruction. It gave rise to fear and respect to it.

However, even though the phenomenon was very frightening, there was not a single person afraid. Instead, on their faces, there was excitement. Joy. They knew very well who this power originated from.

hmm

Finally, the phenomenon started shrinking. The purple glows surged back into the floating tower, and when it all vanished, the darkness in the sky faded away as well, returning to the vast white sky bright for a myriad of miles.

Shortly after the purple glows disappeared, the doors to the floating palace gradually opened. At that instant, a beautiful person slowly walked out.

It was a young woman with a purple dress. It simply matched perfectly with her delicate curves and beautiful face. She simply looked like a fairy who came down to the mortal world; her beauty was simply suffocating.

Naturally, such a pure and divine woman was Zi Ling. Moreover, she had a breakthrough in cultivation. She was now a Martial Lord from her initial cultivation in the Heaven realm. Although it was only rank one, there was no doubt she was a Martial Lord.

“Haha, Zi Ling, it’s a success?” Su Rou, Su Mei, and the others all went up after Zi Ling appeared. They were emotional and excited as they awaited her confirmation.

“Mm.” Zi Ling gave a moving smile as she faced the crowd’s desire for the answer, then firmly nodded her head.

They were all thrilled. Their joyous emotions permeated this world, and everyone’s emotions were great.

They’ve already seen the strength of a person with a Divine Body from Tantai Xue. Now, Zi Ling too had a Divine Body and her cultivation aptitude was now unsealed. Very soon, there would be a second Tantai Xue—possibly even a greater one.

“Chu Feng?” But when the crowd were surrounding Zi Ling and cheering endlessly, her expression changed as a cheerful expression emerged into her eyes.

Because she saw Chu Feng at the entrance of the Misty Peak.

Zi Ling leapt forward and flew towards Chu Feng.

“Chu Feng?”

Drawn by Zi Ling’s movements, the crowd too discovered Chu Feng. When they saw him, their faces all lit up. They stood far away as Qiushui Fuyan and Chu Yue did. They, who were already overjoyed, felt even more excitement. They all rushed up and surrounded Chu Feng.

“Chu Feng, you’ve finally woken up! How do you feel? Any discomfort anywhere?” Zi Ling looked up and down, carefully examining Chu Feng, afraid there was anything bad they overlooked.

“Don’t worry, I’ve completely healed.” Chu Feng lightly smiled. He gently stroked Zi Ling’s soft hair and said, “Zi Ling, congratulations. You’ve finally rid yourself of the Heaven Gripping Pellet’s fetters.”

“Rather than that, I’m more happy that you’ve woke up.” Zi Ling’s eyes glittered, then she suddenly leapt forward and entered Chu Feng’s embrace.

He did not refuse it and even though there were many observers, Chu Feng still spread open his arms and hugged his little beauty by her waist.

No one hid their emotions when they saw that. Instead, the joy on their faces became even stronger because to them, this was a very rare reunion.

As Zi Ling said, in comparison to her being cured, Chu Feng's awakening was something much more worthy of celebration. That not only applied to Zi Ling but to everyone else.

When two joyous events occurred, naturally there had to be a banquet. On that day, everyone put down their work and raised their cups and drank in complete elation.

In the banquet, Chu Feng and Zi Ling undoubtedly became the main characters people focused on. However, Chu Feng was also observing the crowd. Amongst the familiar faces, he discovered a person who shouldn't be here—the First Immortal.

The former head of the Nine Immortals of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, in order to help Chu Feng, avoided the disaster of death and, as an exception, stayed in the Misty Peak.

That did seem like a decent ending but Chu Feng discovered in such a cheerful day, there weren't many happy expressions on his face. Instead, there was a hint of near undetectable worry and helplessness.

"Sister Fuyan, why don't I see Ya Fei?" Chu Feng asked Qiushui Fuyan amidst his confusion.

"This..."

"Chu Feng, to be honest, Ya Fei's physical body has been destroyed. It will be very difficult to recreate it... Actually, my mother lied to the First Immortal," Qiushui Fuyan said.

"Lied to the First Immortal? That means Ya Fei hasn't been brought back to life?" Chu Feng felt quite surprised.

"He was lied to, and Ya Fei cannot be revived. However, she won't die. Although we're unable to rebuild her physical body, her Consciousness will

not pass away in the Misty Peak. There will be no issues for her to continue surviving in this state,” Qiushui Fuyan said.

“I see.” Chu Feng seemed to understand why the First Immortal felt so helpless. By his nature, there was no chance he’d stay in the Misty Peak. However, he did all because of his granddaughter.

Chu Feng felt a bit guilty in his heart. Although his dealings with the First Immortal hadn’t been too much, if it weren’t for him, it would have been nearly impossible for Chu Feng to have cultivated the Immortal Transference Mysterious Technique. Even more so, it’d be impossible to defeat Jiang Qisha and Murong Mingtian.

Now, they were victorious. They defeated all their enemies in the Eastern Sea Region, so he had to say that the First Immortal had helped out quite a bit.

But they were unable to keep true to their former promise. How could Chu Feng not blame himself? Especially after recalling that the First Immortal betrayed his own force for his granddaughter yet still unable to bring her back to live, Chu Feng felt even more guilty.

At that moment, Chu Feng hiddenly made a decision. If he had accomplishments in cultivation in the future, then he would definitely return to the Eastern Sea Region and help Ya Fei rebuild her body. He would return this favour to the First Immortal.

“Senior First Immortal, I express my apologies regarding Ya Fei.” After his resolution, Chu Feng came up to the First Immortal and bowed with a remorseful complexion.

“It’s unrelated to you, nor do I blame Lady Piaomiao. After all, if it weren’t for her, my granddaughter wouldn’t have survived. Although it is only a Consciousness, at least she’s still here to chat with me.” The First Immortal shook his head.

“Senior, don’t worry. This world is so big; there are all sorts of mystical techniques. When I enter the Holy Land of Martialism, I will gather information on this matter. I believe I will find the method to revive Ya Fei,” Chu Feng swore gravely.

The First Immortal’s face instantly froze. Then, an indescribable expression of gratitude emerged into his eyes. He didn’t say anything and just kept nodding

his head. Only after doing that for a good while did he say, “Then I’ll wait for the day you return.”

The First Immortal celebrated secretly. He knew what sort of potential and talent Chu Feng had. Since such words were spoken, he felt that Chu Feng would definitely stay true to his word. There was hope for his granddaughter’s resurrection.

“Chu Feng.” Just at that moment, a male’s call rang out

He couldn’t help but be taken aback when he turned around and looked. He discovered there were a man and woman standing behind him. One was beautiful and moving—Qiushui Fuyan. The other was large and mighty—Huangfu Haoyue.

“Chu Feng, I want to talk to you about a few thing alone. Do you have time?” Huangfu Haoyue said with a faint smile.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 986 - The Place of Meeting

MGA: Chapter 986 - The Place of Meeting

“Senior Huangfu, we finally meet again.” Chu Feng’s heart was filled with incomparable excitement. He couldn’t help but reveal a smile of insuppressible joy.

Huangfu Haoyue wore a light smile on his face. He first said to Qiushui Fuyan, “Fuyan, wait for me here,” then cast his gaze towards Chu Feng and said, “Chu Feng, follow me.”

whoosh

After speaking, Huangfu Haoyue rose into the air. Chu Feng followed and the both of them flew into the distance and soon disappeared into the faraway horizon.

Everyone held some concern regarding this matter. The crowd revealed complicated expressions because they knew the upcoming conversation was of utmost importance to Chu Feng.

They continued flying and only when they felt they were far from the clamour did they stop in a location where they could not be seen.

After stopping, Huangfu Haoyue started to carefully examine Chu Feng. The expressions in his eyes were very complicated; there were some unspeakable ones. Then, after a long while, he nodded and said, "You've grown up. My mission should be considered completed."

"Senior Huangfu, are you able to tell me the truth now?" Chu Feng asked, unable to help himself.

"Truth? You're referring to where and who I brought you from to the continent of the Nine Provinces?" Huangfu Haoyue asked with a smile.

"I want to know everything. After you entered the Heavenly Road until you left the Heavenly Road—everything that happened during that time," Chu Feng said.

"Mm. If you truly want to know, then I really do have to start from the beginning." Huangfu Haoyue lightly smiled. He took a deep breath, then exhaled. He started speaking.

"Back then, the Burning Heaven Church ventured into the Heavenly Road. We wanted to enter the Holy Land of Martialism and seek a better path in cultivation.

"However, we underestimated the Heavenly Road. There were obstructions in there, and those obstructions brought heavy losses to the Burning Heaven Church. Everyone—millions of members—died. I, however, survived."

"Obstruction? Killings? What was it? Senior Huangfu, what did you meet in the Heavenly Road?" Chu Feng asked.

"I can't really put my finger on what it was. However, since you're preparing to enter the Heavenly Road, I must remind you that it is not easy to pass." Huangfu Haoyue first heaved a sigh, then said, "Actually, the reason we dared to venture into the Heavenly Road was because we held a certain amount of confidence. One of our Burning Heaven Church's ancestor saw a stone tablet in an ancient remains. On it the secret of the Heavenly Road was written.

"If one enters the Heavenly Road, they walk against the heavens. Those who enter take half a step in death and half in life; those who retreat are absolutely dead.

“That was what the stone tablet wrote. Chu Feng, do you know what that means?” Huangfu Haoyue asked.

“‘If one enters the Heavenly Road, they walk against the heavens. Those who enter take half a step in death and half in life; those who retreat are absolutely dead.’?” Chu Feng repeated. Then, he said, “If I’m not mistaken, the former part means the Heavenly Road is the path that leads to the Holy Land of Martialism. It’s impossible that everything goes smoothly as its difficulty is very high—it’s unimaginable.

“As for the latter part, it might be reminding that there is no retreat inside the Heavenly Road. If one courageously advances, they will have a chance to enter the heavens—the Holy Land of Martialism. However, if they hold cowardice in their hearts and thus retreat, they will only walk towards death and die within the Heavenly Road.”

“That’s right. You are absolutely correct. Within the Heavenly Road, the first half was very calm, leading to a false sense of ease. As we walked, we even felt hope for the future.

“But when we reached the middle, many unknown creatures appeared. They were very odd. I can’t say for certain what they were, but they were very powerful and also very terrifying.

“They were large in numbers and they sealed off the vast path forward. They pressed forward and wanted to tear us all apart.

“There is only one way to pass through those unknown creatures—to advance with faith and courage. If there is even a single hint of fear in one’s heart, they would be engulfed by those creatures. However, if one retains no fear, then those monsters cannot do anything.

“Yet, when facing such terrifying things, it is really too difficult to remain calm and cast away the terror in one’s heart.

“Even though we had specially trained before entering the Heavenly Road, when it was reality, a large portion of us had lost their minds.

“Seventy percent were horrified by those monsters. They forget the pope’s lessons as they turned around and ran. But in the end, they were still caught by those creatures and lost their lives.

“The rest chose to continue forth bravely. But there were really too few who held no fear in their hearts. Of the thirty percent remaining, only one percent survived amidst the wave of the unknown creatures.

“But shortly after passing through the creatures, another wave faced us. They were, however, different from the previous ones.

“On the surface, the level of might and terror they brought was less than the first wave of creatures. However, they weren’t existences we could deal with.

“So, since we were able to pass through the first wave of monsters despite how terrifying they were, we assumed it wasn’t hard to pass through the second wave. After all, on the surface, no matter numbers of power, the second wave was lesser than the first.

“But we were wrong. Although they appeared inferior, the second wave’s demands were actually much harsher.

“Perhaps... our fear hadn’t been cleansed completely, so we were attacked by the second wave.

“This time, they started massacring us. They were merciless. Our pope led the way and was ruthlessly killed. Quickly afterwards, everyone received a fatal blow.

“Those monsters were too terrifying. We stood no chance against them, nor could we pass through them. Before such frightened emotions and desire to survive, I gave up on the thought to fearless advance. I chose to escape.

“As I fled in panic, I stumbled upon an area. I will never forget that place.” Huangfu Haoyue’s breathing starting becoming erratic and even the expression in his eyes became unstable.

Chu Feng didn’t probe him to quickly answer as that place had affected Huangfu Haoyue greatly. So, Chu Feng waited for him to continue.

“The feeling of that place was very special and I really can’t describe it. No matter the style of the buildings or the aura of its entirety, it gave people a very dark feeling and casts uneasiness onto them. Using terrifying to describe that place is quite suitable.”

“But... If you want me to truly describe the feeling I received from that place, although the description is only one word as well, *terrifying* is absolutely not it—it would be *holy*.” Huangfu Haoyue gave a bitter smile, then looked at Chu Feng and said, “That is where you and I met.”

Martial God Asura - Chapter 987 - Thank You

MGA: Chapter 987 - Thank You

Chu Feng’s heartbeat instantly sped up. Although he appeared calm, a storm stirred inside his heart because the place Huangfu Haoyue was now talking about was the place Chu Feng came from.

“Senior Huangfu, what did you see there?” asked Chu Feng. He was truly impatient to find out what sort of people were at that location. Were they his parents? Was his family there? Or perhaps something else had happened?

“Ah...” Huangfu Haoyue let out a long sigh, seeming as if there was some sort of trouble he could not speak of. Only then did he say, “I, Huangfu Haoyue, have even gone into an Imperial Tomb. No matter if others have seen it before or if they haven’t, from ancient times, I have seen quite a few of the so-called big spectacles.

“However, it was the first time I saw a place like that. The holy feeling it exuded was suffocating. It was not only simple fear, it was *veneration* originating from my entire being. Such a feeling made me want to stop, as I did not dare to step in.

“However, since there were monsters aiming for my life behind me, I had no choice but to enter. At that place, I saw a man.

“That man...” Huangfu Haoyue suddenly swallowed his words. He cast his gaze towards Chu Feng and his eyes were now glittering with emotions. His firmness was no more, and replacing it were indescribable complex emotions and fear.

If it must be described, it was an emotion filled with panic, fear, and paranoia.

“Senior Huangfu, are you okay?” Chu Feng was a bit worried. He knew that the memories from that period had too great of an effect on Huangfu Haoyue’s mental state.

Huangfu Haoyue's body trembled slightly after hearing his words, then he came to his senses. He wiped the cold sweat from his forehead and said, "Actually, when I saw that man, my awareness was blurred. I don't remember his face, but I feel that yours is very similar to his."

"That feeling's very strange... In my mind, I clearly have no recollection of his appearance, but when I see you, I feel that you look very similar to him." Huangfu Haoyue smiled because even he himself felt this was something amusing.

"Chu Feng, this Huangfu Haoyue must have seen your father. Other than him, who else would look that similar to you?"

"The reason why he doesn't remember your father's appearance yet feels you look like your father is because his memories have been messed with. A true expert can affect one's memories without them even knowing by blurring their awareness."

"This segment of memory is a fearful and blurry one. He doesn't dare to recall it because he's afraid. Quickly ask him what came afterwards. You cannot allow him to recollect his memories and you must finish your questions quickly. Otherwise, there will be damage dealt to his body and there's even a possibility that returns to insanity," Eggy suddenly reminded.

"Senior Huangfu, what came next? After you saw that man, what happened?" Chu Feng quickly asked.

"It's a bit shameful to say... Although I couldn't see his appearance clearly, I was terrified by him. Do you know what was the first thing I did after I saw him?" Huangfu Haoyue asked Chu Feng.

Chu Feng shook his head and asked, "What is it?"

"Before he even said anything, I knelt. I didn't only kneel, I even kowtowed and begged him."

"Although I, Huangfu Haoyue, am not any great person, I am not a cowardly person. In my entire life, there are very few people who I've kowtowed and knelt to—no one else other than my parents and my master."

"Before that, even if you beat me to death I wouldn't believe that one day, I, Huangfu Haoyue, would beg someone so I could live."

“However, on that day, I did indeed do that. I remember it clearly. How lowly I was, yet how willing.” Huangfu Haoyue gave a bitter chuckle, then continued, “I was really afraid of that man. That fear came from the bottom of my heart. It was like a commoner seeing a god. That sort of reverence was impossible to resist.

“But actually, that man didn’t do anything bad to me. He never threatened nor harmed me. Instead, he was quite benevolent. He entrusted you to me, and he told me to bring you out of the Heavenly Road and in turn entrust you to a family named Chu. He named you Chu Feng and told me to protect you until you grew up.

“I agreed; I didn’t dare to refuse. I felt I had no choice but to agree, and after that... I felt my vision blur. When it returned to normal, I had come back to the Eastern Sea Region. I’m sure you know what happened later on. After I returned, my mental state started deteriorating.

“Although that man had never scared nor threatened me, I myself felt I had to finish this mission. Otherwise, he would kill me. That’s what I felt. As for death, I do not fear it much, but when I recalled he was going to kill me, I felt endless terror.

“I knew very well I had been broken from fright. I knew I would go mad. However, I couldn’t control my fate. I was that powerless.

“Before turning insane, I went to see Fuyan. I told her not to enter the Heavenly Road. Afterwards, I went to the continent of the Nine Provinces and wanted you to settle down there.

“Actually, there are quite a few clans named Chu in the Eastern Sea Region, but I didn’t dare to put you there. I knew my time was short and I would lose the power to protect you soon. I couldn’t be certain whether you could safely grow up in a place like that.

“That’s why I brought you to the continent of the Nine Provinces and chose a small family. I felt, by my threats, they would not dare to treat you poorly due to the overwhelming fear they’d feel.

“And after entrusting you to the Chu family, I hiddenly monitored them for a while until... until I was truly unable to control myself. Only then did I leave, because I was afraid I wouldn’t be able to control myself and harm you after going insane.

"I'm sure you know what came later," Huangfu Haoyue said.

"Senior, do you remember the place you talked about? The position in the Heavenly Road where you met the man?" Chu Feng asked.

Huangfu Haoyue provided the clues, but didn't tell him the answer he wanted to know. So, Chu Feng had to personally head towards the Heavenly Road and investigate.

"I don't remember. However, nothing in the Heavenly Road changes. After meeting the second group of creatures, go a bit forward, then head east. You should be able to find it..." Huangfu Haoyue said with an uncertain tone.

"Thank you, Senior Huangfu." Chu Feng bowed and clasped his hands. He didn't continue asking because he knew nothing more would come out of it. Rather than having Huangfu Haoyue recall the worrying memories of the past, it was better to just leave it like this.

"There's no need to thank me. If it weren't for you, perhaps I would already be dead in the Heavenly Road. No matter what I experienced in these years, at least I'm alive. Moreover, I have unknowingly become a rank eight Martial King. That's absolutely not a coincidence either. I feel that my aptitude right now is even stronger than back then. Perhaps one day I will even become a Martial Emperor.

"And this... is all because of you. If there must be thanks, it should be me thanking you." Huangfu Haoyue looked at Chu Feng with immense gratitude.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 988 - Before Departure

MGA: Chapter 988 - Before Departure

Chu Feng did not refute Huangfu Haoyue's words. After all, he was very correct. If it weren't for Chu Feng, perhaps Huangfu Haoyue would have already died within the Heavenly Road. How would he live to see today?

Although he had gone insane for quite a long period of time and he had borne a few pains, he had gotten quite a few gains as well. As he said, amidst his madness, he simply knew nothing about cultivation. Yet, his cultivation had grown. Not only cultivation, even his comprehension strength had become stronger. These were his gains, and he knew where they came from.

Moreover, after experiencing such a suffering, he knew the most important thing in life was not cultivation. Even though he wished to become a Martial Emperor, he did not plan to enter the Holy Land of Martialism. Instead, he planned to stay in the Eastern Sea Region by Qiushui Fuyan's side.

"Chu Feng, I know you must go to the Heavenly Road. I simply cannot stop you, so I'm not planning to stop you.

"But that is truly a dangerous place. As such, I do not advise bringing Zi Ling and the others with you. You're different from them. You have a very strong willpower; you can pass through the Heavenly Road. However, that may not apply to them," Huangfu Haoyue recommended.

"Thank you for your advice, senior. I've already decided." Chu Feng nodded, then return to the Misty Peak with Huangfu Haoyue.

When he returned, Chu Feng called over Zi Ling, Su Rou, Su Mei, Jiang Wushang, and Zhang Tianyi.

However, when he looked at their faces brimming with smiles, Chu Feng found it a bit hard to speak. They all had their dreams and they didn't fear danger. They really *should* head to the Holy Land of Martialism, so Chu Feng truly didn't know how to convince them to stay.

"Junior Chu Feng, there's something I and Brother Wushang want to tell you," Zhang Tianyi suddenly said. There was even a bit of an apologetic expression on his face.

"Senior Zhang, just speak your mind," Chu Feng said.

"Junior Chu Feng, I am truly sorry. We cannot accompany you to the Holy Land of Martialism," Zhang Tianyi said remorsefully. Jiang Wushang's face was also a bit apologetic.

"Senior Zhang, Brother Wushang, you mean...?" Chu Feng felt a bit surprised at his words.

"Big Brother Chu Feng, I know we brothers said we would face fortune and disaster together, but there's really too great of a difference between our cultivations. We don't want to be constantly on guard after entering the Holy Land of Martialism with you. We don't want to affect your future because of our helplessness.

“So, we’ve already discussed this with Sister Fuyan. She allowed me and Big Brother Tianyi to stay in the Misty Peak to cultivate. She’ll also pass down the cultivation methods from the Misty Peak.

“The Misty Peak is something from the Ancient Era. And since even Jiang Qisha and the others, who’d come from the Holy Land of Martialism, expressed such desire for the Misty Peak, it shows how impressive it is. So, as we stay here and cultivate, our speed might not be slower than yours.. Perhaps one day, we will even catch up to you! When we feel that we won’t be a burden, we’ll go to the Holy Land of Martialism and search for you,” Jiang Wushang said as he chuckled.

“You’ve truly decided?” Chu Feng asked.

“Mm. Even you cannot sway our decision,” said Zhang Tianyi and Jiang Wushang together.

“Chu Feng, we are also planning the same thing.” Zi Ling suddenly spoke. Su Rou and Su Mei were holding Zi Ling’s arms as they gave a sweet smile.

“You are also planning to stay in the Misty Peak?” Chu Feng felt even more surprised.

“Mm. Although my Divine Body has been cured, the cultivation I have is still too weak. As he said, with the cultivation we have right now, it is truly too dangerous to enter the Holy Land of Martialism. It’s better to stay here and strengthen ourselves first. When we acquire a certain amount of achievements in cultivation, we can always join up with you at that place.” Zi Ling nodded.

Since even they’d spoken, Chu Feng was a bit speechless. At that instant, he only felt a bit of reluctance to part. They had said they would enter the Holy Land of Martialism together, but now, he would go alone—again.

Without his lovers, his brothers, no matter how wonderful the new journey became, he’d be lacking a portion of enjoyment and gaining a portion of sorrow.

However, this situation was one Chu Feng hoped for. Thus, there was not only unwillingness to separate in his heart, there was also gratitude. He was very thankful that they thought of him.

Chu Feng knew how much they hoped to come to the Holy Land of Martialism with him. However, precisely because they thought cared about Chu Feng so much, they gave up without Chu Feng even asking them to.

There were still a few days to the opening of the Heavenly Road. As such, Chu Feng was not in a rush to leave. Before leaving, there was a joyous event held in the Misty Peak—the marriage between Huangfu Haoyue and Qiushui Fuyan.

This wedding was not announced to the outside, nor was it overly grand. However, everyone who was there hoped the best for the two of them. It was a very warm moment, and before the wishes of the crowd, this pair of lovers would finally, once again, live and walk together.

Moreover, since Lady Piaomiao's cultivation was gone, she could no longer guard the Misty Peak. Thus, she handed down such a mission to Qiushui Fuyan and Huangfu Haoyue and had them guard this place together.

As for the Crippling Night Demon Sect, Chu Feng gave full authority to Qiu Canfeng. Although Chu Feng was going to leave, to the people from the Crippling Night Demon Sect, he was eternally their sect head.

Finally, the day of the Heavenly Road's opening arrived. After passing the Heavenly Sea, they would reach the place where it opened.

This was something that happened every year, and every time, quite a few people would come to watch. Most of them didn't plan to enter the Heavenly Road; they came here just to give it a look.

However, this year, there was a lot more people than usual—several thousand times more. It was even much more lively than the year when the Burning Heaven Church headed to the Holy Land of Martialism.

Vast number of bodies filled the sky. It was a very grand scene to behold.

The reason for such an anomaly was because it was rumoured there would be a famous person who was going to enter this year's Heavenly Road.

The person who eradicated the Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Three Great Monstrous Clans, who killed Murong Mingtian, Jiang Qisha, and the others alone, the current head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, Chu Feng.

“Look, it’s Chu Feng! He’s truly come! It seems that he’s preparing to enter the Heavenly Road this year,” exclaimed someone amidst the crowd. Very soon, everyone cast their gazes in the direction he pointed. They could see a vast stream of people flying over slowly.

Everyone started feeling excited. Such an emotion permeated this land.

Within the immense sea of people, there were simply countless famous people from the Eastern Sea Region. However, at that very instant, the person who caught the most attention was a young person—Chu Feng.

He was riding a flying horse. He was so full of spirit. He was so young.

On his face that wasn’t really all that handsome yet was filled with resolution, there was a confident and dazzling smile.

To his left were Su Rou, Su Mei, and Zi Ling. To his right were Jiang Wushang, Zhang Tianyi, and the Chu family.

As for behind him, Lady Piaomiao, Qiushui Fuyan, Huangfu Haoyue, Qiu Canfeng, Xue Xiyue, and the many peak experts from the Crippling Night Demon Sect were there.

However, without a single trace of doubt, amongst all these famous people, Chu Feng was the focus.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 989 - The Heavenly Road Opens

MGA: Chapter 989 - The Heavenly Road Opens

Everyone above the sea burst into discussion when Chu Feng appeared.

The elderly continuously nodded at Chu Feng. As they looked at him, they narrated his accomplishments to the younger generation within their clans. They also told them to take Chu Feng as a role model—work hard in cultivation and become an exceptional person.

That led the young children to blink with their innocent big eyes. When they looked at Chu Feng, it simply wasn’t like looking at a person but more like at a god. Their eyes were filled with a fervent adoration.

To survive in a land like this, especially if one were from a famous cultivation clan, every single child's dream was to become a peak cultivation expert. Chu Feng was the person they all wanted to become.

However, in comparison to the elderly's passionate conversations and the children's sincere admiration, the younger generation similar in age to Chu Feng were clearly much more lively.

They were all cheering; some were even screaming. The degree of respect they held towards Chu Feng reached an insane level.

The males were a bit more presentable. When they looked up to Chu Feng, they were roughly akin to children. It was more admiration they felt as Chu Feng was bringing honour to their generation. That was why they gave him this much respect.

But the females on the other hand were completely different. They not only gave Chu Feng admiration, there was a bit of worship. There were even many young women who made Chu Feng into their standard for a partner and made him into their ideal lover.

Right now, their "ideal lover" had appeared right before their eyes. How could they not be moved? They naturally lost control of their emotions.

"Oh? It seems that my Chu Feng is quite popular!" said Su Mei as she giggled at such a scene. But there was a bit of jealousy amidst her words.

As for Chu Feng, he just gave a calm smile. When facing a situation like this, Chu Feng was really too used to it. In the world of cultivation, the strong were respected. Recalling back when he was wanted by the Immortal Execution Archipelago, he was simply like a rat crossing the street. There were very few people who were willing to help him.

But now, after the blink of an eye, he became the idol figure of the entire Eastern Sea Region. This was quite a big change, and Chu Feng had fought for all of it himself.

rumble rumble rumble

Just at that moment, rumbles came from the depths of the sea. On the sea surface splashing with waves, enormous vortexes started appearing.

As they swirled around, the splashes were fierce. The area of the vortexes even kept on enlarging. In the end, countless of them, great in size, nearly filled the entire sea. It was truly an incomparably grand sight to behold.

bang

bang

bang

bang

Suddenly, from the vortexes, thick beams of light shot out. They merged together in the sky and formed a blinding golden formation.

The formation occupied an enormous area. It broke through the clouds and stretched down into the sea. It was like a golden wall that blocked off a part of this world, yet also like a dazzling sun that just stood there.

“So this Heavenly Road truly is a mystical formation.”

Seeing the golden formation erected in the sky. Chu Feng felt stunned. Even though he had heard the Heavenly Road was opened by a hidden formation within the Heavenly Sea, he still felt astonished when he witnessed such an event with his very own eyes.

Even without any detailed observations, one could tell already with the naked eye how complex and powerful it was. What cultivation did the person who laid this formation have?

hmm

After its emergence, the formation quickly started powering up. Everyone could see an entrance slowly appearing in the center of the formation—that was the entrance to the Heavenly Road.

“The Heavenly Road! The Heavenly Road has successfully opened!” The crowd’s hearts were filled with complex emotions such as excitement and fear as they looked at the already opened yet endless entrance.

The Heavenly Road was the path that led to the Holy Land of Martialism. From ancient times, there had been innumerable people who entered;

however, with the exception of Huangfu Haoyue, not a single person who went in returned.

Huangfu Haoyue had announced that he hadn't passed through the Heavenly Road, nor had he entered the Holy Land of Martialism.

Although he didn't tell the world how he came out of the Heavenly Road, he told them everyone else had died inside.

This, as expected, invoked everyone's shock. Many people had suspected whether the Heavenly Road was a path of no return, and hearing Huangfu Haoyue say this, they agreed that it was not something a normal person could pass through.

As such, even though the Heavenly Road had already been opened, not a single person stepped in. Even those who planned to enter were standing outside, making no signs of entering. They all cast their gazes towards Chu Feng.

"Big Brother Chu Feng, it seems that they're hoping you to be the first to enter," Jiang Wushang said with a chuckle.

Chu Feng could only smile at those words. Of course, he could see what the crowd wanted. Even though Chu Feng was only a rank eight Martial Lord, after his actions at the Misty Peak, many people felt that *he* was the strongest person in the Eastern Sea Region.

Moreover, the rumours said Chu Feng was going to enter the Heavenly Road. Those who planned the same naturally wanted to hug his legs and follow him. Perhaps they could take just a tiny bit of advantage of him.

But if they knew even Chu Feng himself wasn't absolutely confident he could pass through the Heavenly Road, who knew what they would feel.

whoosh

But just when everyone's gazes were fixed on Chu Feng, his eyes lit up. He discovered a person appearing out of nowhere and was walking towards the entrance of the Heavenly Road. He also recognized that person—Tantai Xue.

"Tantai Xue, wait!" Chu Feng called out. Simultaneously, he leapt forward and flew towards her.

“Tantai Xue? She’s the person with the Divine Body who came from the Holy Land of Martialism?” Due to Chu Feng’s call, everyone noticed her. When they recalled who she was, there was unavoidably a few extra hints of reverence in their eyes.

“Yes?” Tantai Xue indifferently asked, as she turned around and stopped upon hearing Chu Feng.

Currently, Tantai Xue was still wearing a white dress and a veil covering her complexion. More importantly, the feeling she gave Chu Feng was still that icy cold. It was unfamiliarity that rejected people a thousand miles away.

“I just want to thank you.”

Chu Feng’s word of thanks came from his heart. Back then, if it weren’t for Tantai Xue who used Kuang Bainian as a bargaining chip and saved Zi Ling and the others by swapping hostages, even if Chu Feng successfully cultivated the Immortal Transference Mysterious Technique, he wouldn’t have so easily defeated Murong Mingtian and Jiang Qisha.

Tantai Xue deserved full credit for the part she played.

“I just did what I should have done. You don’t need to thank me. But seeing as you had saved me, I can tell you something,” Tantai Xue said.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 990 - Horrifying Attack

MGA: Chapter 990 - Horrifying Attack

“What is it?” Chu Feng asked.

“If one enters the Heavenly Road, they walk against the heavens. Those who enter take half a step in death and half in life; those who retreat are absolutely dead.

“Remember: after entering the Heavenly Road, it doesn’t matter how terrifying the things you see are. They are only illusions. They are there to test your courage. As long as you ignore them and hold no fear, there will be no troubles as you pass through the Heavenly Road into the Holy Land of Martialism.”

Tantai Xue had spoken those words mentally. Very clearly, she didn't want others to know about that. People were selfish—she was no exception.

“Thank you for the reminder.” Even though Chu Feng had already known about that before, when Tantai Xue mentioned it again, it strengthened his confidence to pass through the Heavenly Road because it made it much more likel what Huangfu Haoyue said before to be true.

Moreover, in comparison to Huangfu Haoyue's words, Tantai Xue's were much lucid: no matter how terrifying the things within the Heavenly Road were, just ignore them. To Chu Feng, that was not a difficult task.

“No need to thank me. Some things are much easier said than done. Whether you can pass through this Heavenly Road will depend on your own abilities.” After leaving behind those words, Tantai Xue turned around and rushed in.

One could see she did not plan to walk together with Chu Feng. The words she said just now were truly no more than a reminder. His life was unrelated to her at all.

whoosh whoosh whoosh

After Tantai Xue made her move, of the group of people who prepared to enter the Heavenly Road, there were dozens of people who moved as well. They cast intricate bodily martial skills and, with the quickest speed possible, chased after Tantai Xue.

They likely felt since she was from the Holy Land of Martialism, she knew the method to pass the Heavenly Road. Thus, they wanted to follow and take advantage of her.

Chu Feng did not enter after them. Instead, he returned to Zi Ling and the others and gave them a short farewell.

Unavoidably, there was reluctance. But no matter Chu Feng, or Zi Ling and the others, none of them showed it. Instead, there were encouraging smiles worn on their faces.

After such a short goodbye, Chu Feng turned around and flew into the Heavenly Road. Afterwards, the people who prepared to enter the Heavenly Road also all arose and followed Chu Feng as they too entered.

However, Chu Feng did not see the worry and loss that surged on Zi Ling's and the others' face in the instant he entered the Heavenly Road.

At first, it was darkness inside. The feeling it gave made it seem as if it were a black hole. However, as he continued forth, light soon appeared at the front. It was an azure light emitted by a floating object.

It was as big as a watermelon, and many objects similar to it nearly filled this vast world. When he looked ahead, the Heavenly Road did not look like some space. It instead looked like a stelliferous sky. It was both beautiful and mysterious.

However, before they walked all that far in, Chu Feng and his group saw dozens of people. They were flying towards Chu Feng and the others from the depths of the Heavenly Road. After seeing Chu Feng, they nodded and smiled a bit fawningly. They said in unison, "Lord Chu Feng."

"You lost her?" Chu Feng said with a faint smile. These dozens of people had been the first to enter the Heavenly Road in order to follow Tantai Xue. But clearly, they lost track of her.

"Hehe..." They felt rather embarrassed at Chu Feng's question, and could only foolishly chuckle as they scratched their heads. They didn't reply, but they confirmed Chu Feng's guess by such a reaction.

Chu Feng looked back. There were several hundred people behind him, and in addition to these dozens of people, there weren't even a thousand in total.

Although there weren't many people here, they were all elites. Most of them were middle-aged and were all Martial Lords. The remaining were elderly cultivators—all of them were peak Martial Lords. There was even a rank one Martial King. It was an old woman Chu Feng hadn't seen before, likely a hidden expert.

However, at that very instant, even this old rank one Martial King held no arrogance in front of Chu Feng. Instead, she seemed rather humble and perhaps even a bit uncomfortable.

Although it seemed very strange that an elderly rank one Martial King treated a young rank eight Martial Lord with such an attitude, it was not abnormal at all when one put into consideration what Chu Feng did in the Eastern Sea

Region and his position. If even a rank one Martial King treated Chu Feng in such a manner, the rest were naturally even more respectful.

“It is perilous in the Heavenly Road. If you want to turn back now, you can still make it,” Chu Feng said.

“Lord Chu Feng, since we’ve stepped into this place, we’ve already decided. Even if we die, we will not turn around.”

“Yeah! Lord Chu Feng, we know you must be able to pass through this Heavenly Road. Could you also bring us through?” But unexpectedly, there was not a single person who backed away despite Chu Feng’s words. They joined together and actually begged him.

Seeing the crowd who were sincerely begging with faces of resolution, Chu Feng was moved. So, he said to them, “I do not hold absolute confidence I can pass through this Heavenly Road, let alone bringing you with me.

“However, I can give all of you a reminder. This Heavenly Road is a test of one’s courage. So, no matter what sort of frightening thing you see later on, do not be scared, nor should you dodge. They are merely illusions. As long as you follow me and pass through, it will mean they are nothing. However, if you are afraid, you will most definitely fall victims to the illusions.”

“Lord Chu Feng, thank you. Since we dare to enter this Heavenly Road, perhaps we have nothing else, but we most definitely have courage.”

“Lord Chu Feng, thank you for the reminder. We will not disappoint your expectations. No matter what we face up ahead, we will not retreat. We will only advance.” The crowd all expressed their stances; their faces were ones of resolution.

“Good. Everyone, follow me. Remember, no matter what you see, do not be afraid. As long as you follow me ahead, nothing will happen to you.” Chu Feng turned around. He activated his Heaven’s Eyes and flew straight forward.

Although these people would indeed affect Chu Feng’s speed, they had still come from the Eastern Sea Region. Perhaps when they were still in the Eastern Sea Region, there weren’t many feelings that he felt towards him, but after leaving, there was more or less some intimacy.

So, since Chu Feng could help them, of course he would do his best. If he could, of course he hoped he could bring them all into the Holy Land of Martialism, this world called sacred.

aoo—

AHH—

roar—

However, soon after they advanced, there were bursts of odd sounds that came faintly from the depths of the Heavenly Road.

They were terrifying; they led chills down one's spines. They were akin to the weeping of a child, yet akin to the shriek of a woman, yet akin to the roar of a beast. Regardless, it was horrifying.

Moreover, those sounds increased in clarity, and increased in volume. Many people started becoming nervous because they were certain there were very frightening things within this Heavenly Road. And, right now, those things were approaching them.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 991 - Murderous Vengeful Spirits

MGA: Chapter 991 - Murderous Vengeful Spirits

Chu Feng couldn't help but frown. *He* wasn't afraid, but there were already others trembling slightly within the crowd behind him. People were becoming frightened even before those creatures neared them.

Chu Feng couldn't help but recall the Burning Heaven Church's fate and Tantai Xue's words: some things were easier said than done.

Regardless, this Heavenly Road... was indeed something not so easily passed.

He already had a premonition that a large portion of the people following him would die during this ordeal.

"Do not be afraid. Remember, no matter how terrifying they are, all of them are fake. Follow me and you will pass," Chu Feng reminded again.

“Yes!” the crowd responded. Although they appeared quite outstanding, seeds of doubt had already been sown in their hearts.

“Follow me.”

As Chu Feng spoke, he strode forth and into the air, towards the frightening sounds. The others quickly followed.

As they continued forward, continuing to near the unknown monsters, the peculiar and frightening sounds became louder and louder. Finally, deep in the Heavenly Road, there was a large mass of blood-red gas.

It covered simply everything. One could not even see the ends of it. As it surged around, it sealed off the path ahead—the horrifying sounds came from the blood-red gas.

It was, with a horrifying speed, rushing towards Chu Feng and the others. The feeling it emanated made it seem like an incomparably hungry demon that had finally found a tasty dish. It wanted to engulf Chu Feng and the others.

Many people were already panicking, and it only escalated further when the blood-red gas approached them. They could see what sort of things were inside.

Torn off hands, sliced off heads, split bodies, extracted organs... Broken body parts were inside the blood-red gas.

More importantly, they were still squirming around and making odd sounds. Although they didn't have any actual power, they released a nearly unendurable aura—one that was so horrifying it was suffocating.

“Everyone, listen up. This is not a simple illusion. It will even affect one's mind. Follow me; do not retreat,” shouted Chu Feng again as he swept his eyes over the blood-red gas.

With the power of the Heaven's Eyes, he already knew that those things were illusions—not normal ones, however. They had the power to kill. Although they were different from the typical ones, in the end, they were merely things for scaring. They could scare other perhaps, but not Chu Feng.

At that very instant, Chu Feng unhesitantly flew over—straight towards the blood-red gas.

Everyone was terrified by what he did. In their eyes, no matter how they looked at it, Chu Feng seemed to be jumping into a pit of fire. He seemed to be committing suicide.

But recalling the words he said before, most of them still bit down on their teeth and charged with Chu Feng.

However, there was also a portion who could not withstand the horrifying aura exuded by the blood-red gas. They allowed fear to be born. After a few acts of hesitation, they didn't follow Chu Feng. Instead, they flew back where they came from, choosing to flee instead.

Chu Feng had already expected that to occur. He ignored those who were running away and didn't say anything. What should be said had been said already; whether they were able to successfully pass the Heavenly Road would depend on their own luck. Right now, Chu Feng could only care for himself.

wuaoo—

As Chu Feng ran, he finally dashed into the blood-red gas. At that instant, there were ear-piercing howls from every single direction. They were very terrifying and brought forth uneasiness to one's heart.

Furthermore, a fetid stench irresistibly flooded him. He could even feel the broken limbs touching his body. It was very revolting.

Right now, Chu Feng and the others seemed as if they entered a vast pool of blood. They had to step on those disgusting pieces of rotten flesh and broken limbs in order to advance.

Moreover, within this pool of blood, there were countless ghosts awaiting the opportunity to take their lives. They were awaiting to force new members to join their ranks.

But no matter how much terror they instigated, they were of no effect to Chu Feng. With the power of the Heaven's Eyes, even if more corpses were in front of them, they could not interfere with Chu Feng's line of sight. The roars of the blood-red gas were already ignored, making it seem as if he were merely flying through a normal sky. He was quick and not affected in the slightest.

However, not everyone had a heart as firm as Chu Feng's. In reality, a large portion of the ones following Chu Feng had already panicked. It would be a lie to say they were unafraid and fearless. They merely followed Chu Feng in with false courage.

But the blood-red gas didn't seem to be that simple. Even though the others were still following Chu Feng and running without even looking back, the rotten limbs and invisible ghosts were still attacking them.

The attacks from the corpses and ghosts were really indefensible. All sorts of painful cries rang out, and a large portion of the people following Chu Feng died by their strikes.

After such wails, after they were truly killed, those who didn't even have much fear in their hearts were affected in a chain reaction. They too, due to the fright that was born in their hearts, fell to the attacks of the corpses.

"Lord Chu Feng, didn't you say these were illusions and we could just ignore them? If they truly are, why are they killing us?"

Some people even started questioning Chu Feng amidst the panic. However, what awaited them was only inescapable death.

Cries fluctuated as they endlessly resounded behind Chu Feng. However, he did not even turn his head around. He just kept on running. Finally, he broke out.

However, when Chu Feng finally stopped and turned his head around to look, there was nothing else but the rapidly departing blood-red gas amidst horrifying sounds it made.

As for the hundreds of people initially following him, they were cut off completely. Not even a single one remained, as if they had never even appeared.

"Ahh..."

Chu Feng couldn't help but let out a sigh as he looked at the blood-red gas getting farther and farther away. When all was said and done, those were still several hundred lives, and they were also from the Eastern Sea Region.

Chu Feng did sincerely hope they could arrive at the Holy Land of Martialism with him, but sadly, their hearts were not sufficiently firm. They couldn't even pass through this first stage, let alone the later ones. They were destined to fail.

"That can't be blamed on you. They were unqualified. If this Heavenly Road were this easy to pass, wouldn't everyone be entering the Holy Land of Martialism?" Eggy said with a giggle. Her voice was as sweet as usual; however, within her tone, there was not the slightest trace of sympathy for the ones who had died just now.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 992 - Becoming a Disciple, Learning Skills

MGA: Chapter 992 - Becoming a Disciple, Learning Skills

"Mm. Those things are illusions but they are not normal illusions. Not everyone can ignore them." Chu Feng nodded and didn't brood over it too much. He continued advancing.

Without the crowd following him, though Chu Feng was much more lonely, quite a few of his worries had disappeared. As he travelled in this Heavenly Road, he was a lot more free.

Chu Feng continued on the path for a very long time. He didn't meet any more tests like before; however, there were changes that occurred to the Heavenly Road.

It was no longer an endless beautiful starry night because the azure light objects started diminishing in number. The more he advanced, the lesser there were until they disappeared completely.

The Heavenly Road once again, like the very beginning, became completely dark. If it were a normal person, they would find it very difficult to determine direction in an environment like this. But Chu Feng was an exception.

With the Heaven's Eyes, Chu Feng was able to lock onto the path forward. However, he did not just go straight. Instead, he was looking around and searching. The reason was because his most important mission in the Heavenly Road wasn't to enter the Holy Land of Martialism, but to find his place of birth.

At the same time, in the Eastern Sea Region, the Heavenly Road had now closed.

As they watched the disappearing entrance and the sea returning to its initial state, Zi Ling, Su Rou, Su Mei, Zhang Tianyi, and Jiang Wushang all wore faint sorrow and strong wistfulness.

A large portion of the observers had left already, including the Crippling Night Demon Sect, who left by Qiu Canfeng's lead. Slowly, the clamorous sea returned to serenity.

What resounded was no longer noisy conversations and laughter but the violent sound of gales and the surging waves. In the sky, only dozens of people remained.

Qiushui Fuyan, Huangfu Haoyue, Lady Piaomiao, Taikou...

The Azure Dragon Founder, the ancestor of the Jiang Dynasty, the Chu Family...

Zi Ling, Su Rou, Su Mei, Zhang Tianyi, Jiang Wushang...

After looking at Zi Ling and the others who were unwilling to shift their gazes, Qiushui Fuyan and the others more or less felt some aching in their hearts when they looked at one another.

They could understand their feelings. Zi Ling and the others were so close to Chu Feng, so they were definitely very concerned with his safety. After all, this Heavenly Road was not something easy to pass.

But on the topic of Chu Feng's safety, how could Qiushui Fuyan and the others not be worried? Actually... they knew why Zi Ling and the others wore such emotions on their faces. The most important reason was that they were unable to join Chu Feng in his journey into the Heavenly Road.

"Zi Ling, it's time we go back." After much hesitation, Qiushui Fuyan spoke.

"Mm. Sister Fuyan, sorry for the long wait." Zi Ling and the others all turned their heads around, their faces filled with forced smiles.

Everyone else's heart ached even more when they saw Zi Ling and the others act in such a manner.

“Don’t worry. With Chu Feng’s abilities, it won’t be hard for him to pass the Heavenly Road. I firmly believe he will make a name for himself in the Holy Land of Martialism as well,” Qiushui Fuyan consoled.

“I know. The first time I saw him, he was much weaker than me. Without even joking, I really didn’t put him in my eyes back then.” Zi Ling sweetly smiled. She recalled the scene when she and Chu Feng first met.

“However, in spite of that, I was still defeated by him. At that moment, I became aware of how powerful he was.

“So, I don’t doubt his strength at all. Even though I was forcibly brought back to the Eastern Sea Region by my parents, I still believed that one day, he would bring me back. And he truly did.

“Now, I still believe in him. However...” Although the smile on Zi Ling’s face was still there, she choked over her words a bit.

“However, you still worry for him, right?” Just at that moment, an aged and calm voice rang out behind Zi Ling.

“Senior?” Qiushui Fuyan’s and the others’ expression changed greatly. At that very instant, the person who appeared behind Zi Ling was not an ordinary one—it was the blind old man.

He was standing with his hands behind his back. His eyes were closed, but he still seemed to be able to see Zi Ling. His cultivation remained low, but gave others a feeling of unfathomability.

“Little lady, don’t cry. Perhaps I can help all of you,” said the blind old man again.

“Senior, you mean?” All five of their eyes lit up.

“Your cultivation aptitudes are all decent, but if you want to catch up to that boy Chu Feng with what you have right now, I’m afraid you will never succeed. Even you, who has a Divine Body, have no chance.

“If you continue the way you all are, burdens are the only things you’ll be to Chu Feng. He’ll give you help, but don’t even think of doing the same the other way around,” the blind old man said to Zi Ling as he smiled faintly.

Zi Ling and the others all came to a realization. The person right in front of them was an expert. There was no doubt. Furthermore, the words he just said had a deeper meaning.

Zi Ling and the others, after a mutual glance at one another, nodded their heads. Then, they half-knelt in the air. They paid their respects to the blind old man and said together:

“I, Zi Ling—”

“I, Su Rou—”

“I, Su Mei—”

“I, Jiang Wushang—”

“I, Zhang Tianyi—”

“—am willing to become your disciple.”

“Haha, you have good tacit understanding.” The blind old man chuckled. Then, as he stroked his snow-white beard, he said, “If you become my disciples, naturally I will teach you skills. However, it is not easy to become my disciples.”

“Senior, as long as you are willing to accept us, we are all willing to go through hardship and suffering!” said Zi Ling and the others. This was a very rare opportunity. They did not want to miss it.

The blind old man once again smiled lightly, then said, “Don’t say that too early. My tests aren’t things normal people can handle...”

As he traced off, the smile on the blind old man’s face became even wider.

Chu Feng, of course, knew nothing of what occurred back at the Eastern Sea Region. He was continuing his search in the Heavenly Road.

Time trickled away; Chu Feng had already wandered for several days in this endless Heavenly Road.

And the gods did not disappoint those who persevere. Slowly, Chu Feng found the edge of the Heavenly Road within this endless space.

It was very special. It seemed like rock, yet it was not. It seemed like steel, but it was absolutely not. Call it a formation, but it didn't seem like a formation... It was very difficult to describe; however, without a doubt, it was indestructible.

But that wasn't even much. The most shocking thing was after walking along the edge, Chu Feng actually found a tunnel.

It was very vast, and it went very deep. No one knew what the depths of the tunnel held, but intuition told Chu Feng it absolutely did not lead to the Holy Land of Martialism.

Out of curiosity, Chu Feng entered. But the farther he entered, the more shock he felt. By the two sides of this tunnel were buildings, and a dangerous aura even started surging.

Finally, in front of Chu Feng, there was an overbearing door. It was truly a large door, and it was not a simple one as well. If that door must be described, then it was quite similar to the Imperial Door of the Imperial Tomb back at the continent of the Nine Provinces.

Chu Feng knew it was different. However, even though he was up close, Chu Feng himself didn't know what was different.

After coming to this place, Chu Feng was basically certain that everything here was manmade. This seemed more like someone's land.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 993 - Not a Test

MGA: Chapter 993 - Not a Test

Chu Feng could not open the door, nor did he dare to. He could feel what sort of danger was on the other side. It was something he simply stood no chance against.

Chu Feng even felt if he opened the door, the thing within would bring Chu Feng endless suffering.

Since he was out of options, Chu Feng used the Heaven's Eyes to look. But sadly, it was still useless. They too could not see through the door.

“Chu Feng, how is it? Are you getting any sort of a familiar feeling from this place?” Since the Heaven’s Eyes were useless, Eggy asked Chu Feng about the feeling he got from this place.

“I don’t. This does seem to be someone’s land, but I’m getting a very unfamiliar feeling from it. I don’t think I’ve come to this place before.

“Besides, based on what Senior Huangfu said, the position we’re in right now cannot be the place he met me.” Chu Feng shook his head.

Although this place was mysterious and continued inestimable perils—which meant the creator was very extraordinary—it still differed from Huangfu Haoyue’s descriptions.

At least, Chu Feng didn’t feel any holiness from this place. Similarly... although this place was not simple at all, Chu Feng knew as long as he didn’t open the door, he was safe.

This experience was completely different from Huangfu Haoyue’s. Even though everyone’s senses varied, there wouldn’t be *this* much of a difference.

So, Chu Feng knew this was absolutely not the place he and Huangfu Haoyue met.

“Then that’s strange. Who would build such a thing in a place like this?” Eggy was confused. She knew even though there might not be a person living behind the door, there was most definitely *something* there. This was someone’s place, after all.

“Who knows. This Heavenly Road has always been mysterious.” Chu Feng lightly smiled. Then, he turned around and went back the path he came from. He knew he would gain nothing from staying.

After leaving, Chu Feng continued searching.

Surprisingly, there wasn’t just a single place like the one before. After leaving, Chu Feng had found another.

The structures’ style was completely different though. Chu Feng even got a dissimilar feeling regarding the era the structures were built. They were definitely not built by the same group of people.

More importantly, discovering two different lands at such a short distance—even though the Heavenly Road was so big—was absolutely not a coincidence.

It was likely there were many other places like these within the Heavenly Road. As for the location Huangfu Haoyue met him, it was likely one of the numerous ones.

“Strange. Why are there so many places like these in the Heavenly Road? Could there be some sort of secret hidden in this place?”

Various questions arose in Chu Feng’s heart. He increasingly felt that this Heavenly Road was not simple. It was definitely not just a road that led to the Holy Land of Martialism from the Eastern Sea Region.

However, no matter what was concealed in this place, it was not something Chu Feng could discover. Right now, his most important mission was to find the place he and Huangfu Haoyue met. In other words, where his father was.

He had already been in the Heavenly Road for a few days, yet he hadn’t encountered any attacks from monsters. He didn’t even see any living creatures. So, Chu Feng reached a conclusion.

The tests in the Heavenly Road likely related to the distance. Since he was wandering about, even though he was advancing, he made very slow progress. In a short period of time, he wouldn’t meet the second wave of unknown creatures Huangfu Haoyue spoke of.

If he wanted to find his place of birth, then Chu Feng had to quickly advance. After meeting the second test, he should then be able to find the place he was born in.

After making that decision, Chu Feng stopped walking around. He put his full strength into making some distance.

Indeed, after a while, there was a dangerous aura that appeared up ahead.

Chu Feng could even hear rumbles—it was the sound of battle. Moreover, the might of this exchange was not simple. It was likely a fight between Martial Kings.

“This is?” But after Chu Feng continued forward, he saw an astonishing scene. In front of him, a large group of monsters appeared.

They were enormous in size—every single one was dozens of meters tall. They also had very ugly appearances. Not only did they have varying shapes and appearances, they even released an extremely dense feeling of evilness.

With a glance, one could see there were at least several million monsters, and every single one was actually a Martial King. There were even peak Martial Kings within their ranks.

Several million Martial King monsters. Chills would simply go down one’s spine if they even imagined such a scene, let alone appearing so realistically in their line of sight.

“What is happening? Could this be the second wave of unknown creatures Senior Huangfu spoke of?” Chu Feng could not remain collected when he saw them.

He discovered they were not illusions at all. He could even say with certainty that they were actual creatures.

However, the most terrifying thing, above even that, was the person who was fighting those monsters. It was Tantai Xue.

There were dozens of those monsters fighting her. Their cultivations varied; some were rank four Martial Kings, some were rank five. They all held higher cultivation ranks than Tantai Xue, and their strengths were very powerful as well. Judging by the attacks they sent out, Chu Feng could see how strong they were.

Rather than saying Tantai Xue was fighting those monsters, it would be more accurate to say the monsters were *toying* with Tantai Xue.

Indeed, they were toying with her. With their strength, even though Tantai Xue had a Divine Body, it was an easy task to kill her.

Moreover, at the same time the fight was going on, the observing monsters would even occasionally let out odd sounds—the sound of mocking laughter.

“Chu Feng, run! These monsters are not illusions!” Even Eggy panicked a bit when she saw that. She could feel how terrifying these monsters were.

The aura they emanated: bloodlust, ruthlessness, cruelty... nearly every single thing of darkness was gathered within them. They were simply a group of monsters who lived to kill. If they discovered Chu Feng, he would be absolutely dead.

"No, I cannot ignore her." However, Chu Feng shook his head. He could not leave Tantai Xue behind.

"Tantai Xue, don't panic. Don't forget this is only a test.

"No matter if they're illusions or not, as long as you are unafraid, they can do nothing to you." Chu Feng thought Tantai Xue had lost the stability in her heart and was scared by the physical bodies of these monsters. So, he sent a mental message to remind her.

"Dammit, why have you come too? Run! These things aren't a part of the Heavenly Road's tests! It doesn't matter if you fear them or not, they will kill you! Run!" replied Tantai Xue. She was alarmed after receiving Chu Feng's mental message.

"What? These monsters aren't a part of the tests? What are they?" Chu Feng's expression changed greatly as well. Shock emerged into his eyes. He knew Tantai Xue was not joking at all.

"Kukukuku, it seems that this year's harvests are quite good. Two have come!

"Boys, grab the male one over here as well."

But just when Chu Feng became aware that something was wrong, a voice filled with amusement and evilness rang out.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 994 - The King of the Heavenly Road

MGA: Chapter 994 - The King of the Heavenly Road

"Dammit!" Chu Feng cursed, but it was already too late. Nearly in the same instant that evil sound rang out, a boundless pressure immediately descended and enveloped Chu Feng.

It was too powerful, so powerful Chu Feng could not resist it at all. He could feel its terrifying strength—a peak Martial King, an existence a step away from Martial Emperor.

Before such pressure, Chu Feng was bound entirely. There was no chance for him to escape. Several enormous monsters had come up to Chu Feng and surrounded him. One even extended its hand and hooked Chu Feng's collar with its sharp nail, raising him up.

That feeling was like a giant grabbing a tiny ant. The monster was not only powerful, it was also enormous. In front of it, the adjective most suitable for Chu Feng was a single word: minuscule.

After grabbing Chu Feng, the monster threw him to Tantai Xue's side. The monsters who were "fighting" her also stopped and backed away.

Simultaneously, the huge bloodthirsty monsters formed layers as they surrounded Chu Feng and Tantai Xue. All sorts of odd and revolting laughter rang out unceasingly. They simply didn't seem like they were looking at a person, but more like two playthings.

As Chu Feng looked at those ugly appearances with alert, he cast his gaze towards Tantai Xue. Only then did he discover her chest rising up and down and her unstable aura. She had paid quite some price for the battle before. As Chu Feng thought, it was an easy task for these monsters to kill Tantai Xue. They were toying with her.

"Tantai Xue, what are those things?" Chu Feng asked by a mental message.

"How should I know?" Tantai Xue's reply was very cold. She likely knew she was being toyed with, so she was very furious and agitated right now.

"You don't know those things? Then how do you know they're not a part of a test within the Heavenly Road?" Chu Feng asked again.

"Because I'm certain that all the tests in the Heavenly Road are illusions. These monsters are clearly not," Tantai Xue replied impatiently.

"Tantai Xue, then do you think these monsters were left behind by the people who entered the Heavenly Road before?" Chu Feng asked.

He held a guess of some sort. Since there were so many peculiar places in the Heavenly Road—and he too was from the Heavenly Road—it was quite normal that there were other existences inside.

Tantai Xue seemed to have a greater understanding of the Heavenly Road, so Chu Feng wanted to be certain whether his guess was correct. Perhaps they could even find an opportunity to survive within this desperate situation.

She was taken aback by that question. Then, she pondered it. But in the end, she coldly shot Chu Feng a glance and said, “Why do you have so many questions? If you enjoying asking that much, why not just ask them?”

“Yeah, why don’t I just ask them?” Chu Feng gave a faint smile to Tantai Xue’s words, then very indifferently swept his gaze over the group of monsters and shouted, “Where did you come from? Why did you stop us?”

“Kukukuku...” Evil laughter once again rang out amongst the group of monsters.

Quickly after, the enormous group split apart. A monster different from the rest appeared within Chu Feng’s line of sight.

Actually, that monster, in terms of appearances, was not all that different from the other monsters other than its slightly larger physique and well-built body. Its strength, however, was much superior to the other monsters.

It was a rank nine Martial King. It was the existence that bound Chu Feng with nothing but its pressure. From the other monsters’ attitudes, one could tell it was likely the leader of these millions of monsters.

Since there was such a large number of monsters and they were all enormous, they occupied a lot of space. Due to that, the leader was still quite some distance from Chu Feng when it first showed itself. It approached them slowly and the pressure also became increasingly stronger.

It was intentionally strengthening its pressure; it wanted Chu Feng to see how powerful it was. It wanted Chu Feng to tremble before it.

But sadly, although Chu Feng was a rank eight Martial Lord right now, he had once defeated a rank eight Martial King. Though it was not with his true cultivation, he’d had that experience.

Thus, even though his opponent was very powerful, Chu Feng was not afraid at all. He was very calm.

“Sss—”

That made the rank nine Martial King monster frown. It felt a bit surprised; it could be seen it didn't like how Chu Feng reacted.

“Brat, you're not afraid of me?” said the monster. Its voice was thick and powerful, and even more deafening than thunder. However, there was not even a hint of righteousness. Instead, it was filled with evil, like a king interrogating a criminal.

“Why should I be afraid of you?” Chu Feng smiled. He couldn't possibly be even calmer than he was; his attitude did not even seem like any criminal.

“Brat, do you want to know who I am?” The monster was clearly displeased as it coldly asked.

“Rather than wanting to know who you are, I want to know why you stopped us. You should know your very actions have broken the rules of this Heavenly Road.” Chu Feng was not afraid at all. Instead, he questioned it back in a loud tone.

The monsters all around were furious at Chu Feng's attitude. Their brows furrowed deeply, expressing their displeasure. Their venomous gazes and sounds of teeth gnashing made it seem they wanted to take Chu Feng into their mouths and crush him into mush.

“HAHAHAHA—” But just at that moment, the rank nine Martial King monster started laughing. Its laughter was very deafening and sinister. It even made invisible sound waves and violent gales which endlessly charged at Chu Feng and Tantai Xue.

The laughter was completely different from before. Mixed in with such laughter was fury and killing intent. This monster was enraged by Chu Feng's words.

“Dammit, you angered it!” Tantai Xue coldly rebuked.

“I did indeed anger it, but even if I didn't, would it spare you?” Chu Feng replied.

Tantai Xue was made speechless by Chu Feng's question. Indeed, as Chu Feng said, they were already like a lamb in a tiger's mouth. These monsters were absolutely not kind. The instant they were caught was the instant they were fated to die.

They were dead already, so it was only a matter of time. Recalling that, Tantai Xue was put more at ease and she no longer blamed Chu Feng.

"Brat, listen up. I don't care if you have the experience of passing the Heavenly Road or not. I don't care where you came from. However, with me here, you should not even think of passing through.

"In this place, if I want you alive, you will live. If I want you dead, you will die. Do you know why? It's because we are the kings of the Heavenly Road." As it spoke, the monster's tone was very cold. Moreover, it was filled with inviolable majesty.

At that instant, even though Chu Feng appeared unperturbed, his heart was actually a bit shaken. He wanted to buy time so he could find a chance to escape, but now, he was uncertain whether these monsters would even give him that chance. He truly felt their strong bloodlust.

hmm

However, in this crucial moment of life and death, an invisible wave rushed past Chu Feng and the others. Simultaneously, a blinding light shone behind the monsters.

It was a very bright light. It completely illuminated the pitch-black Heavenly Road. The light was so strong no one even dared to widen their eyes.

Before such light, Chu Feng and Tantai Xue were in a fairly decent state, but the monsters started making lowly, painful, and quiet roars, as if they were bearing some sort of great torment.

More importantly, Chu Feng actually felt strong fear emanating from these monsters. They, who held incomparable arrogance before, were now afraid.

A voice filled with ancientness also arose in the direction of the light.

"You are merely a group of filthy guards whose seals have been removed. Yet you dare to call yourselves the kings of the Heavenly Road?"

Martial God Asura - Chapter 995 - Martial Emperor

MGA: Chapter 995 - Martial Emperor

“You are merely a group of filthy guards whose seals have been removed. Yet you dare to call yourselves the kings of the Heavenly Road?”

After those words were spoken, there was sudden movement within the army of monsters. They, who were making low roars, now actually started howling in madness. To be more precise, howling in pain.

Indeed, these were cries of pain. Although Chu Feng could not open his eyes right now, he could feel the changes occurring to his surroundings with his Spirit power. The monsters’ bodies were being crushed. The light was killing them.

Moreover, before such radiance, even though the monsters’ sizes were as big as mountain peaks and their numbers were so much they looked like an ocean—vast and endless—and they were all Martial Kings, they were completely powerless.

What they could only do was stare as their bodies were torn apart, then refined until their lives disappeared completely.

“This feeling... It’s an Imperial Might!”

Chu Feng felt shocked. He could feel the power surging amongst the light and how horrifying it was. The feeling was simply unstoppable. It seemed it could destroy anything. Even the indestructible bodies of Martial Kings, before such power, stood no chance. And this power was called Imperial Might.

A Martial Emperor. At that very instant, Chu Feng had actually met a Martial Emperor within the Heavenly Road.

“What is happening here?” Not only was Chu Feng alarmed, even Tantai Xue was in a bit of a daze. They didn’t know what was happening anymore.

When it felt the attacker was going to kill them all, the rank nine Martial King monster threatened, “Bastard, do you know where we came from? You dare kill us all?! Do you think—”

But before it finished its words, it made a painful howl. Afterwards, it completely disappeared.

All noise disappeared in their surroundings resounding endlessly with howls. It was as if the monsters were never there. It was dead silent.

The blinding light also faded away slowly. Darkness once again enveloped all of them.

“This...”

Chu Feng could finally open his eyes. But after he captured the scene before him, even though he had experienced quite a few battles and slaughters, his heart couldn't help but beat heavily.

The monsters had all died. Several million monsters—all Martial Kings—had died. Not a single one was left alive.

But they did not completely disappear. Their enormous and revolting limbs were still around him along with the fetid mist of blood.

The remnants of the monsters seemed as if they stretched out for infinity and completely enveloped everything. It was extremely horrifying when one gave such a scene a glance.

“So *this* is a Martial Emperor!”

Imagining the endless group of horrifying monsters before, then gazing at the scene in front of his eyes, Chu Feng couldn't help but exclaim at the attacker's strength. Martial Emperor—an existence of legends. Its power was indeed unimaginable.

bang... bang... bang... bang...

But right now, rumbles started resounding from the distance. That noise was akin to the explosion when a meteor crashed into the earth. It was thunderous and shook one's heart. However, these were merely footstep sounds.

Even Chu Feng frowned slightly at the repeated sounds. He knew the person who killed the millions of Martial King monsters in a blink of an eye had come. It was the Martial Emperor.

In reality, not only did Chu Feng frown, even Tantai Xue, the one titled as witch who came from the Holy Land of Martialism, knitted her brows closely. She too was extremely nervous.

The two of them fixed their gazes closely in the direction of the rumbles. Finally, an enormous dark shadow appeared deep within the mist of blood.

Because of the bloody mist, it was very difficult to see its appearance clearly. They could only see a dark shadow, but judging by its area, one could tell how big it was.

The one who came was actually several hundred meters tall. Before it, the monsters that were killed became tiny existences.

As for Chu Feng and Tantai Xue, they could no longer be described as ants before this thing, but as dust instead. Indeed, in front of this enormous figure, humans like Chu Feng and Tantai Xue were only as big as specks of dust.

“Interesting. It seems that this Martial Emperor isn’t human. This Heavenly Road is truly interesting!” Eggie actually appeared quite excited when she saw the departing enormous creature.

As for Chu Feng, he wasn’t in the mood to joke. He didn’t know whether it was an enemy or ally. However, he did know it was much more terrifying than the monsters before. Martial Emperor—just this thought alone could make one’s soul flee.

As the enormous creature neared, though Chu Feng and Tantai Xue were in the air, the space beneath their feet violently trembled every time it took a step. The two of them couldn’t even stand stably in the air.

At that moment, the enormous creature was very close. However, it was still a huge shadow. What one could see was only a pair of blood-red eyes.

Those eyes were really too big. Rather than saying they were a pair of eyes, it would be more accurate to say they were two bright moons—blood-coloured moons.

Then it suddenly stopped. The radiance emitted from its eyes enveloped Chu Feng and Tantai Xue. It was carefully examining them.

“Senior, thank you for helping us.” Chu Feng clasped his fists in thanks when it didn’t move. No matter what it planned, it had still saved them.

“Follow me,” An ancient and deep voice came from the enormous creature. Afterwards, it turned around and went back in the direction it came from.

Chu Feng didn’t hesitate as he quickly followed. Tantai Xue did the same.

“STOP!”

But just at that moment, the enormous creature turned its gaze around. Its blood-red eyes emanated a horrifying killing intent.

It fixed its gaze onto Tantai Xue and said with an extremely icy tone, “If you dare to take another step, I will tear you apart.”

Tantai Xue’s body trembled; she was not lightly scared. She stopped moving, not daring to make even half a step more. Although one could not see her complexion, Chu Feng could feel her face was drenched with cold sweat.

Martial Emperor—every single word from one stunned one’s soul. An existence of that realm surpassed typical cultivators.

“Continue forward and you will pass the Heavenly Road. There will be no one ahead to stop you.” The enormous creature’s tone became quite a bit more gentle when Tantai Xue stopped.

“Senior, thank you for the advice.” Tantai Xue took a relieved breath. She, who was typically cold, gave a rare bow and clasp of hands in expression of her gratitude.

But the enormous creature no longer paid attention to Tantai Xue. It continued striding forward with heavy steps. Indeed, it was not heading towards the Holy Land of Martialism but a certain other place in the Heavenly Road.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 996 - Shadow

MGA: Chapter 996 - Shadow

“Chu Feng, be careful. No matter what it’s here for, do not argue with it. Let alone there are times where one must lower their heads, you are now facing a Martial Emperor!

“Sometimes, being a bit humble can perhaps save your life,” Tantai Xue said mentally after the enormous creature left. As she faced a Martial Emperor, she too didn’t dare to be careless.

“Humble? If it were you, would you be humble?” Chu Feng asked with a smile.

“I...” Tantai Xue did not reply. Humbleness depended on the person. Some people would never be willing to bow down to another even if they died. Chu Feng was a person like that, and Tantai Xue was the same.

“Heh, Lady Tantai, no matter what you say, I do have to thank your concern. Don’t worry. One day, I’ll see you again in the Holy Land of Martialism. Let us meet in the future.” Chu Feng once again smiled, then chased after the enormous creature gradually getting farther and farther away.

The enormous creature quickened its speed. In a blink, it disappeared within the mist of blood. Chu Feng quickly followed, and he too left quickly.

Only Tantai Xue remained. She looked in Chu Feng and the enormous creature’s direction, and looked for a very long while. Only then did she murmur to herself, “Where did this Chu Feng come from? Why was that Martial Emperor existence looking for him?” Tantai Xue pondered curiously. Yet, regardless of her thoughts, she remained puzzled. So she just stopped thinking. She leapt forward and, in the direction the creature pointed, headed towards the Holy Land of Martialism.

Chu Feng naturally followed the creature.

Right now, the cover of the mist of blood had vanished. In addition, since the two of them were much closer now, Chu Feng could see the creature’s appearance clearly.

It was indeed not human, but it had a humanoid figure. As for why it wasn’t human, it was because its head seemed like a dog’s. To be more precise, like a wolf’s. But in reality, it was neither a dog nor a wolf. It was a creature Chu Feng had never seen before.

It stood several hundred meters tall like a ladder that reached the heavens. It wore golden armour; however, the armour did not emit any light.

At that moment, what attracted Chu Feng's attention the most was the weapon in the enormous creature's hand. It was a sceptre—a very special sceptre.

It even seemed as if it came from the creature's body itself; it seemed as if it were one with the creature. But something absolutely true was that the sceptre contained extremely terrifying power.

On the road, Chu Feng had attempted to communicate with this enormous creature, but it was ignoring him. Although it didn't berate him or anything, it didn't pay attention to him. Rather than saying it was allowing Chu Feng to come with it, it would be more accurate to say it was guiding Chu Feng.

"Chu Feng, this dog-head wouldn't help you for no reason. It wouldn't be your relative, right? Heh..." Eggie smiled with a naughty expression; her smile was a quite happy one.

"Less of that nonsense." Chu Feng felt rather helpless. In a situation like this, likely only Eggie could remain this calm and even dare to make a joke.

Although her joke was quite ridiculous, Chu Feng was actually also making guesses at the creature's origin. Even though Chu Feng felt that this Martial Emperor creature couldn't possibly be his relative, there was likely some sort of relationship between them.

Chu Feng was even thinking it was bringing him to the place he and Huangfu Haoyue first met. In other words, this enormous creature was on the same side as him.

The more Chu Feng thought of that, the more excited he became and the closer he followed. He was very afraid he would miss the chance to solve the mystery of his ancestry.

With the creature guiding the way, Chu Feng indeed came to the edge of the Heavenly Road and entered yet another vast tunnel. This too was someone else's land, but it was many times vaster than the other ones Chu Feng saw before. It was on a completely different level.

As he looked at the structures on the two sides, Chu Feng became more and more agitated. The feeling this place brought him was the exact same as Huangfu Haoyue's descriptions.

If it must be described, one word was sufficient—dark. However, its true feeling was the complete opposite—holy.

Indeed. The structures in this place gave others such a conflicting feeling. Seeing darkness, yet feeling holy.

“Waa, there’s so many big dog-heads?” Even Eggy couldn’t help exclaiming when Chu Feng entered deeper in.

At that very instant, what appeared by his sides were enormous dark-grey statues. They were several hundred meters tall and all held sceptres. They were identical to the creature leading Chu Feng.

The only difference was that the ones by his sides were statues, while the one leading Chu Feng was a living Martial Emperor.

At first, Chu Feng even thought the statues were built by this enormous creature, but soon, he discovered he was wrong.

At that moment, in front of Chu Feng, a large door appeared. It was already opened, and inside it was dusky. Only in its depths was there a bit of light. The door could block off Spirit power; even Chu Feng’s Heaven’s Eyes were no exception.

However, what made Chu Feng shocked the most wasn’t the ajar door. It was outside the door. There were spots for two statues. However, one was vacant.

The enormous Martial Emperor creature was walking towards that empty space. Moreover, it stood neatly at that place, and went in the same position as the other statues.

hmm—

Just at that moment, the most mystical scene occurred. Its body started solidifying and its golden armour started changing. It became dark-grey stone and even the Martial Emperor aura disappeared. In the end, it became a statue—one the exact same as the previous ones.

“Waa, really? This dog-head that saved you truly is a statue!

“There are so many here; they wouldn’t all be Martial Emperors, would they?” Eggy widened her mouth in amazement. She felt it was quite inconceivable.

“Haha, interesting. Truly interesting! As expected of the existence who could seal me in your body. Chu Feng, I’m getting more and more curious about your family!

“Quick! Quickly enter! Let me see what they look like!” Eggy urged amidst the shock. Not only was Chu Feng impatient, she too was impatient to find Chu Feng’s family. Not only would it unravel his ancestry, perhaps the answer could even undo her seal.

After taking a deep breath, Chu Feng strode forward and headed towards the door.

After passing through the door, his surroundings became dark. However, it was different from the darkness within the Heavenly Road. With Chu Feng’s abilities, he could still see many things within the latter. So long as it was inside a certain range, he could see everything clearly.

But here, he lost the power that a cultivator should have. It was that dark in his surroundings. Even if he used the Heaven’s Eyes, there was not the slightest bit of change.

So, Chu Feng could only head towards the faint radiance. After nearing, his expression could help but change greatly.

He finally knew where the faint light came from. It was from a small fire. But right now, what attracted Chu Feng’s attention wasn’t the fire, but the person sitting cross-legged by it.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 997 - Old Ape

MGA: Chapter 997 - Old Ape

Chu Feng looked carefully, and he was once again shocked.

As thin as a match, the ape wore ragged clothing over its disheveled fur. Due to its visibly poor state and frailty, the old thing looked as if it were on its deathbed.

However, Chu Feng detected a near untraceable fierceness hidden within the old ape’s lifeless eyes, fierceness that could only come from experiencing a certain amount of suffering and reality. Chu Feng was currently very far away from acquiring such a thing.

“Waa, what is this? Why’s there an ape after the dog-heads? We wouldn’t have come to a zoo, right?” exclaimed Eggy surprisingly after seeing the old ape.

She was the same as Chu Feng; she too was nearly certain this was the place he and Huangfu Haoyue met. So, after he stepped past that door, they both felt who they would meet next would be—even if not his parents—his family.

But the ape in front of his eyes didn’t look like Chu Feng’s family at all, nor like his parents.

Judging by its surface, it didn’t even reach the standards of a Monstrous Beast. It was just an ape that simply could not be more normal. However, Chu Feng was a person who grasped special power. How could he possibly be of the same family with this ape?

“Junior Chu Feng greets Senior.” Although he was confused and didn’t feel any hint of familiarity with it, Chu Feng still clasped his hands, bowed, and paid his respects.

Chu Feng was certain this was where he and Huangfu Haoyue met. No matter who that ape was, since it was here, it was likely not an enemy. Even if it wasn’t a part of Chu Feng’s family, there was still likely some sort of relationship. So, it was worth his greetings.

But who would have thought after Chu Feng politely faced it, the old ape merely shot him a faint glance. Then, it cast its gaze back at the fire and said, “You’re too weak. Do you feel no shame coming back with strength like this? Get the hell out of here!”

Its calm words were filled with ice. There were even strong disdain and contempt.

Chu Feng, who thought he had found where he came from and assumed he was going to meet his relatives, was a bit unable to accept those words.

However, considering there were various unknown variables, he didn’t say much. Instead, he once again clasped his hands at the old ape and said, “Senior, you recognize me? Since you do, can you tell me where my parents are?”

But the old ape ignored Chu Feng words. There was no reaction. Instead, he used a wooden stick to stir the fireplace, making the flames burn a bit brighter.

“Senior, I don’t know what I’ve done incorrectly that led to your displeasure and treatment towards me.

“However, it could be considered that I’ve gone through many suffering to come to this place. I don’t have many requests; I just want to see my family. So... if I’ve offended you in any place, please forgive me.”

After seeing his words were ineffective, Chu Feng once again clasped his hands at the old ape. Then, he strode forth and headed towards it.

Since it had such a horrid attitude, Chu Feng didn’t prepare to waste his breath with it. He decided to just pass it and walk deeper in. This land was so big; if Chu Feng’s family were truly here, then he would definitely find them.

bang

However, before he even took a few steps forward, an invisible power suddenly appeared in front of him. With lightning speed, it struck Chu Feng’s body.

“Ah!”

The power forced him several meters back. When he landed on the ground, Chu Feng felt his inside in complete chaos. However, there wasn’t much pain. The power only forced him back; it didn’t harm him.

At that instant, he cast his gaze back at the place he bounced back. He discovered nothing. The thing that repelled him was not a pre-laid barrier.

Afterwards, he cast his gaze towards the old ape. But, he discovered that the old ape’s eyes were not on him. Chu Feng was caught off guard when he was struck back so he could not be certain whether that power came from the old ape.

whoosh

Suddenly, Chu Feng threw himself back up. Then, he used a bodily martial skill, a profound running technique that made his body become akin to an arrow that just left a bow and he rushed deeper in with light-like speed.

bang

However, like what happened earlier, before Chu Feng even passed the aged ape, he was repelled by an invisible power.

This time, Chu Feng was a bit angry. He had carefully observed and he was nearly certain that the one putting forth such power was the aged ape.

Even though he was displeased, Chu Feng didn't display any anger. He felt the ape definitely had some sort of relationship with his family. So, he still asked very respectfully, "Senior, why must you stop me?"

But what Chu Feng didn't expect was this time, the aged ape was unmoved. It took Chu Feng's words like the wind that passed one's ears.

That truly threw Chu Feng in a difficult position. He was certain this was where he met Huangfu Haoyue and his family. At least, someone related to his family would be here. Even this old ape was possibly an existence related to him; otherwise, it wouldn't have said those words before which had implied it knew him.

Those words, as demeaning as they were, still meant the ape knew something.

Yet right now, it was not only unwilling to let Chu Feng pass, it was even driving him away.

In terms of strength, it was simply unfathomable. Chu Feng couldn't forcibly pass, so he could only ask with respect. Yet, it ignored him. He couldn't pass by force, nor could he pass by words. What could Chu Feng do?

"Chu Feng, let me go out and try. This ape is not simple. From my estimations of its strength, it is possibly even stronger than me before I was sealed. It is absolutely not a normal Martial Emperor. It's not impossible that it was the one who sealed me within your body.

"Let me out and I'll ask for the details. Even if I don't learn anything about your ancestry, at least let me understand why it sealed me in your body for no apparent reason," Eggy said suddenly.

Chu Feng didn't refuse Egg's request. First of all, she was helping him, and second of all, she also had the right to question. Her request was not an unreasonable one.

So, Chu Feng willed the World Spirit Gate to open, and Egg, the grand queen, slowly walked out.

After she appeared, the ape's expression changed slightly. It seemed to be quite surprised, but after a faint glimpse, it retracted its gaze and paid no more attention to her.

It seemed that she was already prepared for such a reaction. The corners of her lips curled up as she revealed a cute and charming smile. She walked forward with her slender and long legs, but when she stopped, she did something that made Chu Feng completely dumbfounded.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 998 - Mystery of Ancestry

MGA: Chapter 998 - Mystery of Ancestry

Egg put her hands on her waist and furrowed her brows greatly. With an extremely loud and clear voice, she looked at the ape and cursed, "You old monkey bastard, who the hell do you think you are, acting like a lord here? You think you can be so mighty because you're just a bit older? And you dare to tell Chu Feng to get out of here? And you even dare to stop him? Do you truly think you're god?"

"I'll tell you this: you may drive Chu Feng away, but I'm no pushover. Why did you seal my cultivation? Today, you must give me a satisfying answer! Otherwise, I'll pluck all your fur and make you into a bald monkey!"

Chu Feng was stupefied by Egg's words. He had thought of many ways she would try and persuade the old ape, but he never expected she would be this fierce. She didn't even say half a polite word and just started insulting it. She even spoke in such an intense tone.

boom—

Just at that moment, the old ape stood up abruptly and at the same time, a ferocious Imperial Might swept over like a hurricane.

It was really too powerful. Chu Feng was frozen in front of it. He even had trouble breathing; on Eggy's end, she was kneeling and pain filled her beautiful face.

"A mere Asura World Spirit dares to speak to me like this? You gave you these nerves?!" The ape was furious. Its words were filled with rage, and one could even hear the sound of its teeth gnashing.

"Mm—" Eggy's face, other than pain, was one of unyielding. It seemed she wanted to retort, but she simply didn't have the power to speak. The pain on her face became more and more distinct. It truly made Chu Feng's heart ache.

"Senior, Eggy has always spoken her mind without much prior consideration. In addition, her power has been bound and she was forcibly sealed in my body for many years. She holds grudges in her heart, so that's why she said those words. Senior, I hope that you can spare her life," Chu Feng quickly begged.

"No matter the strength of a World Spirit, they are always a slave. The uncouthness of a slave lies in the responsibility of the master.

"Right now, if you kneel and beg me, I'll leave her alive. Otherwise, this place will become her grave today and she shall never return to life!" the old ape said fiercely.

"Mm—" Eggy was enraged. She wanted to say something, but it was useless as she simply couldn't even speak.

The old ape was too terrifying. Although what it emanated was also Imperial Might, it was several times stronger than the old dog-head. As Eggy said, this old ape was indeed a ruthless character and was indescribably powerful.

"Senior, if I've truly offended you in any way, you can tell me. If there's any place I've let you down, even if you don't want me to kneel, I will still kneel.

"However, if you don't say the reason and want to drive me away... To be honest, Eggy's words were all correct. If you want me to take her place for punishment, I can; however, if you want me to kneel, absolutely not," Chu Feng firmly refused.

"Less of this rubbish. I'm asking will you kneel or not?!" the old ape shouted furiously. Everything seemed to tremble; its power was not only

overwhelming, its tone was undoubtable. If Chu Feng did not kneel, it would truly kill Eggy.

“Senior, if you don’t tell me the reason, then it’s impossible that I kneel to you.

“However, to me, Eggy is not only a World Spirit, nor any slave. She’s a very important companion to me.

“I ask for a trade of lives. I ask that you spare her life. As long as you leave her alive, I am willing to die in her place.” Chu Feng spoke again. Moreover, in his eyes, there was a resolution to die.

Mm—“ When she heard those words, Eggy’s body couldn’t help but tremble. Her beautiful eyes instantly reddened and two streams of sparkling tears spilled from the corners of her eyes. Although the old ape controlled her body, it could not control her emotions.

When Eggy heard Chu Feng was willing to die for her, this queen’s heart melt. She was greatly moved.

“Hahahaha...” Just at that moment, the old ape let out a burst of laughter. It was laughing very happily. Only after a while did it look at Chu Feng with quite a bit of satisfaction and say, “Although your cultivation is lacking, you have some courage. You haven’t shamed your father’s name.”

After speaking, the old ape waved its arm. The flames burning atop firewood became a lantern that landed into its hand.

“Follow me.” With lantern in hand, the old ape turned around. It walked forward with a bent back, deeper into the pitch-black world. Simultaneously, the horrifying Imperial Might disappeared.

With her fetters gone, Eggy stood up quickly. She, filled with fury, leaped forward and actually attacked the old ape.

hmm

However, Chu Feng was already prepared for that. He willed the World Spirit Gate to open in front of Eggy. Catching her off guard, she leapt into the gate. Seeing his plan succeed, Chu Feng hurriedly closed it shut.

“Chu Feng, what are you doing? Let me out! I haven’t received this much humiliation in my entire life! I will kill that old ape!” Eggy furiously roared when she realized she walked into Chu Feng’s trick.

“Eggy, I know you hold grudges, but our strength right now is not enough. If we force a fight, we’re the only ones who will suffer.

“If you want to forcibly go, then I can join you. I won’t just watch as you send yourself to die. Even if you die, I will join you.

“If you truly want to send yourself to death for no reason at all, I’ll join you right now.” Chu Feng opened the World Spirit Gate again.

However, Eggy didn’t come out. She first wiped the tears from her face with grievance, then said, “For you, I’ve endured this time.”

After speaking, Eggy sat in the corner within the World Spirit Space. She hugged her knees and burrowed her head into her arms. She no longer spoke.

Chu Feng’s heart stung. But, he could do nothing. Putting aside the fact that the old ape was too powerful, it still held a relationship of utmost significance to him.

Although its attitude was horrible and had ridiculed him and Eggy before, it had not truly harmed them. Now, the ape’s attitude changed suddenly and it was even leading Chu Feng. Its previous actions might have even been a test.

The ape didn’t truly want to make things difficult for Chu Feng. So, let alone avenging Eggy, it was very difficult to even harbour any hatred towards it.

But exactly because of that, Chu Feng felt Eggy had truly been wronged. That’s why his heart ached for her.

No matter how wronged he was, it would be fine. However, he didn’t want the ones close to him bearing the same pain. Of course, Eggy was one of the closest people to him.

“What are you waiting for?” The old ape’s impatient voice came from the depths of this land.

“I’m coming.” Chu Feng didn’t dare to hesitate as he hurriedly followed.

He, at that moment, held too many questions in his heart. What awaited him up ahead was very possibly the mystery of his ancestry.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 998 - Mystery of Ancestry

MGA: Chapter 998 - Mystery of Ancestry

Eggy put her hands on her waist and furrowed her brows greatly. With an extremely loud and clear voice, she looked at the ape and cursed, “You old monkey bastard, who the hell do you think you are, acting like a lord here? You think you can be so mighty because you’re just a bit older? And you dare to tell Chu Feng to get out of here? And you even dare to stop him? Do you truly think you’re god?”

“I’ll tell you this: you may drive Chu Feng away, but I’m no pushover. Why did you seal my cultivation? Today, you must give me a satisfying answer! Otherwise, I’ll pluck all your fur and make you into a bald monkey!”

Chu Feng was stupefied by Eggy’s words. He had thought of many ways she would try and persuade the old ape, but he never expected she would be this fierce. She didn’t even say half a polite word and just started insulting it. She even spoke in such an intense tone.

boom—

Just at that moment, the old ape stood up abruptly and at the same time, a ferocious Imperial Might swept over like a hurricane.

It was really too powerful. Chu Feng was frozen in front of it. He even had trouble breathing; on Eggy’s end, she was kneeling and pain filled her beautiful face.

“A mere Asura World Spirit dares to speak to me like this? You gave you these nerves?!” The ape was furious. Its words were filled with rage, and one could even hear the sound of its teeth gnashing.

“Mm—” Eggy’s face, other than pain, was one of unyielding. It seemed she wanted to retort, but she simply didn’t have the power to speak. The pain on her face became more and more distinct. It truly made Chu Feng’s heart ache.

“Senior, Eggy has always spoken her mind without much prior consideration. In addition, her power has been bound and she was forcibly sealed in my

body for many years. She holds grudges in her heart, so that's why she said those words. Senior, I hope that you can spare her life," Chu Feng quickly begged.

"No matter the strength of a World Spirit, they are always a slave. The uncouthness of a slave lies in the responsibility of the master.

"Right now, if you kneel and beg me, I'll leave her alive. Otherwise, this place will become her grave today and she shall never return to life!" the old ape said fiercely.

"Mm—" Eggy was enraged. She wanted to say something, but it was useless as she simply couldn't even speak.

The old ape was too terrifying. Although what it emanated was also Imperial Might, it was several times stronger than the old dog-head. As Eggy said, this old ape was indeed a ruthless character and was indescribably powerful.

"Senior, if I've truly offended you in any way, you can tell me. If there's any place I've let you down, even if you don't want me to kneel, I will still kneel.

"However, if you don't say the reason and want to drive me away... To be honest, Eggy's words were all correct. If you want me to take her place for punishment, I can; however, if you want me to kneel, absolutely not," Chu Feng firmly refused.

"Less of this rubbish. I'm asking will you kneel or not?!" the old ape shouted furiously. Everything seemed to tremble; its power was not only overwhelming, its tone was undoubtable. If Chu Feng did not kneel, it would truly kill Eggy.

"Senior, if you don't tell me the reason, then it's impossible that I kneel to you.

"However, to me, Eggy is not only a World Spirit, nor any slave. She's a very important companion to me.

"I ask for a trade of lives. I ask that you spare her life. As long as you leave her alive, I am willing to die in her place." Chu Feng spoke again. Moreover, in his eyes, there was a resolution to die.

Mm—" When she heard those words, Eggy's body couldn't help but tremble. Her beautiful eyes instantly reddened and two streams of sparkling tears

spilled from the corners of her eyes. Although the old ape controlled her body, it could not control her emotions.

When Eggy heard Chu Feng was willing to die for her, this queen's heart melt. She was greatly moved.

"Hahahaha..." Just at that moment, the old ape let out a burst of laughter. It was laughing very happily. Only after a while did it look at Chu Feng with quite a bit of satisfaction and say, "Although your cultivation is lacking, you have some courage. You haven't shamed your father's name."

After speaking, the old ape waved its arm. The flames burning atop firewood became a lantern that landed into its hand.

"Follow me." With lantern in hand, the old ape turned around. It walked forward with a bent back, deeper into the pitch-black world. Simultaneously, the horrifying Imperial Might disappeared.

With her fetters gone, Eggy stood up quickly. She, filled with fury, leaped forward and actually attacked the old ape.

hmm

However, Chu Feng was already prepared for that. He willed the World Spirit Gate to open in front of Eggy. Catching her off guard, she leapt into the gate. Seeing his plan succeed, Chu Feng hurriedly closed it shut.

"Chu Feng, what are you doing? Let me out! I haven't received this much humiliation in my entire life! I will kill that old ape!" Eggy furiously roared when she realized she walked into Chu Feng's trick.

"Eggy, I know you hold grudges, but our strength right now is not enough. If we force a fight, we're the only ones who will suffer.

"If you want to forcibly go, then I can join you. I won't just watch as you send yourself to die. Even if you die, I will join you.

"If you truly want to send yourself to death for no reason at all, I'll join you right now." Chu Feng opened the World Spirit Gate again.

However, Eggy didn't come out. She first wiped the tears from her face with grievance, then said, "For you, I've endured this time."

After speaking, Eggy sat in the corner within the World Spirit Space. She hugged her knees and burrowed her head into her arms. She no longer spoke.

Chu Feng's heart stung. But, he could do nothing. Putting aside the fact that the old ape was too powerful, it still held a relationship of utmost significance to him.

Although its attitude was horrible and had ridiculed him and Eggy before, it had not truly harmed them. Now, the ape's attitude changed suddenly and it was even leading Chu Feng. Its previous actions might have even been a test.

The ape didn't truly want to make things difficult for Chu Feng. So, let alone avenging Eggy, it was very difficult to even harbour any hatred towards it.

But exactly because of that, Chu Feng felt Eggy had truly been wronged. That's why his heart ached for her.

No matter how wronged he was, it would be fine. However, he didn't want the ones close to him bearing the same pain. Of course, Eggy was one of the closest people to him.

"What are you waiting for?" The old ape's impatient voice came from the depths of this land.

"I'm coming." Chu Feng didn't dare to hesitate as he hurriedly followed.

He, at that moment, held too many questions in his heart. What awaited him up ahead was very possibly the mystery of his ancestry.

Martial God Asura - Chapter 999 - Chu Feng's Gravestone

MGA: Chapter 999 - Chu Feng's Gravestone

With the old ape leading the way, Chu Feng headed deeper into this place. After a short distance, they stopped.

At that moment, a gravestone appeared in front of Chu Feng. His expression changed greatly when he saw the name written on it. An indescribable emotion surged into his heart .

The name written on the gravestone was “Chu Feng”. With the Heaven’s Eyes, he discovered it was made by normal Profound Stone. The marked time was actually the exact same as his current age.

But sadly, the only thing he could discover was the things written on the gravestone. When he looked into the grave, he could see nothing.

“Senior, what is this?” Chu Feng asked the old ape amidst his confusion.

“Hoh...” The old ape calmly smiled. It was a smile filled with complex emotions. Then, it said, “Actually, I really should be calling you ‘Young Master’.

“However, right now, you aren’t qualified for that because title respect is gained through strength.

“As for this grave, it had saved your life before. And right now, it can save your life again.” An invisible wave surged out behind the old ape and into the grave.

The soil started churning and bursting outward. Very soon, a coffin appeared. It was also made by Profound Stone, but it was enormous. It was more than ten times the size of typical coffins.

When he looked at it, the complicated emotions in Chu Feng’s heart became more and more intense. He truly wanted to know what was inside this coffin and how it was related to him.

Before, the old ape said this grave had saved his life, and now, it could save him again. What did that mean?

bang

Just at that moment, a loud muffled sound rang out. The lid of the Profound Stone coffin opened. What appeared within was a blinding light.

It was a formation. An extremely profound—so profound Chu Feng comprehended nothing—and indescribably powerful formation. Despite its complexity, Chu Feng could still tell it was a Teleportation Formation, one far superior to ones from the Ancient Era.

“Go. This formation can bring you safely to the Holy Land of Martialism,” said the old ape indifferently.

“Senior, you want me to leave?” Chu Feng asked in bewilderment.

“Of course. You aren’t thinking of staying here, right?” The old ape calmly shot Chu Feng a glance. Its gaze was like saying, “You must leave now!”

“Senior, do you know how I found this place? Do you know how I’ve been in all these years? After countless tribulations, I found where you were. After countless tribulations, I came here. I don’t have any other goal. I just want to know who my parents are. I just want to know how they are.

“But... I don’t even understand anything. I don’t even know who I’m a child to. I don’t know even know who my family are. I don’t even know why they abandoned me. And now, you want me to leave?”

Chu Feng was clearly a bit agitated. In his eyes, there was a trace of desire. He hoped this old ape would tell him a few things because he knew it definitely had information he wanted.

“Ahh...” Indeed, the old ape was moved after hearing Chu Feng’s words. It said, “Oh Chu Feng, it’s not that I’m unwilling to tell you, it’s just that your father is unwilling to let me tell you. He’s here right now, actually. However... he doesn’t want to see you because you’re too weak. So weak you’re unworthy to be his son.”

“What?” Chu Feng’s heart couldn’t help but tremble. That reason was quite a devastating one.

His father, who he dreamt of meeting, who he wholeheartedly admired, wasn’t absent. Rather, he was here right now. He was just unwilling to see Chu Feng. And it was because Chu Feng was too weak?

“Hoh...” Suddenly, Chu Feng smiled. It was an abnormally happy smile; but in reality, his heart was filled with extreme anger.

Suddenly, he exploded. He roared furiously. Towards the depths of this place, he shouted at the top of his lungs, “What kind of bullshit reason is that?”

“You abandoned me from a young age and had me become another person’s child. And now, you’re still unwilling to recognize me. And this reason is because I’m too weak?”

“Fine, I admit. In comparison to you both, I am indeed very weak. I’m so pitifully weak. But must family be weighed by strength? How can there be parents like you in this world?! You—”

“Shut up!” But before Chu Feng finished what he wanted to say, the old ape suddenly shouted furiously. That voice was filled with a horrifying aura.

When it exploded next to Chu Feng’s ear, he felt his head buzz as if his entire being had been blown up. Then, his blurred emotions of sorrow and fury were magically pacified.

“You aren’t qualified to blame him. Go. Before you have sufficient strength, don’t come back here. Of course, if you feel he’s an unqualified father, you can also choose to never return. You can go live a life you desire,” said the old ape again. However, within its tone, there was a hint of sorrow.

Chu Feng, who had already returned to calmness, felt an indescribable pain in his heart when he saw the old ape’s expression. He suddenly realized there were some troubles it couldn’t speak of. Or, perhaps his father and his family had troubles they couldn’t speak of.

Regardless how they treated him, when Huangfu Haoyue protected him and when the big dog-head saved him within the Heavenly Road, it was his family behind the scenes. Without them, perhaps he would already be dead.

So, it didn’t matter how they treated him. The reality was that they protected him with everything they had. There would simply be no explanation why they did that if they didn’t love Chu Feng. So, he determined this treatment must be due to some trouble.

But what sort of trouble would force someone to abandon their child?

“Senior, since my father is unwilling to see me, I can leave. However, can you ask him what cultivation I need to have before he’s willing to see me? What cultivation do I need until he’s willing to recognize me as his son?” Chu Feng said coldly. In his eyes, there was even a bit of pleading.

The old ape’s gaze changed once again, like a layer of frost being melted.

“Ahh...” It sighed deeply once again, then said, “If I’m not mistaken, you must have been seen as a genius in the Eastern Sea Region. But do you know why I’m saying you’re weak?”

Martial God Asura - Chapter 1000 - Thing of Burden

MGA: Chapter 1000 - Thing of Burden

“I know.

“As the proverbs say, ‘There are skies beyond this sky, and men beyond this man.’

“Of those in my own generation in the Eastern Sea Region, I am indeed not considered weak.

“But in the Holy Land of Martialism, there are definitely many people superior to me while being in the same generation. In comparison to them, I am indeed not strong,” Chu Feng replied.

“Wrong. Absolutely wrong. In the Eastern Sea Region, or the Holy Land of Martialism, either of them is just a part of this world. The difference is only the outside and the inside. What are the people there comparing to you?”

However, after hearing Chu Feng’s words, the old ape appeared very agitated. It looked at Chu Feng and berated with a fierce tone, “You have the nine-coloured Divine Lightning in your body—it was given to you by your father.

“There’s even a World Spirit from the Asura Spirit World sealed in your body—it was given to you by your mother.

“And right now, their blood of nobility is flowing within your veins, yet you are still comparing yourself to the trash of this world? And you dare say you’re not weak?

“You aren’t just pathetically weak in cultivation, you’re pathetically weak in knowledge. Chu Feng, you’re truly so weak you’re a failure. Not only have you shamed the family’s name, you’ve also shamed your parents’ name.”

The old ape’s words stupefied Chu Feng and froze him. Even though its words were lashing out of Chu Feng for his weakness, it was simultaneously giving him some information.

His nine-coloured Divine Lightning was given by his father, and Eggy, the horrifying World Spirit, was given by his mother. From the old ape’s tone, which was resentful from disappointment, Chu Feng could tell that his father

and mother were absolutely not ordinary people. They were likely very impressive as there were hints of respect within its tone.

The old ape was a Martial Emperor—there was no doubt to that. As for a person who could make the old ape so respectful... it was simply unimaginable.

Although his heart was shocked, Chu Feng didn't interject. He silently awaited the old ape to leak more information. Only when it was unwilling to reveal any more would he analyze the information.

"Ahh..." After venting out such fierce words, the old ape's mood was much calmer. As it looked at Chu Feng, whose face was serene yet had eyes filled with longing, it heaved another long sigh and said, "As they say, 'If you near red, you become red. If you near black, you become black.' You're in such garbage lands, so it does make sense that you're so weak. After all, you don't belong to this place."

"Don't belong to this place?" Chu Feng's heart was moved. He couldn't help asking, "Then where do I belong?"

"You come from the Outer World," said the old ape.

"Outer World?" Chu Feng was shocked.

"Ahh, whatever. Since you're so lacking in knowledge, I'll make an exception and tell you about this. I'll let you know what burden you're carrying on your back," said the old ape.

"Your family comes from this world, but it has already been forgotten by this world's people because long ago, your family left this world. However, undoubtedly, your family's strength can bring forth admiration from everyone in this world, including many forces in the Holy Land of Martialism.

"As for the nine-coloured Divine Lightning in your body, that's the symbol of your family. That's the Inherited Bloodline only your family possesses. That's the power that allows you to surpass all else in this world.

"As for your father, he was the family's pride. But sadly, because of your birth, you and your father were driven away. All of your father's honour had been stripped away. One could even say that the criminal who did that was you," said the old ape with solemnness.

“What? I took away my father’s honour?” Chu Feng was shocked again. He couldn’t understand what was happening. However, recalling the old ape’s attitude before, and recalling the things that had happened to him, it seemed that Chu Feng understood something.

The old ape said the nine-coloured Divine Lightning was the power of his family’s bloodline. However, the Divine Lightning only entered his body at the age of ten. Which also meant before the age of ten, there was no power from any Inherited Bloodline within his body. Even now, he simply hadn’t completely grasped the bloodline’s power.

That was sufficient evidence to the “weakness” the old ape spoke of before. A person who couldn’t even grasp their own bloodline. A person who didn’t even have any bloodline power within their body before the age of ten. Was that not weak?

So, he asked, “Senior, it was because of me? Was it because I was too weak, so the family drove me and my father away, so my family stripped away my father’s honour?”

“No. The one who drive you two out is indeed your family, but the one who stripped away your father’s honour is you. You! Do you understand?” the old ape furiously roared as it pointed at Chu Feng. It looked like it was gazing at an enemy; there was even some hatred within its eyes.

At that instant, Chu Feng felt extremely complicated emotions in his heart. An indescribable sorrow surged out from his heart and filled every single corner of his body. This was an emotion he had never felt before.

Chu Feng knew a very long time ago that his family was very powerful. He knew, a very long time ago, he disappointed his father. Although he hadn’t seen him before, he admired him a lot.

So, he worked hard at cultivation. On one side, it was to meet a goal; it was for himself. On the other side, it was to make his father proud. To make his family proud. He wanted, when he reunited with his family, to let them know he hadn’t ashamed them.

But it was actually himself who drove his father away from their family. It was even he who deprived all his father’s honour. That was really a bit hard to accept.

“Crap.” When Chu Feng entered a daze, the old ape’s expression suddenly changed greatly. There was actually a hint of fear that surged within its eyes.

hmm Suddenly, it willed the formation’s light in the coffin to shine with brilliance. It was beginning to activate. Then, it grabbed Chu Feng and threw him into the coffin. It said, “Stay there, and don’t move. No matter what happens, do not come out. Let this formation take you away.”

After speaking those words, the old ape shifted the Profound Stone lid and wanted to seal Chu Feng inside.

Seeing that, he hurriedly stopped the lid that was going to close him away. Looking at the old ape outside, he asked, “Senior, what happened?”

“Don’t ask so much. Just follow what I say.” The old ape’s eyes suddenly became mysterious and gentle. There was even a hint of sorrow and wistfulness. Its tone also became extremely warm as it said to Chu Feng, “Chu Feng, you must remember *you* were the one who took away your father’s honour. However, the one who can take it back will also be you. You’re his hope.”

“Hope?” Chu Feng’s heartbeat quickened when he heard that word. In that instant, he seemed to have understood something. So, he asked again, “Senior, when can I return here? What level of cultivation do I need to have in order for my father to be willing to meet me?”

The old ape hesitated a bit at Chu Feng’s question. Then, it said, “You can return whenever you feel like you can.”

bang Afterwards, a gentle power pushed Chu Feng down, and the coffin also closed completely shut.